

The Beeping Brothers' Road to Success

Scott L. Chally

This book is rated R: recommended for mature audience.

This is a comedy, suspense, thriller, action, drama, romantic, and religious book.

Books written by author: *Do You Believe Is It Real or Fiction?*
Scott Chally Believes
The Beeping Brothers' Road to Success
Zamm Boola

Prologue

It starts out as these two boys were going to school in seventh grade. One of the boys got into a dilemma, and the other boy helped him out with a bully. Then it skipped ten years to 2017 where the story picked up where both of the boys live at one of the boys' parents' house.

They soon started a delivery business hauling for a lumber company. They had others helping them out, hauling all kinds of deliveries for the store and also for other stores with mishaps and situations that arose. Along the way, the father helped the boys out with the business hauling, giving advice and talks about what had happened to him with his bipolar. They soon after got caught up with the mob cartel and started doing drug runs for them that turned out to be profitable. This allowed them to expand their business to more than seventy-five employees, twelve delivery trucks, and forty semis within two years. They were then done hauling for the cartel, which the mob boss told the ones that had done the runs he owed them a favor.

The son gave the favor to his father, which the father had, writing an autobiography about his life of having bipolar that made him believe he's the Messiah. The mob boss hooked the father up with a movie company to film his book because he felt it was good. The book was done being filmed, which in his book the father had solved a riddle in the Bible for an asteroid strike to hit which then hit as it was stated in his book, which was of his life with the bipolar that he had written about along with a new world order.

People then believed that the father was the chosen one that the Bible talked about to come forward to bring world peace. The father then was soon elected for the next election for president without running for president because of the people writing his name in on the ballot. The father established his new order to the world while he was in office. But in the meantime, he had many meetings and interviews to help the people understand the new world order.

All the people of the world then lived in peace, without war by January 2027.

Scripture quotations marked (NIRV) are taken from the Holy Bible, New International Reader's Version, NIRV, Copyright 1995, 1996, 1998, by Biblica Inc. Used by permission of Zondervan. All rights reserved worldwide. www.zondervan.com The "NIRV" and "New International Reader's Version" are trademarks registered in the United State Patent and Trademark Office by Biblica Inc.

Contents

Chapter 1	5
Chapter 2	10
Chapter 3	58
Chapter 4	117
Chapter 5	151
Chapter 6	201
Chapter 7	274

August 1, 2016
August 7, 2016

November 19, 2017
March 4, 2018

The Beeping Brothers' Road to Success

The light shines on many, only a few lucky ones make it through the cracks. By being bold, holding on to what life brings, you can accomplish just about anything. If you believe in yourself, with the Lord on your side, good things may come.

Scott LeRoy Chally

Chapter 1

It starts out as two kids who found true friendship which they built from one another in a small town called Monticello, Iowa, of approximately 3,500 people, friendly farming community, good schools. In the fall school year of 2007, these two kids named Ricky and Jimmy had realized what good friends they were to each other. I'll lead you into a story and tell you about it.

Ricky Longjohn lived in Monticello and was going to the Monticello Middle School and was attending seventh grade. The school consisted of grades fifth through eighth. Ricky was a B student, very active, and liked to joke around. He lived about four blocks away from the school. Jimmy lived on the same street but only two blocks away. When Ricky walked to school, he would stop by Jimmy's house and then they would walk the rest of the way to school and hang out.

Ricky had blond hair, was less than five foot for his age, and was fairly slender. Well, this day was just like any other day for Ricky. He got up early, showered, and got ready for school. He grabbed his schoolbooks and headed out the door, then met up with Jimmy. They would go to school and hang out by the locker in the morning before class and would start to mingle with their friends. But this morning, it was a Tuesday, and the most amazing girl in school had walked up to Ricky and handed him a note.

Her name was Molly Brenneman. She was sassy, sexy, all of what a young boy would want in a girl. She was mature for her age. She stood about a half a foot taller than Ricky. She had breasts, which all the other seventh-grade girls didn't have. She came from a well-to-do family with money, was a straight-A student. She had long wavy blond hair halfway down her back. She wore a little mascara. That was all the makeup that she had. Her skin was in good complexion, where you would think she was a model.

Molly: "Hi, Ricky!"

Ricky: "Well, hi, Molly, how are you today?"

Molly: "I'm doing good. I wanted to ask you something, so I wrote you a note. Could you get back with me before the end of the day on what you might say?"

Ricky: "Sure thing, anything for you, Molly."

Molly's note was folded up into a square. It said, "To Jimmy from Molly," with a heart drawn on the front of it. Ricky opened it right away, and Jimmy was looking at it as well. It said:

Dear Ricky,

I have been studying you all year long, actually since the fifth grade, I feel like I really like you and was wondering if you would be willing to take me to the seventh and eighth grade dance. I was wondering if you would let me know before the end of the day for Friday's dance.

Sincerely, Molly with love.

Ricky and Jimmy had read the letter in no time at all. They turned to each other and high-fived in the air. Jimmy was a little jealous of Ricky because of the hot girl he had scored without trying or asking, but was still very happy for Ricky.

School was about to start; the buzzer was about to ring. There was about another four minutes until class started, so Ricky had to go to the restroom, but he didn't realize this kid from eighth grade named Wayne Johnson had followed him in.

Now, Wayne Johnson was the type of kid that pretty much thought his shit didn't stink. He believed he's always right. He thought everyone liked him and everything he said, goes. He was also the captain of the eighth-grade football team and was an A-B student. Wayne was about six foot tall, military-type haircut, blondish brown hair, slender to medium built. He liked to brag about everything in general.

There were four urinals in the bathroom, and there was already a kid in there taking a leak. Then Ricky went to use the middle urinal. Then Wayne took the urinal on the left, and this was what came about.

Wayne: "So, Ricky, I noticed Molly giving you a note in the hallway, may I ask what it said?"

Ricky: "I don't mind! She just wanted to ask me to the seventh-and-eighth-grade dance on Friday."

Wayne: "I don't think that's a good idea for you to go to the dance with her."

Ricky: "Well, I'm going because I like her."

Wayne: "I said you're not going to the dance with her."

Ricky: "I see! I'm going whether you like it or not."

Wayne: "I say I'm going to kick your ass, well, matter of fact, I challenge you tonight at three o'clock after school gets out. You see, Ricky, Molly likes me and you're in the way, you should have left things the way they were and not go."

Wayne leaned over in the urinal a little ways, and then he said with the commotion of the other kid in the bathroom. With a laugh and a little giggle, things were said.

Wayne: "Wow, your penis is small!"

Ricky tried to hurry up and finish up peeing, but it's already too late. The other kid leaned over as well and started to laugh.

Ricky: "Shut up, mind your own business."

Wayne: "All I know is, you're mine after school, Little Dickie Ricky."

Ricky: "I don't want to fight you, and don't call me that."

Wayne: "I'll call you whatever I want to and you can't do anything about it."

Wayne and the other kid finished up in the bathroom. Wayne had left; the other kid said something and was shown his hand in the air with his thumb and index finger about an inch away from each other.

The other kid said with a smile, "So your new name is Little Dickie Ricky!"

Ricky: "That's not cool, man."

This was a blow to Ricky's morale and self-esteem. Ricky was trying to figure out how everything went so wrong in such a short time. Now he had to figure out what he needed to do to make everything okay. He didn't like having the nickname Little Dickie Ricky, and he didn't feel like being a coward by not standing up to

Wayne Johnson, and he didn't want to fight either.

Ricky went about his day and was wondering what he should do. First of all, he was excited about Molly Brennehan writing and asking him to go to the dance, so he figured he should write Molly a note, letting her know he'd be happy to take her to the dance. He had a class with her third block, which was science class. The note Ricky wrote said:

Dear Molly,

I was so surprised and excited at the same time when you came up to me this morning and handed me that note. The answer is yes and heck yes, I'd be happy to take you to the dance. But you probably know by now that Wayne Johnson likes you as well and tells me if I choose to take you to the dance, he will fight me after school, which I will do to be with you.

Truly yours, Ricky

Ricky had entered the science classroom, where he noticed Molly sitting near the front. As he went to approach Molly to give the note, there was this other kid that had walked in the classroom named Bobby Thorneroad, who was a distant friend of Ricky's, but his comment wasn't cool.

Ricky: "Hi, Molly."

Molly: "Hi, Ricky, I see you have something for me."

Ricky handed a note that was folded into a square to Molly.

Bobby: "What's up, Little Dickie Ricky?" (The whole class heard.)

Ricky: "Hee hee, very funny!"

Molly: "Why did Bobby call you Little Dickie Ricky?"

Teacher: "All right now, class, settle down, that's enough. Bobby, have a seat, I need you all to pull out the homework assignment for today."

Ricky: "I'll talk to you later, Molly, and I hope you like what I wrote."

Ricky went to have a seat in the classroom near where Molly sat. On and off during the class, they were communicating to each other; she was happy to hear that he was happy to take her to the dance. Ricky was happy to hear from Molly during the class and had completely forgotten about Wayne Johnson wanting to fight him after school at three o'clock. Until Molly had asked the question.

Molly: "Ricky, why does Wayne Johnson want to fight you?"

Ricky: "Well, I believe he is jealous of me taking you to the dance."

Molly: "You don't have to fight him, so just don't."

Ricky: "You don't seem to understand. The name that Bobby called me, you know Little Dickie Ricky, started from Wayne, and it's an image that I would be a coward if I don't stand up to him. Don't worry, I'll be fine, I'll figure something out."

The buzzer just rang, third-block science was over, and it meant it was lunchtime. Ricky met up with

Jimmy in the hall next to his wall locker. They walked to lunch together and went through the line to get their food, then sat down at a table to eat. Before Ricky and Jimmy were finished with their lunch, Wayne came over to the table where they sat and leaned over and said a few words.

Wayne: "Are you having any second thoughts about fighting me this afternoon at three o'clock, Ricky? Are you still going to take Molly to the dance?"

Ricky: "If that's what it takes, I suppose I have to fight you, because I am going to the dance with Molly."

Halfway across the lunch room, there was this kid named Steve Sachs from eighth grade who was friends with Wayne.

Steve (screaming): "Hey, Wayne Johnson, is it true you're going to kick Little Dickie Ricky's ass today at three o'clock?"

By now, if the school didn't already know Ricky's name was now Little Dickie Ricky, it's like everything went wrong. Steve had finally made his way over to the table where Ricky and Jimmy were sitting, which Wayne was standing talking to Ricky, then Steve and Wayne did a special handshake with a fist bump.

Wayne: "So I suppose I'll see you at three o'clock out front of the middle school, so don't try to skip out." (Wayne looked at Steve.) "Yes, Steve, it's on for three o'clock."

Steve: "I feel sorry for you, Little Dickie Ricky, because you're going to get stomped by Wayne."

Ricky: "We will see."

Wayne and Steve had left the table, which Ricky and Jimmy were discussing what they should do that afternoon to handle the situation. All Jimmy would say to Ricky was, "I have your back." Lunch was over; there was about fifteen minutes left in the day where all Ricky could do was think how bad he was going to get his ass kicked. Then it was three o'clock; the buzzer rang. Ricky walked out of the classroom and met up with Jimmy. They proceeded to go outside. What was strange seemed like all the other kids in school skipped going to their locker and headed outside as well.

Once Ricky and Jimmy made it outside in front of the school, they saw Wayne Johnson with the big crowd of people around in a circle. Wayne was boasting and had his arm out like he was luring a kid in, as if they were to get some candy. Ricky had walked up to Wayne, which Jimmy wasn't far from them. Ricky began to speak.

Ricky: "Now, Wayne, we don't have to do this, we don't have to fight, let's just put this behind us and forget about it."

Just when Ricky was finished talking, Wayne took both arms and shoved Ricky forcefully to the ground. At which time Jimmy jumped on the back of Wayne and had his arms for which he couldn't swing; Wayne was staggering, trying to hold up Jimmy.

Now Jimmy Chally had been friends with Ricky for many years. They looked out for each other when one would get in trouble. This was Jimmy's turn, and Jimmy was not afraid, pretty intelligent, always trying to do the right thing, good with communication skills, straight-A student, blond hair, about five foot six inches tall, and medium built.

Jimmy: "Kick his ass, Ricky, kick his ass, you can do it!"

Wayne: "Get off of me, you twerp."

Now all the kids were cheering; some were saying, “Come on, Little Dickie Ricky,” and others were saying, “Come on, Johnson.” Every way you looked at it, there were screaming and shouting. Then Ricky got up from the ground fairly quick; he charged toward Wayne like he was going to swing, and instead, he kicked as hard as he could between Wayne Johnson’s legs. Wayne had immediately fallen to the ground sideways as Jimmy had jumped off his back. Then Wayne was holding his crotch and crying.

Ricky: “Now I suppose I can call you Swollen Johnson.”

Wayne: “You’re mine another day, I assure you.”

With a smile on Ricky’s face, shaking his arm with his fist clenched, he started saying, “Swollen Johnson, Swollen Johnson, Swollen Johnson.” Then the crowd spoke it as well. From that point on, the school knew Wayne Johnson as Swollen Johnson. Which neither the three knew there was a teacher outside that saw everything and had grabbed up Wayne, Ricky, and Jimmy and took them to the principal’s office.

The three sat out in the waiting room, while the teacher went into the principal’s office to explain the situation of what just happened. The principal’s name was Mr. McGeady. He invited the three of them to come into the office to explain their side of the story.

Mr. McGeady: “You know fighting on school property is not allowed, nor should it ever be allowed to fight, do you have anything to say for yourselves?”

Ricky: “I really did not want to fight, Mr. McGeady, but Wayne challenged me, so I had to.”

Mr. McGeady: “Well, you should have come to me earlier. We could’ve solved this problem before it became a fight. Do you have anything else to add to this, Jimmy or Wayne?”

Wayne: “No, sorry, it shouldn’t have happened.”

Jimmy: “No, sir!”

Mr. McGeady: “Well, I decided for your discipline that you will be doing three days in school suspension from Wednesday to Friday. And for the seventh-and-eighth-grade dance, you guys are forbidden to go to it on Friday. You’re lucky that’s all you’re getting for discipline.”

Ricky: “But, Principal McGeady, not the dance, please, is there anything else I can do differently?”

Mr. McGeady: “No, but I’m sure you will let your parents know what happened here today.”

Wayne, Ricky, and Jimmy had a three-day school suspension and were unable to go to the dance, which made Ricky real upset.

Chapter 2

It was ten years later in the spring of 2017. Ricky and Jimmy lived with Jimmy's parents in their four-bedroom house, also with Jimmy's younger brother, Jason. Jimmy and his dad, Scott, would get up at four o'clock every morning and be at work by five. They worked at the same factory. Jimmy's alarm went off at four o'clock; he reached over and turned it off and crawled out of bed. Next he went to the restroom, and then he was standing in front of the mirror. He started brushing his teeth, and then he shaved and went to the shower. He came out with a towel on and went back to his bedroom and changed into his work clothes. He came downstairs and sat at the dinner table while his dad Scott was making up some bacon, scrambled eggs, and toast.

Scott: "Here, son, here is your bacon, eggs, and toast."

Jimmy: "Thanks, Dad. They're good. By the way, do you like your job in the factory, Dad?"

Scott: "It's been good to me; it kind of grows on you after time."

Jimmy: "Well, I've been having worries about getting hurt like you did with your hand."

Scott: "Well, you shouldn't worry, son, just because I got hurt doesn't mean you will."

Jimmy: "I suppose so."

Scott: "Plus, where else are you going to make twenty-five-plus dollars an hour?"

Jimmy: "I'm just saying, I'm not sure if this is the job for me, but I appreciate you getting me on at the factory, Dad."

Scott: "It's been five years; you did most of it yourself to where you're at."

Jimmy's father finished his breakfast and put his coat on, then he headed out the door with his lunchbox.

Scott: "Well, I'll see you at work. Don't be late. Love you."

Jimmy: "I won't, thanks for the eggs and breakfast."

Jimmy had to make his lunch. He made a turkey, tomato, lettuce, cheese, and mayonnaise sandwich with Cheetos, a pudding, and banana and put it in his lunchbox.

Ten minutes after Scott, Jimmy's father, had left, Jimmy decided to go. He had about seven to ten blocks to go to work, and it would take about three minutes in his 1992 Mazda Miata. Jimmy arrived at work one minute prior to being late and heard Chuck and Jim say something like, "You're going to be late," and Jimmy said, "Not today." Jimmy arrived at the time clock, one of many which was clicking down the last thirty seconds before the buzzer would ring. He punched in and walked to his station.

Jimmy looked at the packets for the station to be run. Then he decided to run four-and-a-half-inch tubes, which he took the job that was in a tub on a cart and pushed it next to the lathe. Jimmy looked at the blueprints, and seeing what had to be done, he adjusted to fit into the lathe, then he had adjusted it to take out 30,000th of an inch from the ID dimensions. He pushed the rate of feed at about 15 to 20,000th. He did a primary check for the first quarter inch and readjusted the lathe to the proper ID tolerance.

Jimmy was doing his first piece when all of a sudden he saw this wire coming out from the inside of the tube. It was getting longer and longer. Finally, Jimmy thought, "I better remove that before it cuts me or harms me," as he was reaching up to remove the wire. He saw his fingers of his right hand in motion, and then all of a sudden they weren't there, three of the four fingers disappeared and fell into the machine. Jimmy had just lost three of his four fingers on the right hand. Then like in a distant tunnel vision of light, white had come into his mind's view with the sound of his dad saying, "Are you all right, son?"

As Jimmy was looking at his right hand, he started to smile, and then he said, "Yes, everything is fine," after he realized his hand was still intact. It wore on Jimmy the episode that just happened he felt as if it was like *déjà vu* and this was just a warning.

Scott: "I stopped the machine for you."

Jimmy: "Why did you do that?"

Scott: "Because there was a long wire coming out of it and it was safer to shut it off."

Jimmy: "Thanks, I think I'm all right."

Jimmy took the hook and cleaned the machine free of its wire, which should've been done when the machine was running. Then he backed out the boring bar from the machine and took a bore mike to measure the hole. It was fine, so he switched out the part.

Scott: "The reason why I came over was because I want you to go to the store and pick up some food for tomorrow. I'll be staying a little later today. Could you pick up shaved ham, bread, sliced cheese, lettuce, tomato, and mayonnaise? Also, pick up some milk while you're at it."

Jimmy: "Sure, no problem, I can do that. Do you have some cash?"

Scott handed Jimmy \$40.

Back at the house, Sondra, Scott's wife, got up at seven o'clock. She went to Jason's room and woke him up to take a shower to get ready for school. After Jason had gotten ready, he went to the kitchen to eat a bowl of cereal. Sondra was sitting down at the table reading the paper with a glass of orange juice and a couple slices of toast.

Sondra: "So, Jason, do you have any tests today?"

Jason: "Yes, I have a calculus test."

Sondra: "Did you study for it?"

Jason: "Yeah, I spent about two hours last night studying and doing homework."

Sondra: "Well, I wish you the best of luck on it and have a good day at school."

Jason left out the door at 7:45 AM to go to school with his 2006 Pontiac G6. Then Sondra had gotten ready. She worked at Citizens Financial State Bank in Monticello as a loan officer. She had to be there at 8:45 AM. She had a 2016 Chevy Malibu.

Then about 9:30 AM, Ricky got up and took a shower then went to the kitchen to make some breakfast. Most of the time, he had the house to himself for the last six weeks since he got laid off from Forbis, a plastic

injection factory. It was May 2, and he had gone to several locations recently to apply for work but was unable to find a job. Part of his routine was to hang out on the porch and lay on a hammock.

While he was lying there, he heard someone call out his name. It was old Mrs. Weathersby across the way. Jimmy got up and went over to her. She had asked if he could carry her groceries in. He said sure, no problem.

Mrs. Weathersby: "How have you been doing lately?"

Ricky: "Not the best, I can't seem to find work."

Mrs. Weathersby: "Well, don't lose hope, when the timing is right, you'll find a job."

Ricky: "And you, how are you doing?"

Mrs. Weathersby: "Well, I've been really lonely since the last year when my husband passed Away, but besides that, I'm doing fairly well. My health is still all right."

Ricky: "I'm sorry for the loss of your husband, but if you need help doing simple chores in the house or around it, just let me know, I'll see what I can do."

Mrs. Weathersby: "Thanks, I appreciate that, here's \$20 for you for carrying in my groceries."

Ricky: "That's okay! You don't have to do that."

Mrs. Weathersby: "It's no problem; I don't need to take my money to the grave with me."

Ricky: "Thanks, Mrs. Weathersby."

As Ricky was walking back to the house, an idea came to his mind. He figured if he can get paid to do deliveries, that would be something he would feel good about and like. He grabbed the paper off the table that Mrs. Chally had. He opened the paper to the job section and was looking for anything of deliveries. He noticed that Benard's is looking for delivery service. That sprung an idea. So he called the number and requested to talk to the manager. The manager came to the phone.

Gus: "This is Gus here, may I help you?"

Ricky: "Yes, I was calling in reference to the delivery job that you have in the paper. Could you fill me in a little about what you like to have or what the requirements are?"

Gus: "Well, I'm looking for a delivery service that has a million-dollar insurance policy. Your business has to be legal to operate on the road. You'll need a flatbed truck, a boom truck, and a fourteen-foot box truck or larger. A dress code that you'll have to come up with. The hours are from seven o'clock in the morning until deliveries are run for the day or until ten o'clock at night. And of course, you will need phones for your drivers. The current delivery service was making between \$225,000 and \$300,000 a year. During the peak season, you will be running between twenty-five and thirty deliveries a day seven days a week. At times you will have to go with two people to do drywall deliveries, they weigh about 230 pounds for two sheets of 5/8 4 x 12, so the ones that work for you should be in good shape to handle the task."

Ricky: "How soon do you need the delivery service?"

Gus: "In about two to three weeks, that's when the other service is retiring."

Ricky: "If you would like, I'll give you my phone number. My name is Ricky LongJohn, and I'll call you back within a couple days to let you know if we want to take the task on for your store to do deliveries."

Gus: "By the way, there is one other thing you get, a 1% escrow tax on all deliveries that you deliver. Usually it's about \$2–3 million worth of product delivered a year that's paid out at the end of the year. So you'll get an extra 20–30,000 thousand dollars. As long as you're still working for Benard's every year."

Ricky: "Well, thanks! I'll let you know in a few days. Have a good day, bye."

At the factory, it was 2:59 PM. Jimmy was standing by the time clock. He then punched out at three o'clock, got in his Miata, and headed for the store to pick up the groceries his dad had asked him to pick up. He went to the deli counter and asked for some shaved ham, then he got bread, lettuce, tomato, sliced cheese, mayonnaise, and some milk. He also got chips and dip along with a twelve pack of Busch Light beer. He went to the checkout line and he saw an old friend from school, Molly. She was a cashier.

Jimmy: "Hi, Molly, how are you doing?"

Molly: "Good, for the most part."

Jimmy: "Are you still dating that asshole Wayne?"

Molly: "He's not really that bad."

Jimmy: "He has to be boring, and his attitude is like a stiff prick. I heard through the grapevine that you have moved in with him."

Molly: "Yeah, I'm trying to see if we're compatible, and if he gets me pregnant, I plan on marrying him, but no luck so far."

Jimmy: "What! You want to get pregnant first?"

Molly: "Yeah, I want to have three kids, a family you know."

Jimmy: "I just want to let you know that Ricky has a serious crush on you yet, you should give him a chance."

Molly: "You never know what the future may bring. If things don't work out with me and Wayne and if he isn't seeing anyone, maybe."

Jimmy: "Well, thanks, have a great day, till next time."

Molly: "Okay, you too, bye."

Jimmy pulled up on this street next to the curb at his house and he grabbed the groceries. On the porch, Ricky was lying on the hammock sleeping. Jimmy woke him up.

Jimmy: "How was your day, Ricky?"

Ricky: "Not bad. At about ten o'clock, old Mrs. Weathersby had asked me to carry her groceries in, so I help her. Then she gave me \$20."

Jimmy: "That's good. Would you like to have a beer?"

Ricky: "Sure."

Jimmy: "By the way, when I was at the store, I talked to Molly. She told me she would like to get pregnant before marriage with Wayne; supposedly they've been trying for a while, with no luck. I told her that you have a crush on her yet, she made it sound like if you didn't have anyone in the future, she'd be interested in you."

Ricky: "That's cool, how was your day?"

Jimmy: "This morning I had another one of them terrifying visions that I had lost some fingers in the lathe. Something tells me that I should try to find a different job that doesn't give me these visions of getting hurt."

Ricky: "That's not cool, but I think I got the perfect job for us."

Jimmy: "What's that?"

Ricky: "After I had carried the groceries for old Mrs. Weathersby, it dawned on me that I would like to do something in the delivery business and I think we could do it together."

Jimmy: "What do you mean?"

Ricky: "Well, I searched the paper for delivery services needed. And I found one from Cedar Rapids. The South store of Benard's is in need of a delivery service within three weeks. I had called the store, talked to the manager. He said the job makes about \$225–300,000 a year, we will need a flatbed truck, a boom truck, and a fourteen-foot or larger box truck. The bad thing about it is, it is seven days a week, from 7:00 AM to 10:00 PM, and we got to be bonded for \$1 million as far as insurance purposes go, and all the drivers would have to have cell phones. We will have to make our own dress code, and the business has to be legal to operate on the road."

Jimmy: "About how many deliveries a day is that?"

Ricky: "He said during the peak season it will be about twenty-five to thirty deliveries a day."

Jimmy: "What's the farthest distance we have to travel each day or at times?"

Ricky: "He said as far as Brooklyn, Clarence, Keokuk, or Dubuque, which would be about 75 miles one way, that is about \$120 for the delivery, plus we can stack the deliveries. We might be able to do three deliveries per truck or more when you travel on the way."

Jimmy: "Well, interesting, it sounds good. We can be our own boss."

Ricky: "So what do you think? It will cost a lot though for the trucks, but we can buy used to get by until we can afford new ones."

Jimmy: "Yeah, heck yeah, let's do it."

Jimmy called the Department of Transportation (DOT), and he asked what was required in having a delivery business. The lady on the other side of the phone said, "It's a must to have a DOT number and register with the state on payroll taxes and Social Security, also register for any other states that you work in, if

you plan on doing any moving, like household you will also have to make up a moving tariff to show your business of operation. It's a must to have the DOT number on the side of the door on each side of the vehicle and name of your business visible." He told her thanks and asked her kindly if she could send out the paperwork needed for him to fill out.

It was just about 6:00 PM; Scott, Sondra, Jimmy, Jason, and Ricky were sitting around the kitchen table ready to eat some pizza that Mrs. Chally had ordered from Johnny's Pizza Ranch. Two large pizzas, a cheeseburger pizza along with a sweet and swine pizza, were delivered.

Scott: "Jimmy, you said you had something to tell me, so what's on your mind?"

Jimmy: "Yeah, Dad, I do. You see, Ricky was looking into a delivery business today in Cedar Rapids that entails having three commercial trucks needed to do the deliveries for a store. I decided that I'm putting in my two weeks' notice at work tomorrow so I can venture into that business with Ricky."

Scott: "Are you sure that's a good idea? You have such a great job now. It will be hard to find another one if you should change your mind. You make good money."

Jimmy: "Well, you remember this morning when you turned off my lathe. I've been having like visions lately that are not good, they scare me, and I'm worried about getting hurt or losing fingers. Plus, I think I'd be happy doing deliveries, traveling around the countryside, taking in the scenery, and talking to people."

Ricky: "I talked to the store manager today of Benard's, and he said that we will make about \$225,000 to \$300,000 a year. But we got to move quickly, because he needs a delivery service in three weeks."

Scott: "What do you think, honey? You think they should do it?"

Sondra: "They're young, in good shape, and I believe they will be motivated for the job. Yeah, I'm for them, I could help them do their payroll, bills, and taxes at the end of the year. I believe if Jimmy puts in his two weeks' notice at the factory, he should have no problem getting hired back later on in the future."

Scott: "I suppose you're right, maybe I should quit my job and help them too. But I've been working at the factory for twenty years. Which I will still have my veteran's disability that pays us \$30,000 a year."

Sondra: "That would be fine with me, with the \$50,000 I'm making and \$30,000 from you, we still have \$80,000, plus whatever you make doing deliveries."

Jason: "What about me? I'm just about out of school, I have like only a month left, then I will need to find a job, would you consider hiring me?"

Jimmy and Ricky: "Sure, we will need all the help we can get."

Jimmy: "But you don't have a CDL and can't get one until twenty-one years old, but we could probably get a van truck or box truck, that you would just need a regular license."

Ricky: "We would only start you out like \$15 or \$16 an hour for deliveries. Me and Jimmy were thinking if you have a CDL, it would be between \$18 and \$20 in order to drive."

Scott: "You have enough money, Ricky and Jimmy, to start an adventure like this."

Jimmy: "I have a little over \$50,000 saved up, but I was going to use that for a down payment on a house, but that can wait."

Ricky: "And I have about \$12,000 saved up."

Scott: "You both will need to get your CDL, which I can help you with, but you will need to study for it. We have to find a sixteen- to twenty-foot flatbed commercial CDL with airbrakes right away. You need to come up with a business name, have you thought of any?"

Jason: "What about We-Haul? It would be like U-Haul."

Jimmy: "I was thinking something like Chally's Trucking."

Ricky: "But I'm not a Chally, we need something different, unique, and easily to find with a ring to it, We-Haul sounds pretty good."

Scott: "If I had a say in it, I would call it Ace Services, with three of the four aces, Ace of Hearts, Ace of Spades, and the Ace of Diamonds, which would stand for love, power, and wealth. Which you will also need a slogan."

Jimmy: "Yeah, I like that, but isn't that from your new world policy that you came up with in the book?"

Scott: "It is."

Ricky: "That doesn't sound too bad. For the slogan I would think something like, 'We Deliver Anything.'"

Jimmy: "Are you sure you want to put down that we deliver anything, what if we don't have the proper trucks or equipment to haul?"

Ricky: "Well, that's when we charge an outrageous price to do the job, we figure out what it would cost to rent the equipment to figure it in on the job to be hauled."

Jimmy: "I suppose you're right, I think we can do it, sound good."

Sondra: "By the way, Jason, how did you do on your calculus test?"

Jason: "I think I did pretty good, I believe I got a B or better, but I won't find out until tomorrow."

The next day, Scott, Jimmy, Sondra, and Jason had left for the morning. Then Ricky got up about 9:30 AM and started to look through the paper for trucks. He found one that was in Wyoming, Iowa. It was a 1996 Ford F8000 diesel, eighteen-foot flatbed with hoist with about 145,000 miles on it for \$6,500 or best offer. So Ricky called the number.

Earl: "This is Earl."

Ricky: "My name is Ricky, I'm calling in reference to the truck you got listed in the paper for sale."

Earl: "You betcha. It's a beauty of a truck, good shape and reliable, low miles."

Ricky: "Does that truck have regular breaks or air brakes?"

Earl: "It has air brakes; gross vehicle weight is 33,000 pounds."

Ricky: "What color is it?"

Earl: "Red, the bed is black and the wheels are black and silver."

Ricky: "Is it an automatic or manual transmission?"

Earl: "It's a six-speed stick."

Ricky: "How does around six tonight work for you to look at it?"

Earl: "You betcha, I'll see you then."

Ricky then asked for the address.

Ricky hung up the phone and then decided to call Gus at Bernard's to let him know that they're interested in the job, and in three weeks, they should be ready to run with deliveries.

Gus: "This is Gus Cedar Rapids South store Bernard's."

Ricky: "Hi, Gus, this is Ricky. I talked to you yesterday in reference to the delivery service that you are looking for."

Gus: "So what did you decide? Are you interested?"

Ricky: "Yes, me, my friend, and his dad are looking forward to working for you, of course, we'll hire a few other part-time."

Gus: "Well, I'll take the requests for the delivery service down and be counting on you to fill the shoes."

Ricky: "I was looking in the paper this morning and I found an eighteen-foot Ford flatbed truck that we're going to look at tonight."

Gus: "The last delivery service or the current one we have now is selling their trucks, they're all five years or newer. Here, I'll give you the number, you can call them. The number is 555-481-6900."

Ricky: "Thanks, I'll give them a call. I'll keep you informed and call you within a week to let you know how we're coming along."

Gus: "Okay, thanks, I'll be looking forward from hearing from you again soon. Have a good day."

Ricky hung up the phone on Gus and called the number that he had given him.

Ricky: "Hello, is this the delivery service for Bernard's?"

Roger: "Yes, this is Roger, the owner, may I help you?"

Ricky: "Hi, my name is Ricky, I was calling in reference to the boom truck and possibly the other box truck that you have. Could you tell me a little bit about them, and what you are selling them for?"

Roger: "Sure, no problem, the boom truck I'm asking \$75,000 and the box truck I'm asking \$35,000. The boom truck is a 2012 Freightliner automatic 33,000 gross vehicle weight with eighteen-foot bed and scissor boom with outriggers. And the box truck is also a 2012 Freightliner automatic 33,000 with eighteen-foot box and lift gate. They're both white, the boom truck has about 200,000 miles on it in and the box truck has about

150,000 miles. If you buy both, I'll let you have them for \$100,000.”

Ricky: “It seems a little steep, but I'll discuss it with my partners, and I'll let you know in a day or so if we want to check them out. You see, I just started looking around for trucks and not sure on what prices they sell for.”

Roger: “Well, five years ago, I paid \$126,000 for the boom truck and \$62,000 for the box truck.”

Ricky: “Thanks for your time. I'll let you go for now, you'll hear from me in a day or two.”

Ricky hung up the phone, then he decided to go to the bank and take out some money for that evening. He withdrew \$6,500 from his account at the teller. Then he decided to visit Sondra.

Ricky: “Hi, Sondra, how's it going?”

Sondra: “Not bad, what are you doing here?”

Ricky: “I just withdrew \$6,500 for we can have it tonight when we look at a truck in Wyoming that a person is selling.”

Sondra: “Make sure you don't get taken to the cleaners.”

Ricky: “We won't. The three of us are going at 6:00 PM tonight. But I would also like you to start on some loan papers for us to get approved for a \$50,000 loan.”

Sondra: “Sure thing, it might take a week.”

Ricky: “Thanks, I will see you tonight when we get home. Have a great day.”

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky headed out the door about 5:30 PM to head to Wyoming to look at the flatbed truck. Scott drove his truck, a 2014 blue Ford F150 King cab 4 x 4.

Scott: “So, Ricky, you say you got the money.”

Ricky: “Yeah, I took out \$6,500 today.”

Scott: “When we get there, let me do all the talking, maybe we can get him down to \$5,500. Of course, the truck has to check out first. Let me tell you a trick, when you're dealing with someone, you have to be friendly, being courteous is number one, so if he smokes and if you ask him for a cigarette, you're making a relationship that you can bond with him. Or whatever he offers as a suggestion of peace.”

Jimmy: “But we don't smoke.”

Scott: “Take one for the team, trust me. I know what I'm talking about, I've done this before. Just follow my lead.”

They arrived at the address where the truck was at. They saw a house, and a fairly decent-sized shop with the truck out front, gravel driveway. The property looked rundown with debris and junk all over the yard and a few miscellaneous old cars with doors missing, like they've been stripped. They saw a person with a cigarette in his mouth headed toward them as they pulled up. They got out of the truck to greet him.

Scott: “Are you the one listing the truck for sale?”

Earl: "You betcha, my name is Earl."

Scott: "Well, my name is Scott and this is Jimmy, my son, and his friend Ricky."

Earl: "Good to meet you. So you're interested in the truck, are you?"

Scott: "Yeah, we're looking to buy a flatbed. Could you tell me a little something about the truck?"

Earl: "She looks a little rough right now, she just needs a little cleanup, and the bed and wheels could use paint. It's in great shape for a twenty-one-year-old truck with low miles. You'll find out that the truck is solid and in great shape. There's nothing wrong with it."

Scott: "Would you care if we take it for a spin?"

Earl: "You betcha! Here's the keys."

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky got in the truck and took it down the highway. Scott had shifted it through the six speeds and was listening for noises or any shakes that it might have.

Scott: "It seems like a solid good truck, but let's see if he will go down on the price."

Jimmy: "I say offer him \$5,800."

Scott: "Okay, we will try."

They pulled back into the driveway and parked the truck. They got out and walked up to Earl. Earl was smoking a cigarette.

Scott: "You wouldn't by chance have one of them for me, would you?"

Earl: "You betcha, here take this one."

Ricky and Jimmy were looking at Earl as he took the cigarette from his mouth. It was like slow motion as they saw the mucus-like snot coming off his lips sticking to the cigarette as he passed it to Scott.

Earl: "Would you two like one too?"

Jimmy: "No, that's okay, I'll pass."

Ricky: "I'm good."

Earl: "Well, if you don't want a cigarette, I have some Cherry Skoal long-cut tobacco or some jerky."

Ricky: "I'll take some Cherry Skoal."

Earl reached into his pocket, grabbed out the tobacco, then opened the container and offered it to Ricky, and then he took a pinch for himself and put it in his lip.

Jimmy: "I'll try or take some jerky if you don't mind."

Earl: "You betcha."

Earl reached into his pocket and grabbed a bag with jerky in it and handed it over to Jimmy. Jimmy took three pieces.

Jimmy: "Thanks."

Scott: "So what's your bottom dollar?"

Earl: "Well, \$6,500."

Scott: "You listed it as \$6,500 or best offer."

Earl: "Well, I was thinking \$6,500, I had it listed two weeks ago for \$7,500."

All of a sudden, Scott started to feel weird, but he felt well and good, kind of happy. It dawned on him that there was something in the cigarette that he smoked.

Scott: "What was in that cigarette?"

Earl: "I roll them myself. It's my own special blend, my secret."

Scott: "Would you be willing to take \$5,800?"

Earl: "Nope, I think it's worth \$6,500."

Jimmy: "This jerky tastes a little funny, what is it?"

Earl: "It's possum, I found it this morning on the road, it was still warm, so I made jerky out of it. It's fresh! I like it, do you?"

Jimmy had eaten one and a half pieces, then he bent over and spat out what he had in his mouth.

Jimmy: "Oh my god, you have some water for I can rinse my mouth out?"

Earl: "Sure, there's freshwater from that eve spout on the side of the building, there's a metal cup hanging on the side of it. I drink from it all the time. There's nothing better than fresh rainwater. I'm surprised you don't like the jerky."

Jimmy: "It has a funny taste, you sure it's not spoiled?"

Earl took his can of dip out of his pocket, opened it up, took the dip out of his mouth, and put it back in the container.

Ricky noticed that Earl put the dip back and the container, and then Ricky spat his dip out and went to the bucket and drank some water to rinse his mouth out along with Jimmy. Ricky and Jimmy both felt sick for what they had just done. Then they saw this huge dog, a St. Bernard. It went over to the bucket and started drinking the water.

Earl then took bite out of the jerky.

Earl: "The jerky tastes fine to me."

Scott: "So you'll take \$7,500 then, I mean \$6,500?"

Earl: "You betcha. If you want to give me \$7,500, that would be great, I know you meant \$6,500 though."

Scott: "Ricky, go ahead and give Earl \$6,500 for the truck, but we'll need a receipt and the title."

Earl: "For \$100 more, I will write on the receipt that I sold the truck for one dollar. It'll save you a bunch of money at the courthouse."

Scott: "Sure, that sounds good."

Jimmy: "Are you sure that's a good idea, Dad!"

Scott: "It should be fine. It will save us a couple hundred dollars. Wow, I feel good, kind of lightheaded. What did you have in that cigarette?"

Earl: "You betcha, my secret."

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky took out their wallets and gathered another hundred dollars between the three of them. Then Ricky gave Earl \$6,500 plus a hundred dollars. Earl sat there and made out a receipt for one dollar on the truck and signed over the title.

Scott and Jimmy got in the flatbed truck; Ricky got in the pickup. They headed out to go back to Monticello. Scott was the only one that had a CDL license. As they were driving on the highway, they were only traveling about 35 miles an hour in a 55-mile-an-hour zone.

Jimmy: "Dad, you're not traveling very fast, are you okay to drive?"

Scott: "Sure, yeah, I'm fine. It feels like I'm going like 60 to 70 miles an hour."

Just after he said that, he noticed in his mirror a sheriff coming up behind him. The lights came on the squad car. Scott pulled over to the side of the road. The officer got out of his vehicle and walked up to the driver's side of the truck.

Officer Gibbons: "May I have your license, registration, and insurance, please?"

Scott handed the officer his license, receipt of purchase, an insurance card from his pickup truck that he had in his wallet.

Scott: "May I ask why you pulled me over?"

Officer Gibbons: "Well, for one thing, you were traveling way too slow on the highway, and you have no plates."

Scott: "You see, we just purchased this vehicle, and there must be something wrong with the transmission because it doesn't go any faster than 35 miles an hour."

Officer Gibbons: "Why are your eyes so red?"

Scott: "I have bad allergies this time of the year. They are like that all the time."

Officer Gibbons: "Please step down out of the vehicle, as well for your partner."

Scott: "That's really not necessary."

Officer Gibbons: "I don't want to say it again."

Scott and Jimmy got out of the vehicle. Jimmy came around to the driver's side, and Ricky walked up to them and the officer from the pickup.

Officer Gibbons pointed at Ricky and said, "Sir, please go back to your vehicle."

The officer shook down and frisked Scott and Jimmy, but he couldn't find anything of any contraband or weapons. He searched the truck and around to see if they had tossed anything. He went back to his squad car and came back with a breathalyzer.

Officer Gibbons: "Could you please blow in this?"

Scott blew in the breathalyzer and all zeros came up. The officer was stumped. He knew there was something fishy but couldn't prove anything. Then he went back to his car. He did a background check on Scott, which nothing was on his record, not even a speeding ticket. He came back to the truck.

Officer Gibbons: "Well, it's your lucky day. I know there's something fishy about you, but I'll just let you go with a warning. Please get that truck looked at and have a nice day."

Scott and Jimmy: "Thanks and you too."

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky had made it home with no other occurrences.

Ricky: "I had talked to the previous delivery service and he said that he had a scissor boom truck for \$75,000 and CDL box truck for \$35,000."

Scott: "Well, we'll have to see if he won't take \$65,000 for the boom truck, and we can't use a CDL box truck if we want Jason to drive, or other drivers that may not have a CDL."

Scott: "Ricky, I need you to look into getting a fourteen- to eighteen-foot box truck at Trucks & More in Cedar Rapids."

Ricky: "Should I call Roger tomorrow and tell him that we're interested in his boom truck for \$65,000?"

Scott: "Sure, that sounds good, also call Trucks & More."

Jimmy: "Try to find something under \$25,000, that way I can write a check for it."

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky were sitting around that night discussing what needed to be done in order to launch the delivery service. They knew that they needed their CDL licenses, at least Jimmy and Ricky did. They needed to get insurance and find three part-time guys to run in the trucks that have CDL license. They wanted business cards made up as well and decals for the trucks. They needed to come up with the reference of how the deliveries will work in a moving turf, and of course, they needed the DOT numbers.

The next day Ricky got up around nine. He was home alone and started making some calls. He called Trucks & More and was talking to a sales rep named Tom.

Ricky: "Hi, my name is Ricky. I'm looking for truck to buy."

Tom: "What kind of truck you looking at?"

Ricky: "I would like a box truck between fourteen-foot to eighteen-foot non-CDL with lift gate."

Tom: "Well, we have about seven on the lot that I know of. Do you want new or used and how old, if you want used?"

Ricky: "I was looking for a truck roughly about five years old or newer with low miles."

Tom: "Well, I say a brand-new truck with lift gate sixteen-foot diesel is around \$38,000."

Ricky: "Come on now, I'm not looking to spend that much. Let's say I have around 25 thousand dollars. What do you have?"

Tom: "I have three trucks under \$25,000, one is a 2012 Mitsubishi, sixteen-foot box with lift gate. It has about 130,000 miles and we're asking \$22,500. We have a 2013 Isuzu, sixteen-foot box with lift gate for \$24,000 that has about 110,000 miles. And then we have a 2011 Chevy Tilt Master, with fourteen-foot box, with lift gate that has about 150,000 miles that we're selling for \$19,500. They're all diesels and we stand behind them for twelve months and 12,000 miles for if anything goes wrong."

Ricky: "Do you have any scissor boom trucks that are around eighteen foot?"

Tom: "We have three, they're all Freightliners and they're eighteen foot. One is a 2016 for \$96,000, we have another one that is a 2014 for \$82,000, and we have a 2012 for around \$70,000. They're all fairly low miles. There is a little wiggle room on the 2012. You might be able to get it down as low as \$68,000 but not lower than that."

Ricky: "Thanks for your time. You'll probably be seeing me and my partner within a week. What time do you close at night?"

Tom: "Our hours of operation for sales are from 9:00 AM to 7:00 PM Monday through Friday and 8:00 to 12:00 on Saturday. I'll be looking forward to seeing you soon."

Ricky then called Roger, the owner of the other delivery service.

Ricky: "Hi, Roger, this is Ricky. I had called you yesterday about your trucks. And I'm only interested in the boom truck. Will you take \$65,000 for it?"

Roger: "No, I can't do that. I tell you what, for you I'll let it go for \$70,000."

Ricky: "Well, I had called Trucks & More and they have a 2012 I can buy for \$68,000. In a couple days, we're going there to purchase it, if you don't contact us back."

Roger: "Okay, I'll think about it. If you don't hear back from me by Friday, I won't let it go for any less."

Ricky: "Okay, thanks for your time."

Ricky hung up the phone, then he called an insurance company and requested to get insurance for the business they had started. He set up a million-dollar policy and added the Ford flatbed truck. He then got in his 2010 Toyota Corolla and drove to the courthouse in the next town to pick up a couple CDL study guides, and

then put license on the truck. He made it back home and decided to work on the truck that they just purchased. He got some wax and started waxing the cab of the truck. While he was waxing the truck cab, Molly was driving by and stopped to talk to him.

Molly: "Hi, Ricky, how are you doing?"

Ricky: "Good, how are you doing, what brings you by?"

Molly: "Well, I'm heading to work."

Ricky: "Are you still with that prick Wayne?"

Molly: "He isn't that bad, plus he has a great job."

Ricky: "Jimmy was telling me that you want to get pregnant first before marriage. You know I would be happy and willing to do the job that you ask for. Which I would treat you like a goddess and respect all your needs. You know I have feelings for you, just give me a chance, Molly."

Molly: "I do have feelings for you, but you know I have Wayne. Let me say this, I'll give him six months to get me pregnant, if that doesn't happen, you are on top of the list. Why do you have a truck parked on the street?"

Ricky: "Sweet, I'll be looking forward to November. Me, Jimmy, and his dad are going into a delivery business."

Molly: "Wow, nice, where at?"

Ricky: "Bernard's, Cedar Rapids South store."

Molly: "Okay, well I should get going. I got like five minutes to get to work."

Ricky: "Remember, I have feelings for you. Have a good day!"

Ricky worked all afternoon waxing the truck, until Jimmy and his dad came home. He explained to them what he found out about the trucks he found for delivery and mentioned that he had got insurance as well for the business.

Ricky: "Scott, how are we going to paint the flatbed of the truck?"

Scott: "Tomorrow, go down to the hardware store; buy some plastic to cover the truck cab and an air regulator so we can hook it up to the air tanks on the truck. Also get a twenty-five-foot hose, couplings to connect the hose, a cheap spray gun, black enamel paint, and some thinner."

Jimmy: "Wow, the truck is looking good, that wax really made a difference."

Ricky: "Took me a while, but yeah."

It was after 5:00 PM; everyone was home. They were all sitting in the living room. They had a state-of-the-art computer and accessories on one wall in the living room. Jimmy was behind the computer.

Jimmy: "So do you want to do the tariff for the delivery service?"

Scott: “That sounds like a good idea. We are all here and we can decide together what we want to put in it. For household moving, it should be a minimum of \$200 just to show up at the location for a minimum of two hours, or \$85 an hour for two men.”

Scott: “Put in, for each additional person, we charge an extra \$35 for household moving.”

Ricky: “For heavy items over 300 pounds, charge is \$150 minimum, example is heavy safes and pianos.”

Jimmy: “What about a \$1.65 per mile, which should be about \$120–\$125 for 75 miles. Then of course, you would get extra from handling certain items and setups.”

Jimmy: “For in-town deliveries of Cedar Rapids, Hiawatha, or Marion is \$60 to show up plus a \$1.65 per mile if it’s outside the metro area of Cedar Rapids.”

Jason: “What about other towns or locations?”

Jimmy: “Out-of-town deliveries from the metro area of Cedar Rapids will start at a \$1.65 a mile to and from the location, plus \$60 for the delivery.”

Ricky: “I think we should only cover 75-mile radius to start out with. We can always change it.”

Scott, Ricky, Jason, and Sondra all agreed that it was about right for what it should cost to make a profit that’s not too outrageous.

Jimmy: “Let’s split our delivery days up into quarters on the map—north, south, east, west for instance—Monday through Thursday in town and then out-of-town deliveries for each quadrant for the days of the week, then we can do household moves on Friday and Saturday.”

They had finished the tariff of all the stuff; they wanted it to explain what they do for delivery. Then Jimmy was looking up trucks.

Jimmy: “There is a 2010 twenty-foot scissor boom truck with 180,000 miles in Chicago for \$60,000. And there’s another boom truck that’s a 2013 eighteen-foot scissor boom truck with 150,000 miles in Madison, Wisconsin, for \$80,000.”

Ricky: “If Roger from Bernard’s sells his boom truck for \$65,000, I say we buy it.”

Scott and Jimmy: “Yeah, we should.”

Jason: “I’ll be getting out of school here in like thirty days, then I can start working for you, but I can’t drive a CDL truck. We need a box truck non-CDL, so I can drive it.”

Ricky: “We have you covered, Jason. We have three to choose from at Trucks & More. I think we should get the 2013 Isuzu sixteen-foot box truck with lift gate that only has 110,000 miles for \$24,000.”

Jimmy: “Let’s go there Saturday morning and maybe I can write a check for it.”

Scott and Ricky: “Sounds like a plan, yeah, sounds good.”

Ricky: “Sondra, how you coming on the paperwork for the loan?”

Sondra: "It should be ready by mid next week. But, Jimmy, you're going to have to give me your last two years of income taxes to show proof of employment tonight."

Jimmy: "No problem!"

Jason: "We should also decide what the layout of the slogan and description will say for the business."

Jimmy returned to the computer again and opened up a program of graphics.

Jimmy: "What about having three aces show. We will put the delivery name on top of the aces. We should list what we do or slogan underneath. 'We deliver anything.'"

Jimmy designed a nice business display of the slogan. He printed it out and handed it to them.

Scott, Ricky, Jason, Sondra: "Looks good, excellent, sharp looking, cool."

Sondra: "Won't you need business cards too and T-shirts, sweaters, and maybe hats?"

Scott: "Ricky, locate a business that does T-shirts, sweaters, and hats in Cedar Rapids tomorrow. Then I would like you to contact We Copy More and have them make up business cards, with the logo for you and Jimmy with numbers."

Ricky: "Okay."

They called it quits for the night. Jimmy headed out the next morning at 8:30, which takes about forty minutes to drive to Marion, which was connected to Cedar Rapids. He found the business We Copy More. He went in to the store and handed the paper to a person behind the counter from the logo that was made up the night before of the slogan. The person was a woman named Mary.

Ricky: "Hi there, could you make business cards from this?"

Mary: "Yeah, that should be no problem. Why don't you follow me to the desk with the computer on it over there, and I will try to make it fit for your business card. Do you have about a half hour for which we can design the card?"

Ricky: "Sure, no problem, I have all day."

Ricky followed her to the desk and sat down.

Mary: "So what do you want the card to look like besides this picture? Would you like the business name on top of the aces and the logo underneath, on the left side? Your name, phone numbers, is showing you as the owner on the right side, with the address underneath it?"

Ricky: "Sure, that sounds good, but there are two owners. There's my name, which is Ricky LongJohn, and then there is Jimmy Chally."

Ricky waited patiently as Mary designed the business card, with the aces logo, names, phone numbers, and address on it.

Mary: "Well, that should do it, is this okay?"

Ricky: "That looks perfect, I would like five hundred cards. How long do you think it'll take to get them?"

Mary: "They should be done in a couple hours, if you would like to pick them up today."

Ricky: "Can you help me with one more question? Do you know a place to print T-shirts, hats, sweaters, and jackets?"

Mary: "Sure, there's a place called CR, Print & Sewing off of 3560 Council Street."

Ricky: "You've been a great help, thanks, maybe I can take you out on a date sometime?"

Mary: "Sorry, but I have a boyfriend. You are cute though and very charming, I'm sure you'll find someone."

Ricky: "Okay."

Ricky brought up his GPS app up on the phone and punched in CR, Print & Sewing at 3560 Council St. Then he left We Copy More to head there. He arrived there, and someone greeted him as he came in. Her name was Paula.

Ricky: "I was wondering if you could print up some T-shirts, sweaters, jackets, and hats with names of our business logo."

Ricky handed her the business logo that Jimmy had made up the night before.

Paula: "Sure, that shouldn't be a problem. Would you like the jackets and hats to have stitch pattern from our sewing machines? We also have polo shirts that we can stitch to."

Ricky: "Can you show me an example of what the stitching would look like?"

Paula: "Here's a trucking company that is local that requested jackets last week."

Ricky: "Nice, sure, that would be great. You can go ahead and sew the jackets and the hats."

Paula: "How many jackets, shirts, sweaters, and hats would you like? Also, I will need the sizes?"

Ricky explained what the sizes were for Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason. He also mentioned that he would like four T-shirts per each person, two sweaters for each, and one jacket per person that all needed names added, and eight hats. He picked four colors—white T-shirts, white mixed with gray sweaters, forest green coats, and tan and green caps.

Paula: "We also have polo shirts. Would you like any of them with stitching?"

Ricky: "Wow, they look nice! I'll take one of them as well for each and make them white. How long will it take for you to have these ready?"

Paula: "They should be done in less than a week. We will give you a call when they are ready."

Ricky: "Thanks, I'll see you then."

Ricky left and headed back to We Copy More. He walked in and saw Mary.

Mary: "Hi, Ricky, they're almost done."

Ricky: "Okay, I can wait."

Mary brought the cards to the counter and signaled Ricky.

Mary: "That will be \$48.97."

Ricky: "That doesn't sound too bad."

Ricky handed Mary \$50 and Mary gave Ricky the change, CD of the design, and then the cards.

Ricky: "Thanks much, have a good day!"

Mary: "I will, and you too, bye!"

Ricky left and headed back to Monticello when his phone rang.

Ricky: "Hello, this is Ricky."

Roger: "This is Roger from Bernard's. How are you doing, Ricky? I just wanted to mention, I thought about what you offered for the truck. I'm willing to take the offer for \$65,000 if you can get it to me within a week."

Ricky: "How about next Friday, we should have it by then. Who shall I make the check out to? Do you have the title?"

Roger: "Roger Cummings, yeah, I have the title, sounds good, I'll see you then, bye."

Ricky made it back to Monticello. He went to the hardware store to pick up the necessary supplies that Scott had told him to get. He was back at the house when the mailman came. The letter from the state DOT office came in a large envelope, with the necessary forms to be filled out. He grabbed the CDL study guide and lay down on the couch to study it. After a little while, Ricky had fallen asleep. Scott, Jimmy, and Jason had made it home around 3:00 to 3:30 PM.

Jimmy: "Hey, Ricky, WAKE UP! How did your day go? Did you get the business cards and order the clothing?"

Ricky: "I sure did, they're on the counter."

Jimmy: "Nice, they look good."

Scott: "Did you get the supplies to paint the truck?"

Ricky: "Yeah, I put the supplies in the garage."

Scott: "We will do the painting tomorrow morning around eleven or noon, if the weather's good and if the wind isn't blowing. But first of all, we need to get up at six and leave by seven in order to get to Trucks & More by eight o'clock."

Jimmy and Ricky: "Sure thing, okay."

It was after 6:00 PM, and everyone was home. They just finished up eating. Jimmy, Ricky, and Sondra spent the rest of the night filling out forms.

It was the next morning. The house had two bathrooms which Scott and Jimmy took the first shower then got dressed. At about 6:25 AM, Jimmy took his shower and got ready. Scott made toast, scrambled eggs, and bacon. They left at 7:00 AM and got to Trucks & More by 7:50 AM, which they were looking the trucks over, that Tom the salesman had mentioned. Then a sales rep walked up to them. On his shirt, it said Tom.

Tom: "May I help you find something?"

Ricky: "Yeah, we talked on the phone the other day. You told me about three trucks that you have."

Tom: "Yeah, I remember, there they are those three."

He pointed to the trucks.

Scott: "Could you tell us a little bit about them and what you offer as a dealership?"

Tom: "Well, all our trucks get serviced and we guarantee them for twelve months or 12,000 miles of any mechanical problems."

Scott: "That's good to hear, I think we're interested in the Isuzu, if the price is right."

Tom: "Well, I mentioned it was \$24,000 on the phone to Ricky the other day. What were you thinking?"

Scott: "I was thinking \$22,000, and I would like you to throw in the roadside reflectors, fire extinguisher, and first-aid kit."

Tom: "You're killing me. We list all our trucks at the bottom dollar, that's how we've been able to stay in business. Throwing in the extras, you can handle that."

Scott: "Do you want a sale or not?"

Tom: "No, I can't do that."

Scott, Ricky, and Jimmy started to walk toward their truck and told Tom to have a good day.

Tom spoke a little louder: "How about \$22,500 and I will throw in the extras that you requested?"

Scott shouted back at Tom: "I'm just about to my vehicle, \$22,000 is what we'll do."

Tom shouted louder: "Okay, I can do that."

Scott, Ricky, and Jimmy turned around and walked back to Tom.

Tom: "Follow me inside and we can do the paperwork. How do you plan on paying for this, cash or finance?"

Jimmy: "I'll write your business a check."

Tom: "That'll work. It will only take about twenty minutes to do the paperwork, and I'll sign the title over to you or whoever's name you want to put it in."

Scott: "You should probably put it in the business name of Ace Services. That way you can use it for a tax write-off."

Jimmy: "Good thinking, Dad, yeah."

Tom finished the paperwork and signed over the title to Ace Services. Tom also got the safety triangles, fire extinguisher, and first-aid kit.

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky: "Thanks a lot, Tom! You'll probably see us again. See ya later."

Tom: "Here are the keys. Have a good day."

Scott: "Thanks, you too."

Scott drove and Jimmy rode in the Isuzu back to Monticello, but first, they put diesel in it. And Ricky took the pickup back. About 11:30 AM, Jimmy went down to the post office and mailed the letter. He also went to the sandwich sub shop in town and picked up three sandwiches for lunch. The post office said it would get to the DOT office on Tuesday. Scott assembled the pieces for he can use the spray gun that Ricky had bought to do the painting. Ricky and Jimmy taped the truck off with plastic and taped in the necessary spots, the wheels, cab, taillights, and reflectors. Scott then painted the truck bed and frame with the spray gun running off the trucks air tanks. Scott sent Ricky down to the hardware store to pick up some silver paint, and a couple paintbrushes, to trim out the wheels. They finished up about 5:00 PM.

Jimmy: "Wow! What a difference painting the bed and frame made."

Scott: "Yeah! The old truck doesn't look as old does it."

Ricky: "Now all we need is the vinyl stickers for the doors."

Scott: "Thanks for reminding us, Ricky. Go ahead and schedule an appointment for in two weeks at the sign shop in town for three trucks to get vinyl stickers put on. Make it for a Friday morning, we should have the DOT number by then, but go ahead and bring the logo that Jimmy made up to them to get started."

Ricky: "Okay, sounds like a plan. What about the box truck? Should we get extra five-foot stickers for each side of the box?"

Scott: "I didn't think of that, good idea, go ahead and do it."

Ricky: "Should we have two colors, red and black, for the ace of hearts, spades, and diamonds?"

Scott: "Yeah."

At 6:00 PM, supper was ready, and everyone was sitting around the table. Sondra had made pork tenderloins, fries, and corn.

Sondra: "Seems like you accomplished a lot today."

Jimmy: "Yeah, we bought a truck and painted a truck."

Scott: "We still have some hurdles to get through though."

Jason: "You have two trucks now, you only need one more, shouldn't have too much more to do."

Scott: "Well, we need business checks for payroll and bills, a business account opened. We also need fuel credit cards, maybe in a couple locations around Cedar Rapids and Marion, for each of the trucks. It wouldn't hurt to get a couple GPS's for the trucks. I do believe the boom truck has one. We need to place an ad in the paper for drivers. We need three part-time help. Jimmy and Ricky, you need to study that CDL manual. For you can take the test on Tuesday. It wouldn't hurt to get three or four clipboards that open up and has a compartment in the back to where you can store your paperwork, preferably metal, aluminum. Will need straps and rope for the trucks, half-inch rope, three 10-foot and two 20-foot, and six 2-inch ratchet straps. We all have Samsung phones, right?"

Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason: "Yep, yep, yeah."

Scott: "So we need to get a couple phone chargers to put in the trucks. Ricky, on Monday you can go to the courthouse and get plates for the new truck we got. Also, Ricky, you can pick up the GPS's, the strap clipboards, and phone chargers. While you're up in Cedar Rapids, travel a little bit around the north and south side and look for gas stations that have diesel pumps then apply for credit cards in the business name from the gas stations."

Ricky: "Okay, I'll see what I can do."

Jimmy: "Mom, can you start paperwork at the bank for the new account and checks? Also, if you could place the ad in the paper for two part-time drivers at \$18 an hour starting wage, CDL."

Sondra: "Okay, but you and Ricky will need to come in and sign."

Jimmy: "How is the loan paperwork coming along on the truck?"

Sondra: "It should be done Wednesday or Thursday next week, we pulled your credit and it's a 725, and your income's over \$50,000 a year, so you're looking good. You do want the loan under Ace Services, correct?"

Jimmy: "Yeah, okay, cool."

Jason: "Wow, that's good, a 725."

Sondra: "Ricky, we will need you to come in and sign as well when the paper work is done, since you guys are dual ownership."

Ricky: "Okay. What was my score?"

Sondra: "It was a 629, you're both fine for the loan. I'll have you come in to sign for the checks and loan at the same time Wednesday or Thursday next week."

Jimmy and Ricky: "Sounds good, okay."

Jimmy: "I'll transfer \$25,000 from my savings to the business account while I'm there. Then I need you to make out a check for \$65,000 payable to Roger Cummings from the bank from our business account or make a money order."

Sondra: "Okay."

After Sondra, Scott, and Jason were finished eating that night, they went to the living room and popped in

a movie to watch. Ricky and Jimmy went to their rooms and started studying the CDL manual. The next day came, it was Sunday. Scott, Sondra, and Jason were just lying around the house, while Jimmy and Ricky were studying the manual. Around lunchtime, everyone gathered around the table for dinner. They were having green beans, potatoes, gravy, and roast. But like any other Sunday, Scott always did a prayer for the family.

Scott: "Everyone ready, put your hands together. Dear God, thanks for the food and shelter you give us each and every day, please continue to look over our family and relatives, also look out for the poor, homeless, and sick in the world that they find happiness someday. Thanks for all the things that we take for granted that makes us happy in our life, Amen."

Sondra, Jimmy, Jason, and Ricky: "Amen."

Scott: "Jimmy and Ricky, how are you coming along on the CDL studying?"

Jimmy: "Not bad, I should be ready by Tuesday after noon."

Ricky: "I have about an hour left to read, and another hour to refresh the information that I learned."

Scott: "That's good, I hope you both pass. We're cutting it close on the time we have, both of you still have to practice driving with me. Plus you have to go down to the DMV and drive in order to get your license."

Jimmy: "If it's anything like the driver test on a car, I'll be fine."

Scott: "It's a little bit harder."

Ricky: "I think I'll do fine on both, the written and the driven."

Scott: "It doesn't always work out like you want sometimes if you're overconfident."

Ricky: "Yeah, you're right, we'll just have to see how it goes."

Sondra: "Go ahead, boys, finish up the food, grab seconds if you want."

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky took seconds. When they finished eating, everyone went to the living room to watch TV. Sondra stayed in the kitchen and cleaned up, then joined them in the living room to watch TV.

Scott: "I was just thinking, it probably wouldn't hurt to advertise your business in the phone book. And I was thinking, Ricky, when you go to the sign shop to get the decals made up, go ahead and add Jimmy's and Ricky's numbers under the logo."

Ricky: "I'll call the Yellow Pages on Monday to see how to go about it, whether we have to go in for an appointment or if we can do it over the computer. By the way, what ad size should I get?"

Scott: "We won't need one that big, they're expensive. Get one around two to three inches and you could use your business card for them to go by and then add both numbers."

Ricky: "I'll be busy tomorrow. I'll stop by the sign shop, after I come back from Cedar Rapids, for the appointment on Friday."

Scott: "Sounds good."

Jimmy: "I was thinking we will need receipt books probably for the household moving and requested deliveries that we do."

Scott: "Good idea. I wasn't even thinking of that, try to get something around 5" x 7". Get five of them, Ricky."

Ricky: "Okay."

It was getting late when they went to bed. The next day came. Scott and Jimmy left for work at the factory. Jason went to school, and Sondra went to work at the bank. Ricky called the phone company and had asked about placing an ad in their phone book. They set him up with an appointment to come in to design the ad. It was the next day at 8:30 AM. He then left for Cedar Rapids to go to the office supply store; once there, he asked for assistance from a fine-looking female, which just happened to greet him at the door.

Emma: "May I help you find anything?"

Ricky: "Sure, I'm looking for receipt books and metal clipboards."

Emma: "I'll show you, follow me, by the way my name is Emma. What's your name?"

Ricky: "Ricky, that's a nice name."

Emma: "Well, thank you, yours isn't half bad either."

Ricky and Emma had made it to the section of clipboards, then Emma looked and then bent over at the waist to pick one up from the bottom shelf.

Ricky: "Wow, that's nice."

Emma rapidly stood up and turned around.

Emma: "What's nice?"

Ricky (with the big smile, looking her in the eyes): "The clipboard, of course!"

Emma(giving a mysterious smile): "I thought you are looking at my ass."

Ricky: "Well, that's nice too, but I was talking about the clipboard."

Ricky grabbed five clipboards.

Emma: "Sure, okay. What else was that you said you needed?"

Ricky: "Some receipt books."

Emma: "Follow me."

They walked to the receipt book section. Once again, Ricky stared at her while she turned around and grabbed one of the receipt books off the shelf.

Emma: "Is this what you're looking for?"

Ricky: "Actually I'm looking for something close to a 5 x 7."

Emma turned around and bent over a little again then grabbed on a lower shelf a 5 x 7 receipt book.

Ricky (while he was staring at her ass again): "That's nice."

Emma: "Okay, I know you can't be talking about a receipt book."

Ricky: "Okay, I'm busted! It's just that I think you're cute and have a nice ass."

Emma: "Well, that something you'll never touch, I have a boyfriend, and I love him."

Ricky: "Shocks, you sure, I would treat you like a goddess."

Emma: "I'm sure! Do you need anything else?"

Ricky: "No, that should do it, thanks!"

Emma: "Well, have a good day, bye!"

Ricky: "You too!"

Ricky grabbed five receipt books; Ricky walked to the register to pay for the clipboards and all the receipt books. He headed out the store, and then he went to a truck parts and accessories store in Cedar Rapids off of Sixth Street southeast. He walked in and talked to a person at the counter named Bob.

Ricky: "Hi there!"

Bob: "May I help you?"

Ricky: "Yes, I'm looking for two-inch ratchet straps and some half-inch rope."

Bob: "Follow me!"

Ricky follows Bob to a corner in the store.

Bob: "We have two types, what are you using them for?" Ricky: "Were starting up a delivery business for Bernard's."

Bob: "I would recommend you getting the commercial ones. They are a little more expensive, but well worth it."

Ricky: "I'll take six of them!"

Bob: "And you need half-inch rope, correct? How many feet do you need?"

Ricky: "Yeah, 100 foot!"

Ricky followed Bob to the other corner of the store where the rope was at.

Bob: "This is a rope of 100 feet. Do you need anything else?"

Ricky: "No, that should do it!"

They both went back to the counter. Bob rang up the straps and rope.

Bob: "That'll be \$186.25!"

Ricky: "You mind if I use a debit card?"

Bob: "That's fine!"

Ricky swiped his card.

Bob: "Thanks, here's your receipt, and have a good day!"

Ricky: "You're welcome, you too!"

Ricky drove over by the Cedar Rapids South store. He saw a gas station on the main route named Stacy's. He pulled in, went inside, and asked the cashier if they had a fuel credit card. The cashier handed him an application. They had told him if he filled it out and sent it in, he would get the card or cards within two weeks, if he was approved.

Ricky then headed north on First Avenue, until he got to Nice Buy, the electronic store. He went inside and purchased two vehicle GPS's and five phone chargers. He then headed north to Marion and found a co-op just off the main path. He went inside and asked them about fuel cards. He filled out a form, which they had handed him. They said in a couple days, they would let him know if he's approved, and he would get the cards in the mail within a week.

Ricky then headed to Anamosa, Jones, County Courthouse, to get the plates for the box truck. While he was there, he took on the computer the written CDL test. He realized it was harder than he thought; he was sweating it, but he made it to the end of the test, and the screen popped up with a passing sign. He was so happy he had passed. They issued him his temporary license or driver's permit for class B CDL. He then headed back to Monticello to the sign shop and had talked to a guy named Blake; it was around three o'clock.

Ricky: "Hi, I'm looking to get some decals placed on my trucks. Can you do it?"

Blake: "I should be able to, let me see what you want."

Ricky handed Blake a business card that had the logo and phone numbers on it.

Blake: "What size do you need this?"

Ricky: "Well, the decals on the door should be about a foot and a half by foot and a half with the phone numbers underneath and of course the DOT numbers. I will also need to have two 5 foot by 5 foot with phone numbers on the sides of a box truck. We have three trucks to be done."

Blake: "Yeah, I can do it, it should be no problem, but it'll take a few days. When do you need it by?"

Ricky: "We're still waiting on the DOT numbers yet, so you can hold off on that until later when I call you. But we need it by the following Friday, not this week Friday."

Blake: "That shouldn't be a problem. It gives me a little time to make them up. And the DOT numbers I could make on that Friday. But have the trucks here at eight o'clock, that way I can finish that day."

Ricky: "Cool, that'll work. Have a good day, bye."

Blake: "You too."

Ricky headed home when Jimmy had left to do his written CDL test. It was around 3:30 PM. Ricky filled out that fuel application from Stacy's gas station, then ran it up to the post office. Jimmy made it back home around 4:30 PM. Jimmy had passed the test as well. The family ate at 5:30 PM, which they sat around, while Scott was lying on the couch. They started to discuss what happened that day at work or what Ricky had accomplished.

Jimmy: "So, Ricky, how did your day go? Did you get everything that we talked about?"

Ricky: "Well, let's see! Tell me if I'm missing anything. I got clipboards, receipt books, ratchet straps, rope, GPS's, and phone chargers. I also checked out a gas station on the south side, near the store, where I filled out the application and mailed it in. We should find out in a week. I filled out an application for fuel cards at the co-op in Marion also. I took and passed my CDL written test. I also went down to the sign shop and talked to Blake. He said it would be no problem by the following Friday. But he wants our trucks there at eight o'clock in the morning."

Scott: "Nice going, Ricky, good job. So, Ricky and Jimmy, how did you guys do on the test?"

Ricky: "I missed five questions. You were able to miss seven, so I was good."

Jimmy: "I got them all right."

Scott: "Nice."

Sondra: "While I was at work today, I placed an ad in the *Cedar Rapids Gazette* for Wednesday, I gave your number to call, Jimmy."

Scott: "Jimmy, go ahead and set up with the ones that applied to show up at our house on Friday at 4:00 PM. Also request that they bring a resume."

Jimmy: "Okay, sounds good."

Sondra: "When the bank was going over your loan papers today, they kind of cringed at the amount to be loaned. But they said, if they had the title and another cosigner, they can do it."

Scott: "Ricky, for tomorrow, I would like you to pick up some tools for each of the trucks."

Ricky: "What kind of tools do you want?"

Scott: "Well, let's see, you'll need three eights drive ratchet set that goes to three-quarter inch, a wrench set, that goes to three-quarter inch, some screwdrivers, regular and Philips pliers, cresset wrenches, a utility knife, and some tool bags to put them in. Also like you to pick up some medium-size notepads, pens. We will need to list the phone numbers of everyone in the notepads. I would like you to get on the computer and make up timesheets for we can use for the workers. That way they can log in their times each day they work. Get some Iowa maps, probably five or ten. Also get some for the metro area of Cedar Rapids."

Ricky: "Okay! How are you to think of all this?"

Scott: "I'm forty-six years old, I've been around, plus I think about it while I'm at work."

Ricky: "Oh."

They went to bed that night. Jimmy, Scott, and Sondra went to work in the morning, as well for Jason going to school. When Ricky got up, he went to the computer and looked up timesheets that he thought would work best for the business.

Then he printed a hundred time sheets. After that, he drove to Marion's Wally World, a massive chain of stores all over the United States that sold just about anything. He went to the automotive section of the store and picked up the necessary supplies for tools and the bags to put them in to equip three trucks, and then he looked for medium notebooks and pens.

Last but not least, he picked up some Iowa maps and some city maps of Cedar Rapids and the metro area. While Ricky was there, he decided to pick up some chips and dip, along with a twelve pack of beer.

Ricky made it back to the house by 11:00 AM. He was bored, which he wasn't for sure what he wanted to do. He was lying around on the couch, then he thought about Jimmy's dad Scott who had made a video recently for his website, which was twenty-one minutes and forty-five seconds long about how some of the music that we listen to, in reference to the second coming. He got off the couch and sat down at the computer with his chips, dip, and beer, and then he punched in www.ScottChally.com for his site. After he logged on the site, he then saw the video of "Does This Prove the Second Coming?" It was between 8 minutes, 25 seconds, and 11 minutes, 30 seconds, where he wondered when he watched the video to say whether it was possible or true.

It went as follows.

"All right, the next song is from 28 March 1981 and it's from Blondie and is called 'Rapture.' Okay, this song really don't relate to it very much at all. It just talks about rapture. The date of the rapture did hit, with what I read in the Bible and stuff. And what I figured out and don't say this is fact, this is something that I say is possible. And I believe it's meant to show the people when stuff is supposed to happen and if you want to know a timeline-type schedule. So this video came out in 1981. Now Moses walked the desert for forty years before he gave the Israelites the Ten Commandments that God had given him. So that's a sign saying forty years. And when you look at 1981, it will be 2021 when the rapture is gonna happen. The rapture is not necessarily bad, it's just the acceptance of all souls to heaven and everything to be joyous and great. So that is something that is good that we see. But like, I say. All right, 7 April 1985, USA for Africa, We Are the World. Um, we are the world; this is like when the Jacksons and this is like, I don't know, Kenny Rogers, Lionel Richie, and all the famous singers from back in the '80s. They got together and did this song, We Are the World. I believe in 1985 is when they came out with it. April 7, which is probably Easter, which I didn't look this one up. Oh, it does say Easter, my bad. Um, and when I say We Are the World, forty years once again. That'll be 2025, we will be all together as one. So that's another possible fictional, but let's see what comes out: 1987 R.E.M, REM, it's the End of the World as We Know It. All right, 1987, forty years, 2027, everything should be changed, If it's not, I'm afraid we won't be here to relay. But trust me, it's going to be happiness, it's gonna be great."

Ricky had watched a few other videos from Scott. Then he listened to some music on YouTube. It was now after three o'clock, and Scott and Jimmy had come home from work.

Ricky: "How was your day, guys?"

Jimmy: "Not too bad, three days left, and then I'm done with the factory. I'm using my last two personal days to finish out my two weeks."

Scott: "Okay, did you get anything done today? It looks like you're drinking a beer."

Ricky: "Of course, I purchased the tools and tool bags that you told me to get, along with medium-size notepads and pens. I found and printed a hundred timesheets like you asked."

Scott: "Did you write the phone numbers in the notebooks?"

Ricky: "Ahh, I forgot. I knew there was something I was forgetting."

Jimmy: "That's no problem, I can do it."

Ricky: "Thanks, Jimmy!"

Scott: "Now, Ricky, we were supposed to drive tonight. How can we do it when you're drinking?"

Ricky: "You're right; I don't know what I was thinking. I have only had a few beers since one o'clock though. I think I'm all right, I should be fine."

Scott: "If you think you're good, we can go. We will let Jimmy go first."

Ricky: "No, I think I got this, I can go first. It can't be much worse than driving a car."

Scott: "Okay, if you insist. We can go; I'll even let you go first."

Scott, Ricky, and Jimmy got up in the truck that was parked on the side street. Ricky started the engine and asked for a few pointers from Scott.

Ricky: "So how's this gear pattern on the shifter?"

Scott: "It's a six speed, first gear is up and left, second is down and left, third gear is up in middle, fourth gear is down in middle, fifth gear is up and right, and sixth gear is down and right. If you want to put it in reverse, push right middle, then down, it'll feel a little springy but that's reverse. Practice it a few times to go through the gears."

Ricky: "Seems easy so far!"

Scott: "How are the mirrors, can you see okay?"

Ricky: "Could you turn your mirror in a little?"

Scott turned the mirror in a little until Ricky said it was good.

Scott: "Well, anytime you're ready, we can go."

Ricky: "Okay!"

Ricky pressed the clutch down and put the truck in first gear and pulled out away from the curb. As he was shifting into second, he heard a loud grinding of the gears, and it's like he couldn't get it in gear.

Scott: "Are you pressing the clutch in or all the way down?"

Ricky: "You didn't tell me that! I may not have been pushing the clutch all the way down."

Ricky made another attempt after stopping to take off and shift from first gear to second gear. This time he heard just a little bit of a grinding noise, but he was successful to get it in gear. And Ricky went to shift into third gear, with a little grinding, but the attempt was good.

Scott: "Go to the stop sign and take a right."

Ricky pulled up to the intersection, but instead of hitting the breaks, he pushed in the clutch. Then he went to push on the break where he rolled to a stop a quarter of the way into the intersection.

He then turned right after putting it in gear. He began to shift to second and then to third with a little grinding of the gears. He pulled up to the next intersection.

Scott: "Make sure you press the break this time and go a little to the right. Also, I want you to take a right."

Ricky: "Okay!"

As Ricky pulled up, he stopped before the stop sign this time. Then he went to take off; he took a sharp right. The rear end of the truck went up over the curb and wiped out a street sign. The rear tires knocked it down, then drove over it. He went to stop on the street.

Jimmy: "Don't stop, keep going, there's nobody around."

Scott: "You don't want to lose your privilege to drive before you get your license, do you?"

Ricky: "No, but this is my first time driving a stick shift."

Ricky shifted the truck through the gears, doing better each time he shifted. Only a little grinding this time as he pulled up to the intersection of a stoplight. The light turned green, and he went to take off. The truck moved forward a little then stalled. He started up the truck again, but stalled it in the middle of the intersection this time. By now the cars behind him were getting antsy. They started to blow their horns. Then he noticed the light turned red again.

Scott: "I think you're in third gear, Ricky."

Ricky realized what happened and made the attempt again. Now the cars from the left and right were trying to get through the intersection, which they honked their horns. Ricky pulled out of the intersection and shifted through the gears with little grinding. Then he was about 300 or 400 meters down the road when he noticed in his rearview mirror a city police flipping its lights on. Scott and Jimmy also saw it and mentioned he should pull over. So Ricky went to pull over and then he hit the curb and went over it and came back off with his front right tire. Ricky then realized he had been drinking beer and this could be really bad. But he noticed the officer had gone by. He realized then he was safe.

Scott: "Boy, you were lucky!"

Ricky: "I think I'm done driving for today. Jimmy, you can take over."

Jimmy: "I don't blame you, sure, let's hope I don't have the same problems."

Ricky and Jimmy switched spots. Jimmy pulled away from the curb and shifted through three of the gears

without a problem.

Scott: "Nice, it shows that you have driven a stick shift."

Jimmy: "Yeah, my Miata is a stick. Thanks!"

Jimmy pulled up to a stop sign and proceeded to take a right, giving plenty of room to make the corner. Jimmy caught on quick driving the truck.

Scott: "Okay, I think you're ready for the next step. Go ahead and drive to the school parking lot."

Jimmy drove to the high school parking lot.

Jimmy: "Now what?"

Scott: "I would like you to try backing up into one of these parking spots."

Jimmy pulled up so he could back up. Then he made the attempt by the time he pulled into the spot, between the lines. He ended up taking up one and a half spaces.

Scott: "Not too bad, maybe in a few tries you will get the truck between the lines."

After a few tries, Jimmy was doing very well. He could park between the lines without a problem. Then Scott told Jimmy to try to use the hoist on the truck. Jimmy and Ricky saw how it was done by Scott, then Jimmy made the attempt which Ricky thought this was simple. It was by just engaging the hoist lever while the clutch was pressed in. Scott told Jimmy that he thought he was good for the test; Jimmy had agreed. They were going to take the driving test on Tuesday the following week. Ricky needed a lot of work on his driving. The following days prior to the test, Scott would take Ricky out driving to improve his skills and give him pointers for what to look out for.

Thursday came when Sondra texted Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky to meet her down at the bank at 3:30 PM to sign the papers on the loan, then they did. Scott cosigned and Jimmy and Ricky signed the papers for the \$50,000 loan. They were happy that the loan went through. With Jimmy's funds from his checking account and the \$50,000 loan, he had a \$65,000 check made out to Roger Cummings.

The next day came and after work, Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky went up to the Bernard store to meet with Roger. They saw the boom truck pulled in to the yard. A gentleman got out of the truck when Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky had walked up to.

Scott: "Are you Roger?"

Roger: "Ain't you a fine-looking one, yes. Are you here for the boom truck?"

Scott: "Yeah."

Roger: "Well, that's great; you say you have a check for me for \$65,000."

Jimmy: "I have it right here."

Jimmy began to hand the check over.

Roger: "Whoa, not so fast. I'm not sure if I want to sell the truck anymore."

Scott: "What you mean? We have the check. You give us the truck with title and we're good."

Roger: "I tell you what, what's your name?"

Roger looked at Scott.

Scott: "Scott!"

Roger: "Well, Scott, I would like to take you out. Treat you tonight to a special place that I hang out at. Then if everything goes well and I have a good time, tomorrow I'll sign over the truck."

Scott: "Oh no, it's okay!"

Roger: "Do you want the truck or not?"

Jimmy: "Sure we do, come on, Dad, you can do it."

Ricky: "Come on, Mr. Chally, take one for the team."

Scott: "What are the conditions? I won't sleep with you!"

Roger: "Of course not, just have a good time with me."

Scott: "If I go out with you, you say tomorrow, if everything goes well, you will sell the truck for \$65,000 and sign over the title?"

Roger: "Yup, of course, yes, you delicious piece of fried chicken."

Scott: "Okay, I'll do it!"

Roger: "Sweet, okay, Scotty, how about eight I pick you up at your place. What's your address?"

Scott: "That's fine!"

Scott gave Roger his address.

Roger: "Consider it a date. Try to wear a polo shirt and slacks."

Scott: "Okay, I'll see you then!"

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky headed back to the house. A little later that night, Scott got ready. He wore blue polo shirt, black slacks, and casual dress shoes. It was eight o'clock sharp when Scott noticed out the window a gold Lexus pulled up. Roger got out of the car, went to the door, and knocked. Scott opened the door and welcomed Roger in.

Roger: "Haaay, you ready, Scott? You look gorgeous! I like the polo shirt and slacks."

Sondra: "So I take it your name is Roger from what Scott was telling me. And he said you two are going to hang out with the guys."

Roger: "Oh yes, I got a special place to hang out with the guys."

Sondra: “Well, sounds like fun, Roger, keep an eye on Scott, make sure he doesn’t fool around with anyone.”

Roger: “Well, if there’s any fooling around, it’ll be me, I assure you. I’ll keep your husband close to me.”

Sondra: “Well, honey, give me a kiss and have a great evening, try to enjoy yourself.”

Scott leaned over and gave Sondra a kiss. Then Scott and Roger were heading out the door.

Roger: “TOOTALOO!”

Scott: “Don’t wait up on me, sweetie, it’ll probably be late.”

Sondra: “Okay, have fun anyway!”

Scott: “I’ll try, bye!”

Scott got in the Lexus with Roger, then they headed out.

Scott: “So where are we headed tonight, Roger?”

Roger: “I have a special place that I hang out at all the time. It’s a club called the Pink Flamingo. I think you’ll really like it. I’m so excited, we’re going to have such a great night tonight.”

Scott: “Yeah, I feel up to it, we should have fun. But you need to keep your hands to yourself.”

Roger: “No problem, I’ll try, it’ll be hard, plus, you are so irresistible.”

Scott: “What town is the Pink Flamingo in? It doesn’t ring a bell to me.”

Roger: “It a great place, located in Iowa City.”

Scott: “That’s over an hour drive!”

Roger: “Well, I’m hoping we can get to know each other a little better in that short amount of time.”

Scott and Roger communicated on the ride up there. They arrived at the club. They walked in and sat down at a table, as Scott began to look around.

Scott: “I noticed there aren’t any women in this club.”

Roger: “That’s because it’s a gay gentleman’s bar. So what’s your poison you drinking tonight?”

Scott: “It doesn’t matter. You surprise me.”

Roger: “Ooho, I like that in my men. Okay, I’ll be right back with some drinks.”

Roger went to the bar and ordered two drinks, one Jägerbomb and Bacardi and Coke. He returned to the table with the two drinks and passed the Jägerbomb to Scott and then did a toast.

Roger: “Here’s to a great night, let us be best buddies.”

Scott: "Same, let us be friends!"

They put the two drinks together and did cheers. Then Scott took a drink as well as Roger.

Scott: "Wow, this drink is good. What is it?"

Roger: "It's a Jägerbomb."

Scott: "You're going to have to excuse me, I don't drink much, but I like to drink. Is it very strong?"

Roger: "No, your drink is not as strong as mine."

Scott: "Ahh, what are you drinking?"

Roger: "I'm drinking Bacardi and Coke, would you like a sip?"

Scott: "No, that's okay I've had Bacardi Coke before. It's strong, but good."

As they were talking, a gentleman walked up to the table.

Tommy: "Roger, who's this fine piece of meat you have here tonight?"

Roger: "This is Scott. We're on a date tonight. Scott, this is Tommy."

Tommy: "Are you willing to share him with me tonight?"

Roger: "Nooo, but later maybe you can do a little dancing with us."

Tommy: "That's fair, we can do that."

Roger: "Now, Tommy, don't you have someplace to go?"

Tommy: "Aren't you rude? I suppose you're right, I'll leave you two lovebirds alone. See you later, Scott, TOOTALOO."

Scott: "You too, Tommy, see you around."

Roger: "You're barely sipping your drink. I'm buying, sweetness, so don't worry about the cost. I will go up and get another drink for us. Would you like the same?"

Scott: "I suppose!"

Roger went to the bar and asked for two of the same drinks again. But this time he told the bartender to hold on the Bacardi, just Coke for his glass. He returned back to the table with the drinks. Scott had just finished his first and took a couple sips out of the second drink.

Roger: "What would you say, big guy, about dancing with me?"

Scott: "Maybe a little later, not now."

Roger: "Remember I need to have a good time with you."

Scott: "I suppose just one dance is okay, for now."

There was a slow dance that just started to play. Scott and Roger went to the dance floor. Roger and Scott both had their hands around each other's waist. They looked awkward, with the large space between them. Then suddenly Roger slipped his hand down to Scott's butt and began to squeeze.

Scott: "Hold on there, not my ass."

He reached and removed his hand and placed it back on his waist.

Roger: "Come onnn, don't be a stickler, loosen up, Scott."

Scott: "I said no funny stuff."

Roger: "Oookayyy, let's return to our seats then."

They returned to their seats. For the next two hours, Roger bought seven to nine drinks for each of them. They were talking about different things, about life and the delivery business at Bernard's. Roger was only drinking Coke though—which Scott didn't realize.

Roger: "Scott, would you like to go for another dance again?"

Scott: "Sure, that sounds great. Let's go and dance, but I got to tell you, I'm feeling a little tipsy."

Roger and Scott went to the dance floor. Scott was beginning to black out. There was a slow dance playing again. This time Scott was a little closer to Roger while they danced. Then Roger moved his hands down to his butt cheeks and started to squeeze on them. Scott didn't seem to mind it this time.

Scott: "You sure are a nice guy, I feel so loved."

Roger: "Your butt cheeks feel so tight. You must work out a lot."

Scott then reached to squeeze Roger's butt cheeks.

Scott: "Yours ain't half bad either."

Then out of the blue, Tommy showed up behind Scott. He did a little bump and grind. Then he put his arms around his chest and belly area and squeezed with his head resting on his shoulder. Scott then rested his head on Roger's shoulder.

Tommy: "You mind if I hang out with you the rest of the night, Roger?"

Roger: "Come on, Tommy, you know better, you know I don't share."

Tommy: "Ohooo, the cum part sounds pretty good."

Roger: "I think you're done now, Tommy, you can leave."

Tommy then let go of Scott and left the dance floor. Roger and Scott finished the dance and headed back to their seats. By this time, Scott could barely walk and was seeing double.

Scott: "I think I've had enough, I'm feeling a little sick from all the alcohol I drank."

Roger: "That's fine! I had a great time tonight, Scott. I'll drive you home now."

Roger and Scott left the club, got in the car, and headed back home. Scott passed out in the seat during the ride. Roger pulled up to Scott's house and helped Scott to the door.

Roger: "I have one more request, Scott."

Scott: "What's . . . thattt?"

Roger: "One kiss like we did earlier tonight."

Scott: "I don't know . . . know . . . about . . . tha—"

Before Scott could say anything else, Roger grabbed Scott with both hands by the head and pressed his lips against his and gave a long kiss.

Roger: "Now I'm satisfied. Thanks for the great night."

Scott: "Okayyy . . . No problem . . . It . . . was . . . fun."

Scott made it in the house, got in bed with his wife, and fell asleep. The next morning came, he woke up about ten o'clock with a killing headache. He went to the medicine cabinet in the bathroom and grabbed three aspirin. As he's looking in the mirror, he noticed there's a huge hickey on the side of his neck. He immediately panicked. He's talking to himself saying, *Oh no, what do I do?* He took a shower then tried to cover the hickey with his wife's makeup. Then he went to the kitchen to make some breakfast. His wife was sitting at the table, reading the newspaper. Ricky and Jimmy were in the living room watching TV.

Sondra: "So, honey, how was your night?"

Scott: "Okay, I guess!"

Sondra: "You were pretty wasted last night."

Scott: "Yeah, I can feel it now."

Scott tried hard to hide the side of his the neck where the hickey was at.

Sondra: "What's wrong with your neck? It's like you can't straighten it out. You keep looking away from me. Is there something wrong?"

Sondra got up from the table and walked over to Scott. She noticed makeup on his neck. She licked her fingers and rubbed the spot. She noticed a huge hickey on the left side of his neck.

Sondra: "Oh my god, I can't believe it, you cheated on me!"

Scott: "Honestly, I didn't, I'm sorry, honey, and it must be a bruise."

Sondra: "We've been married over twenty-five years and now you cheat on me?"

Scott: "It's not what you think!"

Sondra: "What am I supposed to think when you come home with a hickey?"

From the other room, Jimmy spoke up.

Jimmy: "Mom, Dad was out with a gay guy last night."

Sondra: "So now you're gay, did you sleep with him?"

Scott: "Of course not, it's just that he liquored me up and I was unsure what I was doing."

Sondra laughed and laughed.

Sondra: "Just wait until I tell my friends about this. They're going to have a chuckle."

Scott: "Please, honey, don't do that!"

Sondra: "Oh no, you did it to yourself. You got the hickey and I got my right to tell."

Sondra laughed again.

Scott ate his breakfast; Sandra kept making gestures about the situation. After lunch, Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky headed to Bernard's with the check. They arrived at Bernard's and walked in the front door, headed to the materials counter, and met Roger who was talking to Gus.

Scott: "Hello there, Gus and Roger. How's it going?"

Gus: "How are you coming along with everything?"

Ricky: "Well, we're about to purchase our last truck that we need from Roger."

Gus: "Will you be ready by the following Monday?"

Jimmy: "We should be, we just need to receive our DOT numbers in the mail, along with getting the decals on the trucks, then me and Ricky need to pass the driving test at the DMV."

Ricky and Jimmy asked Roger if he's okay with the purchase.

Roger: "Ohh yess, I couldn't be more satisfied. How do you feel today, Scott? Did you have a great time last night?"

Scott: "I know for one thing, I drank way too much last night. Everything is kind of a blur. But yes, I had a great time."

Roger: "Maybe you might consider going out again, to just hang out."

Scott: "I tell you what, I'll think about it, consider it a rain check."

Roger: "Ohooo, you got me so excited, I'll be waiting to hear back from you."

Jimmy handed over the certified check to Roger for \$65,000.

Jimmy: "Now you have it. Do you have the title to sign over?"

Roger: "Yes, I have it in my clipboard. What name are we putting on in?"

He got the title out.

Jimmy: "We're going to put it under Ace Services."

Roger, Jimmy, and Ricky signed the title and filled out the necessary information needed.

Roger: "I was wondering if I'm able to use the truck until the following Monday?"

Scott: "We're going to need the truck this coming Thursday night. Is that all right, Gus?"

Gus: "That shouldn't be a problem, we will just have to clear boom deliveries until the following Monday, or later."

Roger: "That'll work. Thanks!"

Gus: "By the way, Scott, I take it you're gay, like Roger!"

Scott: "No, happily married with two kids. Roger is just a friend."

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky left Bernard's and headed back home. Over the next two days, Ricky practiced driving with Scott. Jimmy and Sondra were receiving calls about the job they listed in the paper. They scheduled all the calls that came in for Thursday at one o'clock at Scott and Sondra's address.

Tuesday was the big day for Jimmy and Ricky to do the driving test at the DMV. Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky took the red-and-black flatbed truck to the DMV to get tested. They arrived at about ten o'clock in the morning. They got a ticket to be called on. When the number was called, they went to the counter to answer whatever necessary questions. They were then told to go back to their seats and wait until their name was called. Jimmy was up first, and it was a female tester, who looked like a guy with short brown hair, about fifty pounds overweight, with acne on her face.

Jimmy: "Hi there. My name is Jimmy, or you can just call me Jim."

Officer Williams: "I realize what your name is, it's written on the paper. You'll show me where your truck is, and then we will get in your truck and take your driving CDL test."

Jimmy: "Okay, it's a nice day out, isn't it?"

Officer Williams: "What's so nice about it?"

Jimmy: "Well, maybe it's just an okay day. Do you have a first name that I may call you?"

Officer Williams: "No, just call me Officer Williams."

Jimmy: "Okay, here's the truck."

As they got up in the truck, Jimmy then started it.

Officer Williams: "I didn't tell you to start the truck yet."

Jimmy turned the truck off.

Officer Williams: "I'll tell you like this. You will get scored on multiple tasks of your driving test. If your score is not a passing score, you will have to do your driving test again at a later date."

Jimmy: "Okay."

Officer Williams: "You can start the truck now. Proceed forward and take a left."

Jimmy started the truck, put it in gear, cleared his path of vision in the mirror, and proceeded to pull forward. He put his turn signal on, stopped at the stop sign before the white line, then looked left and right and was clear of traffic and began to pull out to take a left.

Officer Williams: "I will have to dock you a few points for not putting your turn signal on and not stopping before the stop sign."

Jimmy: "What? But I did that perfectly."

Officer Williams: "Don't argue with me. I can stop the test right now and we can head back to the DMV."

Jimmy: "Maybe I was wrong, you're right."

Officer Williams: "Now you can go straight and take a right at the stop sign."

Jimmy proceeded and did it flawlessly.

Officer Williams: "Go to the stoplight and hang a left onto Sixteenth Ave."

Jimmy approached the stoplight; it turned red. He got in his left lane and stopped before the line. The light then turned green. He waited for the oncoming traffic to pass. There was a car about 400 to 500 feet down the road, so he made a left turn.

Officer Williams: "You should have waited until the traffic had passed. I'll have to dock you again."

Jimmy was driving along doing the speed limit.

Officer Williams: "You're speeding! I'll have to dock you again. Okay, I want you to head back to the DMV."

Jimmy: "Did I fail?"

Officer Williams: "Not yet, but if you miss two more points, you will."

Jimmy drove flawlessly back to the DMV.

Officer Williams: "You have one more test left. You have to back the truck up to that line over there within two foot without going past the white line. Every foot you're off is a point."

Jimmy was starting to really sweat now. He drove the truck to the line where he had to back up. He

backed up where he thought he was good. Then they both got out of the truck and walked to the rear of it to see how he did. Jimmy was within a foot of the line without going over.

Officer Williams: "Well, I guess I'll have to dock you again."

Jimmy: "When's the next time I can take the test?"

He looked discouraged.

Officer Williams: "I'll tell you what, I'll let you go. You barely pass the test."

Officer Williams then handed Jimmy the driver's score sheet.

Jimmy: "I'm so happy, thank you! I could hug and kiss you."

Officer Williams put her arms out as if she wanted a hug.

Then Jimmy was thinking, *What did I just say?* as he put his arms around her and gave her a hug and kiss on the cheek. He then went back into the DMV station to get his CDL license. He saw Ricky sitting and then walked up to him.

Jimmy: "She's a tough one, Ricky, be careful."

Ricky: "Did you pass?"

Jimmy: "Yes, but barely."

It was now Ricky's turn. He was nervous knowing that he doesn't have a chance of passing. He wondered if his charm could get him out of this mess.

Officer Williams: "Is there a Ricky LongJohn?"

Ricky: "Yes, that's me!"

He raised his hand.

Ricky then walked up to Officer Williams.

Ricky: "Wow, ain't you a cute one!"

You could tell by what Ricky had said that Officer Williams was melting. Her eyes opened up, and she began to smile with a certain glow to her.

Officer Williams: "How are you doing today?"

Ricky: "Great now, since I'm here with you. Do you have a first name?"

Officer Williams: "You can call me Laverta."

Ricky: "Okay, Laverta, what a nice name. I never heard it before."

Laverta and Ricky walked out of the DMV to the truck and got in. Ricky waited for instructions and

started the truck.

Officer Williams: "I would like you to go to the stop sign and hang a left."

She said this with a big smile on her face.

Ricky: "Okay, you gorgeous honey sickle!"

What Ricky said: "Really excited, Officer Williams!"

As Ricky was stopped, he looked over at Laverta and began to pull out into the intersection. The traffic from the right and left had precedents. Then he noticed at the last second, there was a white Explorer coming from the right speeding. He immediately swerved to the left and clipped a parked car in the front end. Ricky then stopped and looked over at Laverta.

Ricky: "Well, I suppose I failed, that didn't last long. I'm sorry."

Officer Williams: "Well, Ricky, let's pretend I didn't see that, go ahead and continue."

Ricky: "But I just hit a car!"

Officer Williams: "I didn't see it, and there's no one around, so you're good."

Ricky was thinking, *Wow, this is great.*

Officer Williams: "So do you live around here?"

Ricky: "No, I live in Monticello."

Officer Williams: "Ahh, the town of the Great Jones County Fair. When you come upon the next stop sign, hang a right."

Ricky proceeded forward until he got to the stop sign. Ricky stopped about ten feet past the white line. Then he took a right without his turn signal on.

Ricky: "So how am I doing so far?"

Officer Williams: "Good, you haven't missed any points."

Ricky: "I sure like you; you're a very nice lady."

Laverta was just gazing over at Ricky, imagining what it would be like to have him as a boyfriend.

Officer Williams: "At the next stoplight, Sixteenth Ave., take a left."

Ricky: "Okay!"

Ricky was just driving along, thinking about what to say next to butter up Laverta. He completely forgot about the intersection. The light turned red. Ricky went through the red light, and cars from the left and right slammed on their brakes, barely missing the flatbed truck. Ricky once again looked over at Laverta, with a sign of discuss.

Ricky: "I failed, didn't I?"

Officer Williams: "Nonsense, that wasn't your fault. We were talking, that's what happened. Don't worry about it, you're good. Nobody got hurt. Okay, we should take the next left, for we can get back on track."

Ricky went to take the next left. He forgot to signal and hit the brakes fairly hard. The cars behind him slammed on their brakes and almost hit the rear of the truck.

Ricky: "Am I doing okay, Laverta, or do you think I am going to fail this driving test?"

Officer Williams: "Nonsense, my sunshine, I won't let you fail! You can go ahead and take the next left. Get onto Sixteenth Ave. then back on Edgewood, to go back to the DMV. We will see how your backing-up skills are. When you get back to the DMV parking lot, I would like you to pass the line that I point out to you twenty to thirteen feet. Then I would like you to back the truck up as close as you can within two feet without passing the line. If you can do this, I'm yours forever, sunshine."

Ricky had just one more test to do and that was to back the truck up within two feet from the line on the pavement. He pulled up past the line. Then he proceeded to go backward. He knew he had to do something to lose the interest of Officer Williams liking him. So he deliberately drove about five feet past the line. Ricky and Officer Williams had gotten out of the truck to look.

Ricky: "Well, it looks like I went past the line. It doesn't look like we're meant to be together."

Officer Williams: "It looks close to me! It looks like we're meant for one another!"

Officer Williams handed Ricky the score sheet for the CDL test that he just took.

Officer Williams: "Looks like you got a perfect score on your driving. How about me and you go on a date Friday night at McNasty's a local dance club?"

Ricky: "I'm not sure if I should do that, Laverta."

Officer Williams: "Why is that?"

Ricky: "Because I'm in a relationship with a girl back home."

Officer Williams: "Why didn't you tell me that before?"

Ricky: "Because I really like you, Laverta. But I tell you what, if me and my girlfriend shall happen to break up, you will be on top of the list for my next girlfriend."

Officer Williams then looked discouraged and upset. Her hopes were so high for Ricky, but she figured there was still a chance.

Officer Williams: "What if I give you my phone number? You can call me if you two break up."

Ricky: "Sure!"

Officer Williams wrote her phone number down on a piece of paper and handed it to Ricky.

Officer Williams: "May I get your number too, my soon-to-be sunshine?"

Ricky: "Sure, my rose blossom!"

Officer Williams: "I'll give you a call in like two months to find out how you're doing."

Ricky: "Okay, that sounds great, thanks once again, Laverta. Have a good day."

Ricky went inside the DMV. He saw Jimmy and Scott waiting in the lobby.

Jimmy: "She failed you, didn't she?"

Ricky: "No, I got a perfect score."

Ricky held up the paper to him.

Jimmy was amazed; he wondered how that happened. When he took the test, he just about failed. And then Ricky went to the counter to get his CDL driver's license. The three of them got in the truck and headed home. The next day, Ricky realized that one truck was red, and the red aces going on the doors won't stand out. He made a call to Blake at the sign shop.

Ricky: "Hello, is Blake there?"

Blake: "This is Blake!"

Ricky: "Yes, this is Ricky! I talked to you about a week ago on the decals for our business Ace Services."

Blake: "Yes, I'm just about done with them."

Ricky: "Well, there's a change on one truck of the decals. There's two of the foot and a half by foot and a half decals that go on the door that will have to be made with white and black aces.

Blake: "That shouldn't be a problem, I can still do that, but I will have to charge you for the other ones.

Ricky: "That'll work, thanks!"

Blake: "Friday morning is still a go, isn't it?"

Ricky: "Yep, the trucks will be there at eight o'clock or before."

Blake: "Great, did you by chance get the DOT numbers in yet?"

Ricky: "Not yet, but they're probably in the mail."

Blake: "Okay, see you then."

The rest of Wednesday and Thursday morning went by, and Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky were lying around the house. The mail came at 10:00 AM, and sure enough, the DOT numbers were in the mail, along with the paperwork allowing Ace Services to operate. Ricky called Blake up at the sign shop. He let Blake know what the DOT numbers were. It was about 4:00 PM when the individuals that had called for the job started showing up. As they came to the door, they were greeted and told to take a seat in the living room. There were six people to interview for the job. They only needed three for the job.

Scott: "Welcome, I'm glad you all showed up and are interested in the job that we have to offer. We will

only need three slots filled. I would like to start out and say my name is Scott. That is Jimmy, my son, and Ricky. Ricky and Jimmy are the owners of this delivery business. I'm just here to help them out. But I would like to start with collecting your resumes for the job. If you do not have a resume, you may leave at this time."

Two people stood up and headed toward the door. Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky looked over the resumes. They were all impressed. Two had a class-A CDL, and the other two had a class-B CDL. They have all done deliveries of some sort in the past.

Scott: "We are only looking for three individuals to run between thirty and forty hours a week on average. If you would like to do more than that, you can let us know at this time. We will keep you in mind to allow you to get more hours."

They all put their hands up and were speaking that they wouldn't mind extra time to work.

Scott: "Couple things that you may consider leaving today. The ones that work for us will have to be able to lift up to 130 pounds. That is to deliver drywall. We don't pay more money for overtime. It would be a straight \$18 an hour for the hours you run. We are a new business, and maybe for the future, we may offer overtime. We also are going to look into getting health insurance for each individual. We will only pay half the cost. We will offer ten paid holidays a year. And you will start out with one-week paid vacation for the first year. The second through fifth year, there will be ten days' paid vacation. I would like the four of you to stand up individually to say your name."

They stood up and announced their name.

Joe: "My name is Joe Shears!"

Jermaine: "My name is Jermaine Jackson!"

Dan: "My name is Dan Bennit!"

Glenn: "And my name is Glenn Vosburg!"

Scott: "Do any of you have questions so far?"

Glenn: "What about pay raises, will there be any?"

Jimmy: "We will look into the performance of each person individually. For pay raises, so yes, there will be."

Then there's a knock on the door. There was another person showing up for the job interview. The individual was about ten minutes late. Scott answered the door.

The individual: "I'm here for the job interview."

Scott: "I'm sorry, sir, if you can't make the time when it's scheduled, you're not meant for the job. Well, I guess you four are qualified. We will have to come up with a method to eliminate one. We could either pick names out of a hat or find out who has the smallest penis."

At that time, when Scott said that, Jermaine stood up and dropped his pants.

Jermaine: "How's that for size?"

Scott: "I didn't think anyone would do it, I was just kidding about the penis size. I'll tell you what. You

can all work for us. But you will need cell phones to make calls.”

There was a sigh of relief that filled the room. They were all happy that they had made the job. They hung out and visited with Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky and also with the other individuals that were hired. Jimmy and Ricky worked out a schedule, which would work best for the individuals. Then Ricky gave the new workers their phone numbers and also received theirs. Ricky got the shirt, sweater, and jacket sizes from Joe, Jermaine, Dan, and Glen. He let them know that the shirts, sweaters, and jackets would take about a week to get. The new workers who were hired had left about an hour to hour and a half later knowing their time schedule for the week. It was then after 6:00 PM and they needed to pick up the boom truck from Bernard’s to have it ready in the morning for the decals to be put on. Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky rode in Scott’s Ford F150 to go to Bernard’s. It was about a forty-five-minute drive to get there.

Ricky: “Mr. Chally, do you mind me asking you how everything started with your episode that you talk about from time to time?”

Scott: “Sure, no problem. I’ll start from the beginning. It was March 5, 2006, I was going through some stressful times, with bills and other miscellaneous things. For some reason, I seen the Bible sitting on my desk. So I decided to ask God a few questions. Every question I asked, when I open the Bible, the Bible answered my questions like it was talking back to me. Then somehow I had this idea how I could change the world. So I started the new world policy on leadership, how it should be run!”

Ricky: “Interesting, did you ever complete the new world policy?”

Scott: “It wasn’t completed until a later date. But I can tell you a little about it. It was about leadership to look out for the people. It was based on a three-strike system for all leadership positions.”

Ricky: “How would that benefit the people?”

Scott: “Well, for instance, if a first-line leader would pose judgment toward an individual because of their race, or not be fair in adjusting duties for all people equally the same, they would receive a strike if reported and found at fault. That is carried out with possible discipline from Ace Services. If they received three strikes within three years, they would have to be removed from that position. But of course, it would hit the whole command from first-line leader to the president or CEO of the company or with whatever affiliate they are established with. Whether it is the military, factories, policemen, government leaders, grocery stores, or even online businesses, any leadership position to the CEO or top level of that affiliation would be affected.”

Ricky: “I see the first-line leader is affected, but if you took three strikes from each leader in the whole chain of command, so they all would be replaced.”

Scott: “No, you see for each level of command, there’ll be three points added. So if you got a first-line leader, there’s three points. The second-line leader would have three points for each first-line leader that is under them +3 points for him. So for example, let’s say the second-line leader has three first-line leaders, so the second-line leader would have a total of 12 points to lose in three years.”

Ricky: “So if they lose their points, when would they get the points back?”

Scott: “It would be when investigated by Ace Services, the date they deemed the leader to be at fault. It would then be three years to where it will stay on the leader’s record before the point comes off.”

Jimmy: “That’s pretty good. There’s a lot of unjust leadership out there. That will make a better work environment for the people.”

Scott: “Also depending on the seriousness of the situation or fault, a company may have or they could

lose more than just one point. They could lose up to half of the points granted by the Ace Services. A business or company could be shut down for duration of time.”

Ricky: “Interesting! Tell me a little about Ace Services.”

Scott: “There are three aces of Ace Services, which will control everything for the people. There is an Ace of Hearts, which will take care of the medical side. There will be an Ace of Spades that will control the leadership, for the people and how factories, businesses shall run. Last, but not least, an Ace of Diamonds to control the expense or finance of the one nation of the world, for the people.”

Ricky: “And all this just came to you?”

Scott: “It’s like I had spirits helping me out. And I also had visions to help me along the way. As time went on, I was reading and studying more of the Bible. It’s like I couldn’t put it down. It was talking in terms of today, not two thousand years ago. I figured out a combination of mathematical figure from the Bible that determine the boss date or the date when the Messiah is supposed to come. I figured the calculations out on a calculator. The first two times I figured the calculations out on the calculator, the calculators broke on me. It’s like the display screen that shows the numbers were scrambled after it showed the boss date. So the calculators quit working after words. The weird thing about it was, when I did the mathematical figures in reverse, it pointed out that time line when I was conceived. This made me think, could it be possible that I may be the Messiah?”

Ricky: “So you’re saying, you figured mathematically, the figures that you’re the Messiah?”

Scott: “Yes, then I started to listen to music on the radio. The music was pointing out doom for the second coming of our world from a few of the songs. But there just wasn’t doom, it explains times of good as well. It was letting me know there are possibly two outcomes of our world to be. Peace and salvation or mass destruction to end civilization as we know it.”

Ricky: “Wow!”

Scott: “It wasn’t until April 5, thirty days after I had turned to the Bible. I had a vision while sitting on my futon in the den. It was of the holy city. I figured it had to be. It was so beautiful I had never seen nothing like it. It was all made out of precious gems and crystals. There was thousands upon thousands of intricate-cut and placed gems in the inner circle. It looked like a six-pointed star.”

Ricky: “Interesting, but that doesn’t prove that it’s the holy city. It could have just been a dream.”

Scott: “I felt something, a strong feeling that convinced me I was looking at the holy city in heaven. What I figured out was from the Bible only the Messiah or chosen one will see it. There was another figure, I figured out of 144,000, which after looking at what I saw could relate to the gems in the inner city. The Bible speaks of 144,000 souls to be saved at the end times. All souls are different, but they start or originate from 144,000.”

Jimmy: “So all people here on earth have a different soul of the 144,000 that cast out from the holy city?”

Scott: “Yes, as everything in space rotates or moves. It cast out a different soul to grow here on earth prior to birth.”

Ricky: “Your story makes sense, but hard to believe.”

Scott: "This is why I say everyone has God in them. Everyone has a soul to grow here on earth, which someday they will return to heaven and live in everlasting peace."

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky had arrived at Bernard's. They waited outside in the lumberyard until Roger had come back from his delivery. When Roger pulled up with the boom truck, they approached him.

Scott: "How you doing Roger? We are here to grab the truck."

Roger: "No problem, my special somebody! Thanks for letting me use it for the week."

Roger handed Scott two sets of keys.

Scott: "By the way, when we were here the other day, we forgot to get a receipt for the truck."

Roger: "That's no problem! Do you want me to make it out to Ace Services?"

Jimmy: "That would be great!"

Roger handed Jimmy the receipt.

Roger: "I'll need to take off the license plates and door magnets."

Ricky helped Roger take off the license plates and had a conversation with Roger, what he was going to do after giving up the delivery service. Roger replied he was going to do over-the-road trucking with a semi, long-distance; he wanted to travel the states. Scott drove while Jimmy rode in the boom truck, which Ricky drove the pickup back home.

The night past and the next morning had come. Everyone was ready by 7:30 AM, then they took the trucks down to the sign shop. They parked the trucks in the back. Sondra picked up Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky and then dropped them off at home. Ricky then left to go to CR Print & More to pick up clothing that he had ordered. While he was there, he ordered more T-shirts, sweaters, jackets, and hats for the new workers who will start on Monday. The mail came to the house around 10:00 AM, Scott checked to see what was in it. The fuel cards for the business had come. Jimmy then left with his 1992 black Mazda Miata to go to the courthouse to get the plates for the new boom truck.

Jimmy: "Hi there, what's your name again?"

Melonie: "It's Melonie!"

Jimmy: "Well, Melonie, I need to get plates for this vehicle."

Melonie checked the title out to make sure all the paperwork was filled out correctly and looked at the receipt that he gave her for the price of the vehicle. She took a few minutes to figure out the taxes on the vehicle, along with the title cost and charges that he needed to pay.

Melonie: "Well, the amount you have to pay today is \$5,215."

Jimmy: "Wow, that's quite a bit! Is that for a year?"

Melonie: "Yes, but we could do it for six months if you like."

Jimmy: “No, that’s okay, one year is fine.”

Jimmy began to write out the check.

Jimmy: “Who should I make it out to again?”

Melonie: “To me would be fine. I’m just kidding, Jones County Treasurers office.”

Jimmy handed her the check for \$5,215. Then Melonie printed out the registration and handed Jimmy the license plates.

Jimmy: “Thanks, Melonie, maybe I’ll see you another time soon.”

Melonie: “Okay, have a good one, see ya!”

Jimmy made it back to Monticello just before noon. Ricky had made it back around 11:00 AM. Scott was making a couple cans of beef ravioli for them to eat. They were consulting with one another about what they have completed for the business to take off on Monday. Scott had mentioned that all three of them needed to practice operating the boom on the truck and also driving the truck. So they planned it for Saturday morning. It was then in the afternoon around 3:30 when Blake called from the sign shop. He said the trucks were ready for pickup. They then headed down to the sign shop. Jason was home from school and he drove his 2006 Pontiac G6 to drop them off. They walked into the office where Blake was at, after looking at the trucks.

Ricky: “Blake, the decals on the trucks look great. So what’s the cost of the damage that we owe you?”

Blake: “Six hundred eighty dollars should cover it. I had to charge you for the two decals that weren’t used for the red truck.”

Ricky: “That’s fine, just save them for the next truck that we get.”

Blake: “Okay, I can do that!”

Ricky wrote a check for \$680 and handed it over to Blake.

Ricky: “It’s has been a pleasure doing business with you.”

Jimmy: “Yeah, thanks!”

Scott: “Thank you, Blake!”

Blake: “No problem, anytime!”

Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky got into the trucks, then drove them back to the house and parked them on the street. The next day after lunch, Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky took turns driving the boom truck and operating the boom on the truck in a parking lot. This boom truck seemed to be a lot easier to drive for Ricky and Jimmy; it was an automatic. The boom seemed simple for all three to operate after a few hours of practice. They took off the rest of the afternoon and the next day, Sunday. Then bright and early at six o’clock in the morning, they left with the trucks to go to Bernard’s. They arrived just before seven o’clock.

Chapter 3

They stepped out of the trucks while parked in the lumberyard and were greeted by the yard material delivery manager. Gus was out in the lumber yard as well.

Chuck: "Hi, my name is Chuck."

Scott: "Nice to meet you, Chuck, my name is Scott. This is Jimmy, my son, and Ricky, they are the owners of Ace Services."

Chuck: "Are you ready for a full day of deliveries?"

Jimmy: "Yes, we are, bring them on!"

Scott looked at Gus and Chuck at the same time and began to speak.

Scott: "There are a couple ground rules I would like to lie out. One thing is we will be taken off ten federal holidays per year, where we will not deliver on: New Year's Eve, New Year's Day, Easter, Fourth of July, Memorial Day, Veterans Day, two days for Thanksgiving, Christmas Eve, and Christmas Day."

Gus: "According to the store policy, you have to deliver all the days of the year that were open."

Scott: "I guess you will have to bend the rules then. Another thing, during the winter, if the roads are icy, we don't deliver, or if we have more than four inches of snow for the day."

Gus: "I suppose I could do that!"

Scott: "The most important! If any of the drivers have to wait more than fifteen minutes for your yard worker to start loading up the truck, that individual for that truck will take off for the day and you won't have a truck driver to deliver until the next shift starts work at four o'clock. It's very important to take precedence in our delivery service. We pay good money for the workers that work with us, and we expect that there will be no shortcomings."

Gus: "Sometimes we can't always get there due to customers or pulling loads for delivery."

Scott: "Well, you're going to have to make exceptions if you want a good delivery service. Always try to put as many deliveries on the truck going in the same direction as possible. Last but not least, we don't do same-day deliveries!"

Gus: "I'm not happy with your request. But we'll see what we can do."

Chuck: "That should be no problem! My guys know how to do that."

Jimmy: "I will leave the keys in the trucks if you have to move them around. We don't mind if you load up the trucks the night before, for which they can be ready in the morning."

Gus: "Chuck, do you have anything for me or the delivery guys?"

Chuck: "It might not hurt for you to hire another worker for me. With them pulling the loads for the following day, stocking the lumber in the racks and getting bombarded with customers, it leaves me a little short-handed."

Gus: "I'll see what I can do. Try to take precedence on the delivery service, for they can get the deliveries out each day."

Ricky was asked by one of the yard workers to back up the box truck to door 9 so they can load up doors, windows, and cabinets to go out. There were two other yard workers using a forklift to load up the boom truck and flatbed. There were a total of eight deliveries on three trucks to start the day. Some of the deliveries were as far as fifty to sixty miles from the store for the boom truck and flatbed. And the box truck was just in-town deliveries. It took about an hour to load everything up and fastened the loads down.

Jimmy was driving the boom truck, which was the first one to leave out the gate. It had two different orders of shingles to the roof, one in Cedar Rapids and Van Horn. Then it had blocks or stones to Belle Plaine to be delivered. Scott was in the second truck to take off, which was the flatbed. The truck had siding, 50 two-by-fours, eight to twelve foot long, and 50 sheets of OSB to Clarence, as well as a bathroom cabinet, which went to another location for delivery, in the same direction. Ricky took the box truck to do the local Cedar Rapids deliveries. Ricky had a bathroom vanity cabinet, located south side of Cedar Rapids off of Bowling Street. He went to the door and knocked. This beautiful woman showed up at the door with just a towel around her.

Ricky: "I have a special delivery for you."

Female in the towel: "Okay, you'll have to excuse me, I was just in the shower."

Ricky: "That's no problem! I'll go and get the vanity and bring it in."

Female in the towel: "Let me pick up some of the clutter where I want you to put it."

She bent over with the towel on facing the wall, and Ricky saw her butt with a thong on.

Ricky: "Nice!"

Female in the towel: "I hope you were talking about the vanity and not my ass. I'm married."

Ricky: "Of course I was talking about the vanity."

Female in the towel: "So you don't think I have a nice ass?"

Ricky didn't quite know what to say. He started to blush. And the last thing he needed was a sexual harassment complaint on his first day.

Female in the towel: "I'm just messing with ya. I think you're cute, but I am taken."

Ricky finished the delivery. Then he had her sign the paperwork to show she received the item.

Ricky: "Thanks and have a good day!"

Female in the towel: "You too, maybe I'll see you again someday."

Ricky: "Maybe, you know where I work!"

Jimmy had arrived to do shingles to the roof in Cedar Rapids where he pulled into the driveway. Jimmy saw four guys on the roof still stripping the old shingles off. One of the guys grabbed his beer out of the

gutter. He put it to his lips and tipped it up to finish it. He then looked at Jimmy.

Petrol: "Hi there, my name is Petrol Gonzales. I didn't expect you here until later."

Jimmy: "Sorry, Petrol, I had you down for delivery in the morning. My name is Jimmy by the way."

Petrol: "That's okay, Jimmy, we can manage. Go ahead and send the shingles up. We will be fine!"

Jimmy unstrapped the load of shingles for this delivery. Then he opened up the outriggers and the boom up on the truck and positioned the forks under the pallet of shingles. He brought them over the edge of the roof to where the workers and Petrol could grab them. You could tell by the way Petrol was acting and moving around that he must have had quite a bit of beer. The workers started to grab the shingles off the pallet. They slung them over their shoulders and placed them on the peak of the roof. Petrol went to grab a bundle shingles to sling over his shoulder. The bundle of shingles went too far behind him, which he tried to counteract, but was too late. He had lost his balance and fell backward. He tumbled off the roof into some hedge bushes, which were next to the house. Jimmy immediately went to his rescue.

Jimmy: "Are you all right, Petrol?"

Petrol: "Yeah, I think I'm fine! At least the bushes protected my fall. I think I need another beer. Would you like to have one, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "No, I'm good!"

Petrol: "You sure? I have plenty, here's one for you."

Jimmy: "I'm sure, thanks anyway! I would suggest for you to slow down on the beer. It could be hazardous to your health."

Petrol: "Ahh, nonsense! I do this all the time!"

Jimmy: "Do you fall off the roof all the time?"

Petrol: "Now that, I've got to work on. I've only fell off of a roof four times in the last five years."

Jimmy was done with the delivery. He had Petrol sign the delivery sheet. Then he headed out to do his next delivery in Van Horn. Scott was headed to Clarence with the flatbed. He had a stop on the way in Lisbon to drop off a bathroom cabinet. Scott located the address and pulled up on the street, and then he backed up in the driveway of the house. Scott got out of the truck. He went to the door and rang the doorbell; it took about three minutes then an older lady with a walker had answered the door.

Scott: "Hello there, I'm here to deliver a cabinet. Are you Mrs. Conley?"

Mrs. Conley: "Yes!"

Scott: "Do you have anyone else here to help me carry the cabinet in?"

Mrs. Conley: "No, not really!"

She yelled into the house.

Mrs. Conley: "George, could you come here and help this young gentleman out?"

George made it to the door, but he was using a walker as well.

George: "I'm not in the best of shape, but I'll see what I can do."

Scott: "Well, let's see if I can't carry it."

Scott grabbed the cabinet off the truck and struggled to carry it to the door. George opened the door, and Scott carried it the rest the way in the house.

Mrs. Conley: "Here, let me give you a tip for your troubles."

Scott: "That's very nice of you, thanks!"

She reached into her purse. She pulled out two quarters and handed them to Scott. Scott looked disappointed on the tip.

Scott: "Really, you don't have to do that. I'm good!"

Mrs. Conley: "No, I insist, take it please. You need something for your troubles. Would you rather have a glass of milk and some cookies?"

Scott: "Okay, thanks for the tip, but I'll pass on the milk and cookies. I really have to keep going. I have a lot of deliveries to do. You two have a great day!"

Mrs. Conley: "You're such a sweet young boy. Thank you once again."

Scott pulled out of the driveway and headed to Clarence for the other delivery. Scott made it to the location. The delivery was for an addition to a house. There was a gentleman approaching the vehicle.

Frank: "Hi, my name is Frank. You can pull next to the foundation that we poured, without touching it, to dump the load."

Scott: "Okay!"

Scott backed the truck parallel with the foundation. He got out of the truck and then unstrapped the load, went back to the cab, got in, and then raised the bed of the truck. After the load started to slide, it then hit the ground. He noticed the fifty sheets of OSB scattered about fifteen feet past the foundation. He could see a sign of distress in Frank. Scott got out of the truck to see what happened. It was due to only having one metal band on each end of the bundle of OSB. Scott went back in the cab of the truck and pulled forward to dump the rest of the load. He then lowered the flatbed and got out of the truck with the paperwork to have Frank sign.

Scott: "Frank, I'll need you to sign the paperwork, if you could please."

Frank: "I'm not sure if I want to. The oriented strand board is all over the place."

Scott: "I'm kind of in a hurry. There are a lot of deliveries to be done yet today. I'm sorry for the mess."

Frank: "I'll tell you what; let them know back in the yard what happened, for this doesn't happen to somebody else."

Scott: “Okay, I planned on that!”

Frank signed the paperwork.

Frank: “Well, thanks anyhow, have a great day!”

Scott: “You too!”

Scott went back to the store to run other deliveries. Scott had told the yard manager to place more straps on the big bundles of plywood or OSB. He explained what just happened at the last delivery. Ricky had come back already and was loading up his next two deliveries to go out. He had a bathtub and shower combo for Cedar Rapids and kitchen cabinets to Ely. Jimmy was still out with the boom truck. He had two rooftop deliveries with shingles, also blocks to drop off in Belle Plaine.

When Scott made it back, they loaded his truck up with the garage package. That included two-by-fours, OSB, siding, rafters, shingles, and other miscellaneous items to be accounted for. You could say the truck was fully loaded. This delivery went out to Washington, Iowa. This was about an hour and a half from the store one way. Scott left out the gate around noon to head there.

Jimmy made it back in the yard about 12:15 PM, and then the yard worker loaded his truck up with sixty sheets of 4 x 12 half inch sheet rock and forty sheets of 5/8 4 x 12 sheet rock. This was to be delivered to Newhall first-floor delivery for a new house construction. The delivery service received money to handle certain material, for instance, 4 x 12 drywall was \$1.25 per sheet, per floor delivered.

Ricky had made it back from his two deliveries in about forty-five minutes. Jimmy and Ricky went together in the boom truck to do the two-man delivery in Newhall. They left the lumberyard around 12:30 PM; it was about a half-hour drive to Newhall. They arrived at the address of the new construction. Jimmy began to back up, and Ricky with his head out the window began to make a noise. It went something like this.

Ricky: “Beep . . . beep . . . beep.”

Jimmy: “Ricky, is that necessary?”

Ricky: “Beep . . . beep . . . beep . . . beep.”

Jimmy: “Okay, Ricky, we’re backed up now, you can stop that now.”

Ricky: “Beeeeeeep! Just kidding, you ready to handle these sheets of drywall?”

They met up with someone at the site to explain where they were to place the drywall in the house. Ricky and Jimmy were carrying two sheets at a time to place in the house. This took them about an hour and a half to unload. Then they had the same person, who explained where to put the drywall at, sign the paperwork.

They headed back to the store and arrived around three o’clock. They had a big bay window approximately seven foot long to be delivered in Swisher in the box truck ready to go. They both jumped into the box truck and headed out the gate for delivery. They arrived at the address in Swisher. There was a contractor that had asked if they could back the truck up on the side of the house to install the window. They back the truck up about six inches from the window opening with the lift gate down. The three of them moved the bay window into location. Jimmy and Ricky were holding the window in place. The contractor then fastened it. The contractor tipped Jimmy and Ricky \$20 each. Ricky had the contractor sign the paperwork and then they headed back to the store.

Scott made it back to the store roughly around 3:45 PM. Three of the four hired workers, who were scheduled for work on Monday, showed up before 4:00 PM. Jimmy and Ricky made it back to the store around 4:00 PM. There were still thirteen deliveries left to go out. Most of them were short-distance deliveries, which they could place several deliveries on the trucks. Jason was asked the night before to pick Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky up from Bernard's as soon as he got out of school. Jason arrived at Bernard's around 4:15 PM. The four of them piled in the car and headed home.

Jason: "May I ask how it went today, or your highlights?"

Ricky: "I had a very interesting first delivery. There was this female in a towel who had bent over to pick up some items off the floor. And I had a nice view for looking at her ass. She had a thong on, and boy, was it an awesome view."

Jason: "Really, you're kidding me, right! Did she come on to you?"

Ricky: "No, I couldn't help myself, I said nice! Then she told me she was married."

Jason: "Interesting!"

Scott: "I had this little old lady that came to the door for the Lisbon delivery. She was using a walker. Then I asked if somebody else could help carry the cabinet in. So she called her husband to come to the door to help. Which he was using a walker as well! So I ended up carrying the cabinet myself."

Jason, Jimmy, and Ricky laughed.

Ricky: "So, Jimmy, was there anything interesting about your day?"

Jimmy: "For my first delivery, there was a gentleman that fell off the roof."

Jason: "Did he get hurt?"

Jimmy: "No, he landed in some hedge bushes, which protected his fall. He was drinking pretty heavily though."

Jason: "Ahh."

Scott: "Jason, are you ready for graduation this weekend?"

Jason: "Yeah, I am, finally done with school."

Jimmy: "You don't plan on going to college?"

Jason: "No, not at this time! But I'm going to graduate with high honors. I averaged a 3.53 GPA. I have about twenty colleges that want me."

Scott: "Wow, super!"

Jimmy: "Nice going!"

Ricky: "Great job!"

Jimmy: "You ready to start this job with us on Monday, following graduation?"

Jason: "I sure am. I hope I get deliveries like Ricky's first delivery."

Scott: "You all know you can't have any sexual relationships with females while on the clock. And you have to look out for sexual harassment."

Jason: "You take all the fun out of everything, Dad."

Scott: "Well, it's true!"

They made it back that night. During the week, all deliveries went well. Then on Friday, Jimmy had a delivery to Keokuk first thing in the morning with the box truck of a fiberglass old-style bathtub with legs. It was about a two-hour drive one way. He also had another delivery going to North Liberty of bags of insulation and an insulation blower. He dropped off the insulation and blower in North Liberty first. He then made it to Keokuk. It was kind of a rundown area for the delivery. He backed up in the single-lane gravel driveway. He then went to the door and knocked. An older gentleman between sixty and seventy years old with long gray hair and a long gray beard that look like he hadn't showered in two months answered the door. There were dozens of empty cases of beer bottles stacked up outside on the deck.

Jimmy: "Are you Mr. Shoemaker?"

Mr. Shoemaker: "Yes, I am! Do you have a bathtub for me?"

Jimmy: "I do, would you mind helping me take it in the house?"

Mr. Shoemaker: "If it's not too heavy, sure."

Jimmy: "It felt pretty light, I would say it's about seventy-five pounds."

Jimmy and Mr. Shoemaker carried the tub in the house and set it in the kitchen. Then Mr. Shoemaker wanted to take it out of the box it was in, so Jimmy helped. Then he asked Jimmy to stick around for a little bit. He had buckets of hot water on the kitchen floor that he poured in the tub. His house was a mess and had about ten cats, two dogs, and the place smelled like urine. You could tell he lived by himself.

Mr. Shoemaker: "I can't wait to get in the tub to take a bath with my dogs."

Jimmy: "What happened to your last bathtub?"

Mr. Shoemaker: "I used to rent this place out. The last tenants took my cast-iron tub with legs from the bathroom. I had insurance and they replaced the tub with this one. I can't wait to get in the tub to clean up and I'm sure my dogs can't wait either."

Jimmy: "May I ask how you plan on draining your bathtub? You don't have no plumbing going to it."

Mr. Shoemaker: "I'll worry about that later, I'm just so happy I got the tub."

Then Mr. Shoemaker began taking his clothes off. What used to be white underwear were stained brown and yellow. Jimmy had Mr. Shoemaker sign the paperwork. Jimmy took off to head back to the store and was dumbfounded about what he just saw.

Scott had left out the gate for delivery in Whitaker. When Scott got to the address in Whitaker, he

noticed it was a new housing development. He pulled up on the street in front of the house for delivery. He then went to the door and was greeted by a Mr. Olson. He had two piles of thirty sheets of drywall stacked on top each other, separated by pallets of half-inch 4 x 8 foot, on one side of the truck. And he also had a green treated playground set bundled up on the other side of the truck.

Scott: "Where would you like to deliver at, sir?"

Mr. Olson: "I would like you to back up along the side of the house. Then lower the drywall down into the patio, for me and my help can carry them into the basement."

Scott had noticed that the grass was sod, which was laid fresh in the spring or last fall. It had rained the night before. The truck that Scott was driving was very heavy. He mentioned it to Mr. Olson that the truck will leave marks in the grass. Mr. Olson had a sunken patio on the side of his house that led into the basement.

Scott: "Mr. Olson if you could sign the paperwork please."

Mr. Olson: "I'll sign it after the delivery is complete."

Scott: "I highly suggest you put it in your driveway. This truck will ruin your yard if I drive over it."

Scott pointed to a section of the paperwork, which mentioned responsibility of the property owner to where the delivery service was not at fault for doing damages. Scott once again addressed that he would not deliver it in his backyard unless he signed the paperwork.

Mr. Olson: "I don't care, it's okay, and I will take the responsibility if anything goes wrong."

Scott: "Okay, sounds fine to me! I warned you though and you should know it may leave serious tracks in your yard from the truck. Just guide me back to where you want the truck to go."

Mr. Olson: "Okay!"

Mr. Olson waved the truck backward over the top of his lawn from behind the truck. He didn't check what the tires were doing to his lawn. He backed the truck over what looked like a drainage pump station for his sunken patio. It crushed and sunk into the dirt about a foot. The ruts in the yard were about six inches deep from the tires. Scott had made it back to where Mr. Olson wanted the drywall boomed off the truck. The drywall was boomed down into the sunken patio. His help carried the drywall in the house. Mr. Olson then wanted the playground set placed in a different part of the yard.

Mr. Olson: "You can place the playground set behind the house in the corner of the yard."

Scott: "I think it would be better if I just put it off the side of the truck here and you carry it back to where you want it to go."

Mr. Olson didn't really pay attention to what was happening to his yard. Scott was going around the corner to put the playground set where he wanted it. You could see that Mr. Olson was getting upset. He noticed his sump pump station was busted up, and he had seen the deep tracks that the truck was leaving in his yard.

Mr. Olson: "Look what you have done! You ruined my yard! How are you going to fix this?"

Scott: "I warned you what the truck could do, this is not my fault. You should have known better and listen to what I had said."

Mr. Olson: "I want you to fix this, you son of a bitch."

Scott: "Sorry, it's out of my hands. You signed the paperwork and initial the spot that assumes all responsibility."

Scott had finished unloading the truck. He looked at the yard of how much damage it had caused. Mr. Olson was extremely pissed off at Scott.

Mr. Olson: "Get out of my yard, you son of a bitch. I don't ever want to see you again."

Ricky was driving the flatbed that day. He had a delivery in Atkins of lumber for a large deck on the truck. He located the address which was in the country of a farmstead. He pulled up in a gravel circle drive, then got out of the truck and was met by a middle-aged woman.

Mrs. Sullivan: "Hi there, great to see you had made it."

Ricky: "Are you Mrs. Sullivan?"

Mrs. Sullivan: "Yes, I am!"

Ricky: "Where would you like to delivery at?"

Mrs. Sullivan: "If you could get it around the back of the house, it would be great."

Ricky walked around the house and noticed the yard felt a little spongy.

Ricky: "Well, I'm not sure if I can make it there. This is a very heavy load and it might sink into your yard."

Mrs. Sullivan: "That'll be okay! We have a tractor with an end loader, which we could fix it later if that shall happen."

Ricky: "I'll make the attempt then. But if I get stuck, I'll have to have you pull me out."

Mrs. Sullivan: "Okay!"

Ricky went to back up the truck. He attempted it with a little speed to make sure he's on top of the grass. But about forty feet in, his right rear tires sunk in the ground about a foot, while the left side sunk in about four to six inches. Mrs. Sullivan saw what just happened.

Mrs. Sullivan: "I really would like it behind the house if you could get it there."

Ricky: "Well, I would need to have something under my right rear wheels to lift the truck up to continue to go back."

Mrs. Sullivan: "We have firewood that's been split along the shed, could you use that?"

Ricky: "Sure, I can give it a try!"

Ricky then grabbed a few pieces to throw under the tires. He got back inside the truck and began to shift it forward and backward to try and rock the truck out of the hole that it was in. The truck was extremely heavy. The firewood just went deeper into the ground. He tried it again and again, going back and forth to the

truck to try to get it out of the hole. He put more firewood under the tires. The firewood just disappeared in the ground while he was rocking the truck back and forth. He did this until the cord of firewood that was sitting by the side of the shed was all used up. Mrs. Sullivan was shocked where all the firewood went.

Ricky: "I'm sorry, but I am unable to get the truck around the back of the house."

Mrs. Sullivan: "Well, you tried! I suppose it's fine to dump it where you are at. We'll just have to carry it around."

Ricky then lifted the hoist on the bed of the truck to dump the load. The load slid down but was still on the truck. Ricky still couldn't get out of the hole.

Ricky: "If you could take that end loader you have and pull me out, that would be great."

Mrs. Sullivan got the end loader and backed it up to the truck. Ricky took a strap and fastened it to the truck and the end loader. Mrs. Sullivan began to pull forward with the end loader, while Ricky was in the truck trying to drive forward. The truck came out of the hole and then the load was dumped.

Ricky: "Well, Mrs. Sullivan, I am sorry for the loss of your firewood and the ruts that I put in your yard. Sorry about not getting the deck around the back of your house."

Mrs. Sullivan: "It's not your fault, you tried, thank you!"

Ricky had Mrs. Sullivan sign the paperwork. He left back to the store to get another delivery to go out. The next two days had passed with no real incidents with deliveries. It was now Sunday, May 28, 2017. Jason was scheduled to go across the stage for graduation. Jason had received high honors during school for graduation. After the graduation ceremony, Jason met with his family.

Scott: "Jason, are you happy now that you're done with school?"

Jason: "Yes, I am!"

Jimmy: "Did you plan on going to college to get a degree?"

Jason: "No, not at this time! I can always go to college later. I'm looking forward to working with you guys."

Jimmy: "Well, we can use you! Are you ready to start tomorrow?"

Jason: "Yes, I am! I think I'll like driving around, looking at this countryside, and visiting with the people."

Ricky: "That's cool and all, but you can get a degree and make more money."

Jason: "Maybe someday! I would just like to take a break for now."

Ricky: "Oookayy!"

Jason started work on Monday; he was excited and ready for work. The yard guys had loaded his truck with three deliveries. The first delivery was a patio door going on a twenty-minute drive to Swisher. The second delivery was a garage door to Newhall. And his third delivery went to Tama, which was about an hour drive one way. For this delivery, there were plumbing supplies, like a shower and tub combo, a toilet and a box

of miscellaneous plumbing supplies. His first two deliveries went without fault. Jason pulled up to the address in Tama and was met by a contractor. But on his third delivery going to Tama, Jason had shortcomings.

Tim: "How are you doing today? Do you have everything that was ordered?"

Jason: "I believe so, we can check off the list."

Jason and Tim went over the purchase order, but they found out that the contractor was missing two half-inch PVC elbows. Everything else was accounted for.

Tim: "Well, I really needed them elbows to finish the hookup of the tub and shower combo."

Jason: "Can you swing by a local store and pick them up?"

Tim: "No, no, no! I paid for a delivery! I expect everything to be there. I will be waiting today for someone to drop them two half-inch PVC elbows off to me."

Jason: "I'll see what I can do!"

Jason called the store and talked to the manager, Gus.

Gus: "What may I do for you, Jason?"

Jason: "Well, I have this delivery in Tama which was missing two half-inch PVC elbows. And the contractor says he needs the elbows. And the contractor would like someone to bring them out to him."

Gus: "You will have to come back to the store to get the elbows. Then bring them back to him today."

Jason: "Will we get paid for another delivery to Tama?"

Gus: "I guess I'll do it, this time! You need to be a little more thorough when checking your materials off before leaving out the yard."

Jason: "I understand. It's just that the guy from the yard, Eddie, said everything was in there, so I assumed everything was there."

Jason had made it back to the store and was met by Eddie. Eddie handed him the two half-inch PVC elbows with the new delivery slip; this was a \$75 delivery. The two elbows cost less than a dollar, but Jason ran the two elbows out to the contractor. The contractor signed the two papers for delivery. That day no other problems came about. And there were no problems for delivery from Ace Services in the following couple weeks.

Ricky had a delivery to Anamosa which was a forty-minute drive. He had a garage package on the flatbed truck. He delivered the load fine, which then he decided to go to the Whapsypinikin State Park. He entered the park on the lower road, and he noticed there were two girls standing by their vehicle on the side of the road. He pulled up and stopped the truck to talk to them.

Ricky: "How are you fine-looking females doing today?"

Holly: "Not bad and you?"

Samantha: "Great!"

Ricky: "I was wondering if you could tell me where this road leads to?"

Samantha: "It circles the park and comes out just a few hundred feet from here."

Ricky: "Interesting, could I get lost in the park?"

Holly: "We could probably show you."

Samantha: "Is that such a good idea, Holly? We don't know him."

Ricky: "My name is Ricky!"

Holly: "Nice name! My name is Holly, and my friend is Samantha."

Samantha: "I suppose we know him now. Maybe it isn't such a bad idea. I mean he doesn't look harmful, and he is kind of cute."

Holly: "I've never ridden in a big truck before. It should be fun, Samantha!"

Holly and Samantha got in the truck. Then Jimmy took off going nice and slow. He figured he wanted to make this last with the two girls he just met.

Ricky: "So where are you girls from?"

Samantha: "We're both from Anamosa. We have been really good friends since like fifth grade."

Ricky: "How close of friends are you?"

Holly: "We became super close, you could say I'm in love with Samantha, and she's in love with me."

Ricky: "Like lesbians!"

Samantha: "More like bisexual!"

Ricky: "Wow, sweet, I really like you girls more and more."

Holly: "If you like that, what about this?"

Holly leaned over to Samantha and gave her a long French kiss. As Ricky was watching, he was getting excited and forgot about driving on the road. He drifted into the left side of the road, and there was a car coming. The car blew its horn, and Ricky immediately swerved to the right just missing the car.

Samantha: "Ricky, maybe you should keep your eyes on the road."

Ricky: "How am I supposed to do that when I'm interested in you two girls? I'll try to stay more focused on my driving. But that was great!"

Holly: "If you like that, what about this?"

Holly reached over to Samantha's chest and began to fondle her boobies.

Ricky: "That's awesome, keep it up. I really like you too."

Samantha: "I see your truck has a big stick shift. How about you? Is yours big?"

Ricky: "I don't know, I don't look at guys' junk. But I think mine is fair size."

Holly: "We really need to make a date, maybe a little Italian food and a movie sometime."

Samantha: "Yes, I really like Italian food."

Ricky came upon an underwater bridge, went through it, and then shortly after, had an intersection.

Holly: "You'll have to take the left here."

Ricky: "Today is Thursday, how about Saturday? I pick you two up around 5:30 PM. And I'll take you out to Italian Village Restaurant in Cedar Rapids."

Samantha: "That sounds great, here's my phone number."

She wrote it down on a piece of paper.

Ricky: "That's sweet, we have a date."

Holly: "After the movie, we're going to rock your world."

Samantha: "I hope you have enough stamina to please two girls."

Ricky: "That shouldn't be a problem, I can go all night."

Samantha reached over and placed her hand with a grip between Ricky's legs.

Ricky: "Oh, I know we're going to have a good time."

Ricky reached the end of the road from the park. The girls said they will have to get out here.

Holly: "I hope you can ride us like you drive this truck."

Ricky: "I'll sure try!"

Ricky then let the girls out of the truck and they said their goodbyes and both blew him a kiss. Ricky then headed back to the store.

The next day, Scott and Ricky had a delivery to Monticello for sheet rock. They had 120 sheets of half-inch and 5/8-inch sheet rock on the truck for first-floor delivery for new house construction. They left Bernard's to head to Monticello.

Ricky: "Could you tell me more about your episode? I would like to hear it."

Scott: "Sure, where did I leave off last?"

Ricky: "I believe you were telling me about the holy city last."

Scott: “Ahh, yeah, I remember now! Well, the next thing I did was a grain offering that I had read about in the Bible from Leviticus. It’s like I need to do a commitment to God. So I went out to my dad’s farm up on the hill. I added the ingredients for the grain offering plus one extra ingredient which was my blood. I had made a small cut to my wrist. I mixed it up in the grain offering. This was to show my commitment to God and the people. I mixed up the offering and I cooked it over a small fire early in the morning right at sunrise. Then I gave what looked like the best part to burn in the fire for God and then I ate the rest.”

Ricky: “That’s pretty strange, Mr. Chally! Then what happened?”

Scott: “Well, I continued to read the Bible. And then it was Easter on April 16, 2006. I realize what I read in the Bible about the forty days. That it was forty days since I turned to the Bible. My first real vision came on the early morning of April 24. The vision was that I saw destruction on the world from asteroids hitting the earth. Something inside me told me that I should try to let the world know what was soon going to happen. So I called the White House in Washington DC and left a message what was about to happen. I had also e-mailed the Pope to explain my vision and the mass destruction that I saw.”

Ricky: “Well, that never happened!”

Scott: “I realize that now! But I believe it was meant for the future.”

Ricky: “Did anybody ever contact you back?”

Scott: “No, but what did happen scared my wife. She thought I had really lost it talking about asteroids hitting the world. She had called other family members to explain her concern about me. So my dad and my brother came over to the house. They told me they were going to get me some help. I tried to explain to them why I’m chosen as the Messiah and what was about to come. They did not believe me; they ended up taking me to the hospital in Cedar Rapids to get evaluated.”

Ricky: “You weren’t taking any drugs, were you?”

Scott: “No, they did a drug test on me. And it came back negative for all drugs.”

Ricky: “What happened next?”

Scott: “They committed me to the hospital where I spent four days in a Cedar Rapids hospital. I had a court hearing there and then they transferred me to the Veterans Hospital in Iowa City, where I spent another twenty days locked up.”

Ricky: “Sounds interesting. But that must sucked being locked up.”

Scott: “While I was there, I was highly energized, actually since March 5, I was energized like there was twenty to one hundred spirits flowing through me. They said I was having a manic episode. On May 17, the hospital had released me. What I found out was three months in a row during this time—March, April, and May—my family showed up on the front page of the local newspaper.”

Ricky: “Three times in three months, has that happened before?”

Scott: “I can’t even remember being on the front page for me or my family prior to this.”

Ricky: “What happened next?”

Scott: “I continued to read the Bible. I was in a down mood wondering what was happening to me. The

doctors said it was bipolar, the reason why or what had happened with me. So I tried to believe this. But exactly five months from Easter, I was sitting down in my den on the futon when another vision had come into my mind. I saw a meteorite heading for my house. Something told me I had to react quickly, which I had never heard voices. It was like I knew from the spirits that were acting through me. I knew I had to get my family to safety as soon as possible. So I gathered my kids and told them to get the shoes on. We headed out the door and I dropped them off at a friend's house. I went back to the house. There was a calendar on the wall going to the kitchen. As I was looking at the calendar, the days changed in front of me. It had advanced three days. Then I noticed the time changed two hours back from three o'clock to one o'clock. What I thought was weird and I knew it was real because I heard on the radio in my den, the radio announcer had said we're at the top of the three o'clock hour, which it was now only one o'clock."

Ricky: "That seems really strange. That would be hard to believe the whole world changed date and time."

Scott: "I realize this as well, but it happened. What I also figured out from reading the Bible that I had passed the first of three judgments."

Ricky: "So the date and time change was the first judgment?"

Scott: "Yes, I had also spent another week in the hospital locked up. My family ended up in the paper three months in a row again, which I thought was strange. I knew if I would fail at that time, or any other time, what was placed upon me, it would be the end of the world."

Ricky: "It sure is interesting listening to you, Mr. Chally."

Scott and Ricky had made it to their destination in Monticello. They had finished up their delivery. They headed back to the store, and Scott got another delivery.

Ricky went home for the day. He wasn't needed anymore. The rest of that day and the next day, all Ricky could do was think about Samantha and Holly. He called Samantha and Holly around three o'clock on Saturday to find out where to pick them up. He pulled up to some apartments where the girls lived in Anamosa. The girls met him at his car, went with him to Italian Village Restaurant in Cedar Rapids. They went in the restaurant and were escorted to a booth. There was a waitress that came to the table to order drinks for them.

Waitress: "What would you like to drink?"

Holly: "Do you serve alcohol here?"

Waitress: "Yes, we do!"

Holly: "Do you by chance have Bailey's Irish Cream?"

Waitress: "Yes, we do!"

Then the waitress looked to Samantha.

Waitress: "What would you like?"

Samantha: "I'll have the same!"

Then the waitress looked at Ricky.

Waitress: "What would you like to drink, sir?"

Ricky: "Can you get me a Heineken?"

Then the waitress got the drinks.

Ricky: "So what would you like to eat, Samantha and Holly?"

Samantha: "We like pasta!"

Ricky: "I think I'll get the spaghetti."

They ordered two pasta dishes and spaghetti.

Waitress: "Would you like an appetizer?"

Ricky: "How about two orders of cheese sticks?"

Samantha and Holly nodded their head. The waitress left to get the cheese sticks.

Ricky: "So what else do you girls like?"

Holly: "We like vaginas and penises."

The two girls smiled at Ricky. Ricky blushed and turned a little red and then began to comment.

Ricky: "I do too!"

Samantha: "So you like penises too?"

Ricky: "No, I meant just vaginas and also tits. But what I like the most in girls if they have a good sense of humor."

The waitress dropped off the appetizers.

Samantha: "Yes, that's us, and we think you're pretty funny ourselves too."

Holly: "We also think you're cute!"

Samantha: "So we know you work at Bernard's."

Ricky: "Not exactly. Me and my friend own the business that deliver for Bernard's."

Holly: "Ahh, so you're successful!"

Ricky: "I suppose you could say that."

The waitress came with the food and asked if they needed anything else. They said they were fine.

Samantha: "Where do you live then?"

Ricky: "I live in Monticello!"

Holly and Samantha: "Monticello? You told us you didn't know the park in Anamosa."

Ricky: "I needed to figure out somehow to talk to you fine-looking females."

Samantha (with a smile): "Well, you could say it worked."

Holly: "Me and Samantha are looking forward to later tonight. We have a special surprise for you."

Ricky: "What's the surprise?"

Samantha: "It wouldn't be a surprise if we told you."

Ricky: "I'm up to about anything except for taking it anal."

Holly: "No, not that, we don't like that either."

Ricky, Holly, and Samantha finished their food and left the restaurant to head to the movie theaters. They decided to watch a rated R movie called *Romancing a Woman*. While in the movie theater, Samantha and Holly were sitting on each side of Ricky; every now and then throughout the movie, they were groping at his junk and kissing him on the neck. Then he heard a noise of a voice from behind him. He looked back and realized it was an old friend from school.

Ricky: "Well, hi there, Bobby Thorneroad!"

Bobby: "Is that you, Ricky? I can't believe you have two gorgeous women kissing on you."

Ricky: "This is Samantha and this is Holly, they're my girlfriends."

Bobby: "Do they have any other girlfriends that they could pass my way?"

Ricky: "No, but we're trying to watch the movie, so please don't bother us."

Bobby: "You're no fun. Okay!"

They finished the movie. Then they went back to Anamosa to the girls' apartment. Ricky was fondling the girls' chest and the girls were kissing each other. Then Samantha grabbed Ricky's hand and placed it between her legs. They made it in the door; the door closed.

The next day came and Ricky was back at the house at roughly ten o'clock in the morning when Ricky went to the living room. Jimmy was sitting on the couch.

Jimmy: "So how did your night go with the two chicks? Did you score?"

Ricky: "It was awesome! I had the best night of my life."

Jimmy: "So tell me about it?"

Ricky: "Well, we went out to eat, and it was great, they had pasta and I had spaghetti. Then we went to the movie theater. Molly and Samantha could not keep their hands off of me. After the theater, we went back to their apartment in Anamosa. And I'll tell you this, I was a machine. I was like the Energizer Bunny for two

hours nonstop. They had a surprise for me.”

Jimmy: “What was the surprise?”

Ricky: “They brought out the whipped cream and honey. And where they placed it, boy, it was tasty. I think I’m in love! These girls have got to be the ones for me.”

Jimmy: “You’re so lucky, I can’t even find one girl to fall in love with.”

Ricky: “There’s someone out there for you, everyone has a soul mate.”

Jimmy: “I guess you’re right! It’s just that I would like to find mine now.”

Ricky finished the conversation with Jimmy. And he couldn’t wait to hear from the girls, so he gave them a call.

Samantha: “This is Samantha.”

Ricky: “This is Ricky! I’m just calling to say hello again. And I want to let you know how fantastic of a night last night was to me.”

Samantha put the phone on speaker. Then he heard Holly in the background.

Holly: “Hey, Ricky, we had an okay night last night, but there is something that we need to tell you. Don’t take it the wrong way. But we feel you couldn’t fill the void between our legs.”

Samantha: “You’re super nice and super cute and very funny. But we’re looking for something more that will satisfy us. You see, you felt like a small French tickler to us. Neither one of us had orgasms from you.”

Ricky: “That’s a blow to my morale. Maybe we can try it again to see if I can get you both off.”

Holly: “Naa, we’ll pass!”

Samantha: “But thank you for the food and the movie last night and the excitement you gave us.”

Ricky hung up the phone and was really disappointed. Jimmy was wondering about the call. Jimmy had asked when the next time they’re going to meet.

Ricky: “They had fun with me last night. But they don’t want to meet me anymore.”

Jimmy: “Did you piss them off or something?”

Ricky: “I suppose you could say that.”

Monday came and Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason all drove separately to Bernard’s. This day was like any other day. Scott and Jimmy decided to ride together for a delivery to Clarence. It was a garage package, which filled the whole truck up. They headed out the gate. They needed diesel in the truck, so they pulled into the gas station that was off Edgewood Road right before Highway 30. Scott and Jimmy had gotten out of the truck. Jimmy checked the oil Scott was putting the diesel in. Then there was this red Audi R-8 that had pulled up on the other side of the pumps. The individual got out of the car, where Jimmy was admiring the car. There were then multiple police cars with their sirens on heading north on Edgewood Road.

Jimmy: "Dad, they must be after someone."

Scott: "Yeah, there's a bunch, or maybe there's an accident somewhere."

The one that was driving the R-8 approached Jimmy.

Audi Driver: "It says on your truck we deliver anything. Is that true, do you deliver anything?"

Jimmy: "If the price is right, yes!"

Audi Driver: "What would you charge me to deliver this car to the Mount Vernon Auctions? It needs to be there within the hour."

Jimmy was thinking they were headed in that direction anyhow. This should be an easy delivery.

Jimmy: "How about \$100? And why don't you want to go there?"

Audi Driver: "Well, I have an appointment downtown. I'll be late if I dropped this car off. I have a friend following me which should arrive in about five minutes or less to take me there if you're willing to do this. So do you want to do this?"

Jimmy looked at his dad.

Jimmy: "What do you think, Dad?"

Scott: "Sounds like an easy hundred dollars to me, your call!"

Jimmy: "I always wanted to drive an Audi R-8."

Audie Driver: "What do you say?"

Jimmy: "Sure, I'll do it! But who do I need to speak to when I get there?"

Audi Driver: "There'll be a trailer waiting for you to park it in on the north side of the building. The guy you will need to speak to will be in a suit. His name is Amerio Laveechie. Hand him the keys and then your job is done."

The Audi driver handed Jimmy a business card with Amerio Laveechie's information on it then handed Jimmy the keys.

Scott: "Okay, Jimmy, I'll meet you at the Mount Vernon Auctions."

Jimmy: "Okay, Dad, I'll be there shortly, I'm just going to get a drink and a hotdog."

Scott pulled out and headed toward Mount Vernon. Jimmy went in the gas station and got a bottle of Mountain Dew and a cheddar bratwurst. He headed out of the gas station and got into the Audi R-8. Jimmy was about five minutes behind his dad. Jimmy took a left out of the gas station on Edgewood, then he turned east on Highway 30. As Jimmy made the turn onto Highway 30, he noticed two police cars with their lights on, heading in his direction. He was then wondering why they would be after him. He was just traveling the speed limit. Then one of the officers in a police car got up beside him and pointed with his finger to pull over. At that time, Jimmy suspected something was fishy with the car he was in. So he opened up the glove box and

noticed there was a bag of white powder. He suspected it had to be cocaine. Then he felt under the seats and noticed there were more bags of white powder. Jimmy was seriously nervous and was wondering what he should do. He knew if he pulled over, they would arrest him for the cocaine in the car, which he knew was serious jail time. Jimmy had panicked for a second; he then called his dad.

Scott: "Hi, Jimmy, what's up?"

Jimmy: "Dad, you have to help me out. This car I'm driving is full of cocaine and the cops are on my ass."

His dad was very concerned.

Scott: "I got this, I got an idea. When I'm a mile from the bridge right before Highway 13, I would like you to pass me."

Jimmy: "How is that going to help me?"

Scott: "I need you to speed up to where you can see my truck about a half mile in the distance. When I'm a quarter to a half mile from the bridge, I need you to speed up and pass me right before or on the bridge. You got that, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "I think so, I'm not sure what you have planned, but I'll try."

Jimmy picked up the speed so he was going about 120 miles an hour. He noticed that he had picked up a couple more cop cars. Now there had to be five or six cop cars behind him. Jimmy was weaving in and out of traffic. Then he came into sight about a half-mile out, where he saw the truck his dad was driving, with the garage package on it. By this time, his dad was about a quarter mile from the bridge. Jimmy then stepped on the gas, and then he was traveling about 170 miles an hour. The cop cars could not keep up. He watched in his rearview mirror as the police cars faded out of his sight.

Jimmy had passed his dad right at the beginning of the bridge. Scott, Jimmy's dad, then engaged the hoist on the truck. As the hoist was going up, the load on the truck dumped all over the bridge. Scott was almost at the other end of the bridge. This was like damming up a river. The flow of traffic came to a stop, no cars could get through. All the police cars that were following Jimmy were stuck on the bridge and traffic stopped behind them. The police cars could not back up. With the help of Jimmy's dad, Jimmy had lost the police cars behind him. A police officer walked up to Scott and then threatened him.

Police Officer: "I ought to arrest you right now, sir, for assisting and embedding a fugitive."

Scott kicked a piece of lumber lying on the bridge and raised his voice at the officer.

Scott: "How dare you blame me for this."

Police Officer: "You must've known the individual in a car."

Scott: "Nonsense, I was about to enter the bridge, I seen the car passing me. I stepped on the brakes. Then my fire extinguisher which was under the seat must've hit my lever to lift the hoist."

Police Officer: "I don't believe you."

Scott: "Well, that's what happened! Now can you help me clean this mess up? How am I supposed to explain this to the store?"

The officer walked away with despair. Jimmy had slowed the car down to about 120 miles an hour. Far in distance on the other side of the road, of the oncoming lanes, he saw lights flashing. He saw a semi-truck passing another. Jimmy then slowed down and moved to the right side of the truck passing the other. The cop cars had passed not noticing Jimmy. They were dispatched while the high pursuit was taking place from Mount Vernon. Jimmy then sped up about 100 miles an hour until he got into Mount Vernon. Jimmy then pulled into the gate at the Mount Vernon auction sales. He was met by a guard who looked very young.

Gate Guard: "I need to know who you're here with so I can let you in the auction."

Jimmy: "I'll tell you what. If you can keep your mouth shut about this car, I'll give you \$100 right now. There will be some officers asking questions. All you got to do is say you saw this car heading south on Highway 1."

Gate Guard: "Sure, no problem. For \$100 I'll do just about anything."

Jimmy: "Thanks, bud!"

Jimmy handed the guard \$100. Jimmy then proceeded to go around the north side of the building. He saw the enclosed trailer and then drove the car in it. He got out of the car, and as soon as he left the trailer, two gentlemen lifted the rear gate up. Jimmy then saw three gentlemen standing in suits next to the fence. Jimmy walked up to them.

Jimmy: "I'm looking for Amerio Laveechie."

Amerio: "I'm Amerio, what can I do for you?"

Jimmy: "Well, for one thing, you're going to have cops swarming this area in a matter of minutes. So what I ask you, you best make a decision quickly. You set me up to get busted driving that car. I know it's full of cocaine."

Amerio: "What's you thinking, would you like \$50,000 for your troubles?"

Jimmy looked around and noticed three fairly new trucks that were on the lot. Jimmy saw one box truck, one tandem axle arm crane boom, and a flatbed truck.

Jimmy: "For my troubles, I would like you to buy me those three trucks."

Amerio: "You're asking for quite a bit."

Jimmy: "I don't think so. I would also like them willed to me from somebody that's anonymous which can't be traced."

Amerio: "I don't think I can do this."

A sheriff's car pulled into the auction lot on the north side and then pulled up to talk to the four gentlemen. Jimmy noticed it was Wayne, Molly's boyfriend.

Wayne: "Have you seen a red Audi R-8 pull into here?"

Jimmy: "How are you doing, Wayne? How is Molly doing?"

Wayne: “Good, and so is Molly! What can you tell me about the R-8?”

Jimmy: “That’s a funny thing we were just talking about it. Weren’t we, Amerio?”

Amerio: “Yes, and you mention you’re getting them three trucks over there today. Where were you going to put them, Jimmy?”

Jimmy: “I would like to keep them at the store, soon as I get them, with all the paperwork and keys.”

Wayne: “What about the Audi?”

Jimmy: “The red Audi went south on Highway 1 about five minutes ago.”

Wayne: “Thanks, have a good day.”

Wayne got on the radio and told the other police cars to head south on Highway 1. The truck and trailer with the car continued on its way east on Highway 30.

Jimmy: “I take it you will take care of me with the trucks?”

Amerio: “Yes, it will happen. Thanks.”

Jimmy then handed Amerio a business card. Jimmy also mentioned it would be the Cedar Rapids South store of Benard’s.

With the help of the officers stuck on the bridge and a few other volunteers that were on the bridge, Scott was able to pick everything up and put the materials back on the truck. He then fastened what he could down. He picked up Jimmy about an hour later then went back to the store to sort through the mess. Bernard’s policy was if they had a problem with the delivery being lost or damaged, the most you can get charge was \$200. But Gus had a real fit over what happened.

Later that afternoon and night, Jimmy was bragging to Ricky and Jason how lucky he was escaping the police chase with the help of his dad. One week later, the trucks showed up in the parking lot of Benard’s. Jimmy checked out the trucks, and sure enough, the paperwork was legit, being willed to Ace Services just as he asked. Jimmy then took the titles and the willed paperwork to the Jones County courthouse.

Jimmy: “Well, hi there, Melanie!”

Melanie: “What can I do for you today?”

Jimmy: “I have three trucks that were willed to us that need to have registrations and plates.”

Melanie: “You must be the luckiest person to have someone will you three trucks.”

Jimmy: “It was a long-distance relative that had lots of money.”

Melanie: “Well, one thing is good; you won’t have to pay taxes on them. That will save you a bunch of money.”

Jimmy: “Yes, I know! Isn’t it great?”

Melanie took the paperwork and figured out what Jimmy needed to pay for the registrations.

Melanie: "Looks like you have to pay \$2,253.57. That's for all the trucks for a year."

Jimmy: "That'll work."

Jimmy wrote a check for \$2,253.57.

Melanie: "Jimmy, I was wondering, do you have a girlfriend? You seem like a nice guy and I think you're handsome."

Jimmy: "Well, thanks, and no, I don't. I think you're good looking as well. I'm surprised you're not taken. I was going to ask you if you had a boyfriend, but I'm always too nervous around girls to make the first move."

Melanie: "I would like you to come over to my house sometime to hang out and I could cook a meal."

Jimmy: "That sounds great; I would love to come over sometime."

Melanie: "Sweet, how about this Friday night? Let's say around 6:00 PM."

Jimmy: "Yeah, that sounds good. Could you write your address and phone number down for me?"

Melanie wrote her address and phone number on a small piece of paper. She added a heart and also a small note that said, "We will have a great time," with Xs and Os. Then she handed it to Jimmy.

Jimmy: "Well, I'll see you Friday night at six, would you like me to bring anything?"

Melanie: "You don't have to, but a bottle of wine would be nice."

Jimmy: "Okay!"

Jimmy had a huge smile as he walked out the door.

The rest of the week, Jimmy contacted the sign shop to set up an appointment with Blake to get the decals put on the trucks. He also got the necessary accessories and insurance for the trucks. There was a delivery of supplies from the south store to the north store. While Jimmy was there, he was contacted by the store manager, John.

John: "I hear you have three trucks, which are extras."

Jimmy: "Yeah, I was looking to pick up another store."

John: "I'm a little fed up with my delivery service I have at this moment. I was thinking about letting them go. They don't show up on time, and half the time they don't get the deliveries out. It's bad for my business here at Bernard's. Talking to Gus, he says you guys are great. Would you be interested in delivering for us?"

Jimmy: "That would be great, sure!"

John: "When could you start?"

Jimmy: "Give me a week to get some help to do your deliveries."

John: "How's the July 3 sound?"

Jimmy: "Sounds good, see you then!"

Jimmy immediately placed an ad in the newspaper for help.

It's now Friday night about six o'clock at night. Jimmy showed up at the address that was given to him by Melanie. He knocked on the door. About a minute later, a little kid opened the door.

Jimmy: "Hi there, what's your name?"

Zachary: "Zachary!"

Jimmy: "Is Melanie around?"

Zachary: "Mom, there's a guy at the door."

Jimmy: "How old are you, Zachary?"

Zachary: "I'm five."

Jimmy: "Well, nice to meet you, Zachary. May I come in?"

Jimmy started walking in the house; he was met by Melanie. He handed Melanie a bottle of wine. He could smell pasta sauce in the house.

Melanie: "You're right on time! I see you've met my son, Zachary. I hope you're okay with this."

Jimmy: "Sure, that's no problem. I love kids."

Melanie: "Well, I just took the lasagna out of the oven. Just waiting on the garlic bread to finish up. Are you hungry?"

Jimmy: "Sure, I love lasagna. It smells great."

Melanie: "Well, come into the kitchen for we can eat."

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary pulled up a seat to eat.

Melanie: "What would you like to drink, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "I'll have milk, the same as Zachary."

Melanie: "I have beer, if you'd like?"

Jimmy: "Not with my meal, maybe later."

Melanie poured Jimmy some milk.

Jimmy: "You really don't look like a woman to have a child that is five years old. You mind me asking how old you are?"

Melanie: "I'm twenty-two years old. I had made a mistake while I was in high school. I thought I loved a guy who ended up just being a player, he didn't love me, and I have been single ever since. I haven't dated a guy in five years. When I saw you for the first time, something told me that I had to make a move to see if there is hope."

Jimmy: "Well, you seem like a really nice woman and you're very beautiful. Having a kid is fine with me. Wow, the lasagna is awesome! You're a great cook! Did you make it from scratch?"

Melanie stared at Jimmy with a smile.

Melanie: "Yes, I did, it's an old family recipe. It's my favorite!"

Jimmy: "It's my favorite now! So how long have you lived in Anamosa?"

Melanie: "Most of my life, since second grade. My parents moved from Louisiana. And you, where do you live?"

Jimmy: "I've lived in Monticello my whole life. How long have you worked at the courthouse?"

Melanie: "Three years, it's a good job, I like it."

Jimmy: "Do you plan on having any more kids?"

Melanie: "I would like to have a big family. That is if I find the right guy. And you?"

Jimmy: "I would like at least four kids, I think that would be nice."

Melanie: "How many brothers and sisters do you have?"

Jimmy: "There is just me and my brother, Jason. How many brothers and sisters do you have?"

Melanie: "I'm the second oldest of three. There's Joanie who is twenty-eight years old and Dominik who is sixteen."

Jimmy: "Nice, are you and your family close? Do they visit often, your parents and siblings?"

Melanie: "Yes, we're very close! I see them at least once a week. They come and see me like two to three times a month."

Jimmy: "Sounds like you have a great family. My family is also very nice and loving."

Melanie: "Well, you say you like the food. Would you be up to watching a Disney movie?"

Jimmy: "Sure, that would be great!"

Melanie: "I'll get a couple glasses and pour some wine. Then we can go to the living room and pop in a movie."

Melanie and Jimmy went to the living room with Zachary to watch a Disney movie.

Melanie: "This is Zachary's favorite movie."

Jimmy: "I think I'll like it to."

Melanie and Jimmy finished the movie, and they finished the bottle of wine. They clicked for one another, laughing and joking all night.

Jimmy: "Well, I should probably get going now."

Melanie: "I had a great time with you tonight. I hope we can do this again sometime soon."

Jimmy: "I think I'm falling for you. You seem just so perfect, I definitely want to see you again."

Melanie walked Jimmy to the door. It was roughly around 9:30, 10:00 at night. While Jimmy was at the door, he gave Melanie a hug and kissed her on the lips. He said his goodbyes and told her he'll be seeing her soon.

It was the following Monday when Scott, Ricky, Jimmy, and Jason headed to Bernard's for deliveries. Scott and Ricky took a delivery going to Brooklyn with second-floor delivery of sixty sheets of 4' x 8' sheet rock. They used the red flatbed truck. They had the load strapped down and then headed out the gate.

Scott: "How was your weekend, Ricky?"

Ricky: "It would be better if I had met a girl, like Jimmy did."

Scott: "It'll happen in time. Just be patient, God has a plan for all of us."

Ricky: "Now that you mention it. I would like to hear more about your episodes. You have finished up on the first judgment the last time we were together. You say there are three judgments. Could you tell me about the second judgment?"

Scott: "Sure, no problem. The second judgment is quite long. There are multiple steps that I had to do to complete it. It was the night of January 7, 2007, where I was reading from the Bible in Daniel. It was about the lion's den that Daniel was thrown into. But there was a special stone that was placed above the den's door. It had a special seal placed upon it. It protected Daniel from the lions. There was this rock that I had in my possession since I was a kid. It meant something to me, I just didn't know what. So what I did, I took this rock and placed it above my door of my den that I hang out in."

Ricky: "Why would you place a rock above your door?"

Scott: "I'm getting to that! The rock supposedly held a special power given to it from the King or God himself. I didn't know myself why and where and for what reason I was doing this. I just knew something was telling me to do it. But I've never heard any voices telling me what to do. It's like I just had a special ability to know. Well anyhow, the next day I had a nine o'clock psychiatry appointment at the VA. I grabbed the rock and took it with me which my wife was driving. As we were getting closer to Iowa City, I had all these visions coming into me. I basically knew from what I saw I had to keep going south from Iowa City. My wife was concerned, but she did as I told her to do. I told her to trust me! What I'm doing must be done. Which I saw mass destruction of a city of about 70,000 people strong. I figured it had to be Iowa City. I remember reading in the Bible of the city that lost 10 percent of its population due to earthquake."

Ricky: "That would be about 7,000 people."

Scott: "Yes! The visions were getting stronger and stronger the further south we were headed. Which

finally I had seen the asteroid in my vision to where it was going to hit. It was the location of corn bins. About thirty miles south of Iowa City on the side of the road in the middle of nowhere, I then saw these corn bins. I placed the rock by them. At that time another vision came to me. I had to head west as fast as we could to escape the asteroid. We drove about twenty minutes to a half hour. Then I saw this farmstead that had a cutout retain meant wall in the dirt that would shield us from the direct hit of the asteroid. We stopped there and me and Sondra knelt beside it. For about fifteen to twenty minutes until my vision left me. At that time, I knew I had passed another test.”

Ricky: “So what happened next?”

Scott: “Me and Sondra drove back to Monticello. But our car was on empty. We stopped at a gas station about twenty miles from where we were stopped at the farmstead. Sondra was worried about not making it and running out of gas. But I kept telling her to have faith and we will make it. We arrived at home. About four o’clock that afternoon then we received a call from the hospital. It was my psychiatrist and she wanted me to come in immediately. I felt something telling me that I had to make it by five o’clock to the hospital. It takes over an hour to get there. I was speeding heading there. I got pulled over by a county sheriff, doing twenty miles over the speed limit. He went to his car, checked my record, came back to my car with a ticket for me to sign. The ticket said Highway 1 and Butcher Road. I remember him handing me his pen which said Pilot. Which I felt something come across me at that time, I was safe in God’s eyes. The feeling of having to make the five o’clock deadline had left me. I then talked to the psychiatrist about what happened earlier that day. How I placed the rock or stone into location to save Iowa City from an asteroid hit. She had committed me to the hospital for evaluations. She believed I was going through a manic episode.”

Ricky: “Interesting, do you believe it was a manic episode?”

Scott: “Everything that had happened to me from day one, I believe was meant from God and the Spirit’s coming through me.”

Ricky: “Was that it then? You were placed in a psychiatry ward. What happened next?”

Scott: “No, it’s not over yet. There’s much more. I had called my wife around 8:30 PM that night. After I was done talking to her, I had left the telephone booth. There was this guy that had said we were all going to die. All of a sudden, I saw a vision of a meteorite or asteroid that was meant to hit the hospital. Which I put together the ticket which said Highway 1 and Butcher Road, also signing the ticket with a pen that said Pilot. I thought of Pontius Pilate that sentenced Jesus Christ to death. I headed to the other day room. And on TV they were watching a show on asteroids hitting the Earth or what they could do. I had this strong feeling that came across me. If I did not make it out of the hospital by 9:00 PM, it would be the end of me and the world. I would be sacrificed, just as Jesus was, but in a different way.”

Ricky: “Wow! That was sure strange what you said. It would scare me as well. So what did you do?”

Scott: “I figured I needed to find a way to get out of the hospital and quick. Thoughts were all running through my head. I figured I needed to get the keys. So I asked one of the nurses if I could have some water. They brought me inside of this room with a refrigerator to get the water. The nurse was leaning over to get the water out of the fridge. I made an attempt to grab the keys that were on a zip string with a quick-attach coupler on the waist. I had a hold of the keys. As I was trying to remove them, then the nurse turned toward me, I had quickly let loose. It was close I almost got caught. I knew I had failed that attempt. But something told me there was a way out. I just need to figure it out.”

Ricky: “You’re brave trying to take the keys off of someone.”

Scott: “So then I was thinking about getting some anxiety medicine. There was a different nurse that

handled the medicine. I had asked to get something for my anxiety. She said no problem and led me to the room where it was held. I had seen her put the keys in her left pocket. There was a half door, with a shelf on it. I had my water bottle sitting on it. She had put the anxiety pills in a little small paper cup. She set them on the shelf. I then bumped my water bottle and it hit the floor. As she was reaching down to pick up the water bottle, I reached over into her left pocket and grabbed the keys. I hurried up to the other side of the counter and took the medicine and had left. I was looking where there was an area that stuck out with windows. There was another nurse doing paperwork from what it looked like. I figured it had to be my time to make the move. So I went to the end of the hall where the exit door was. I was going through the keys. There must've been fifteen keys on the ring. I was going in a circle around the key ring trying each one in the door. I finally got the right key after about seven or eight tries. I opened the door and threw the keys under some chairs. The elevator opened and I pressed one for first floor. I walked out of the hospital and took off running once I was outside. I ran along the river and rested in some tall grass where I felt safe from the meteor strike."

Ricky: "So you escaped from the hospital, a secure facility? What happened next?"

Scott: "I stayed hidden among the tall grass. I saw a helicopter with a spotlight. Then after a couple hours, I took off and headed to another location. They spread the word to multiple police departments to search for me. It was cold that night, it was in the tens. I wasn't wearing much for clothing. I ended up another couple miles from the hospital. I found a Colbert for which I crawled into to try and keep warm. I had stayed there for another hour and then I walked to a nearby gas station. The vision had left me along with the feeling inside of me. When I was at the gas station, I called a taxicab to take me back to the hospital. I arrived at the hospital exactly at two o'clock in the morning on January 9. I was gone from the hospital exactly 9:00 PM till 2:00 AM for a total of five hours. At that time I knew I had passed the test."

Ricky: "What test was that?"

Scott: "The test was I survived to carry on with the plan of the new world."

Ricky: "Was there anything else to the second judgment?"

Scott: "Yes, I'm getting to that. I had spent from January 8 to January 17 locked up in the hospital until I had a court hearing that day. A Jones County sheriff came and shackled me to bring me to court. I was considered a high risk at that time. The judge threatened me if I shall do the same or anything similar I may be locked up for a while."

Ricky: "Wasn't that scary?"

Scott: "Everything that I've went through has been scary. If I fail the universal test placed upon me, I fail the people for salvation. Then what I saw with the three waves of asteroids to hit the earth, to wipe out two thirds of the population would happen."

Ricky: "Well, I'm glad you passed the test. Even though it's hard to believe! Was that the second judgment then?"

Scott: "Yes, that was everything of the second judgment, which had happened to me, for the world to know."

Scott and Ricky arrived at the house for delivery where they were met by an individual named Paul.

Paul: "Follow me. I'll show you where the sheet rock will need to go."

Paul took Scott and Ricky in the house and showed them where he would like them on the second floor.

Scott: "I'm not sure if we can make it to the second floor. The stairway is too small, I believe."

Paul: "Well, if you could try, that would be great."

Scott and Ricky began to haul the drywall into the house. They were trying to make the corner to the second floor in the staircase. They were too long for the corner.

Scott: "I'm sorry, sir! We can only deliver the sheet rock to the first floor."

Paul: "Well, I paid for second-floor delivery. And I expect them to go there. What if I cut the sheets in half?"

Scott: "If it works, I suppose I can or we can do this."

Paul cut the 4 x 8 sheet in half. Then Scott and Ricky tried to attempt to bring the 4 x 4 sheets up the staircase. But the sheets still did not fit.

Scott: "Sir, I'm sorry, but you're just going to have to get your money back for the second floor. We can't do this, the sheet rock does not fit going up the staircase."

Paul: "What if I cut them in thirds?"

Scott: "No, we won't carry them up. You can get your refund for the second floor."

Paul then was upset at the delivery service for not taking the sheet rock to the second floor. Scott and Ricky then carried the rest of the 4 x 8 sheets into the first floor. Scott had Paul sign the paperwork. Scott had made a note on the paperwork to refund the second-floor delivery. Then Scott and Ricky headed back to the store for more deliveries.

Scott and Ricky decided they should have the meeting with Jimmy and Jason at noon in a restaurant. They decided to go to Happy B's for lunch. Then Ricky called Jimmy and Jason to meet them in the yard at about 11:45 AM. All four of them had piled in Scott's pickup. They went to the restaurant. They picked a booth to sit on. Scott, Jimmy, and Jason had to go to the restroom. Ricky stayed back at the table. Ricky was sitting in the booth. He heard a conversation from some females in the next booth.

Kathy: "Wow, I can't believe how big my husband's penis has become from using a penis pump."

Jeanette: "What do you mean, Kathy? Your husband uses a penis pump?"

Kathy: "Oh yeah, his penis lately has been great for sex. It's so much better and bigger. He used to be about four and a half inches long and fairly thin in size. But lately after he started using the penis pump, he must be like six inches. And while having sex, it feels so great."

Sarah: "Maybe I should have my husband try the penis pump. His is only like four inches, but at least he's fairly thick. Well at least it looks like he is."

Marcy: "My husband is like five and a half inches long but very skinny. Sometimes I wonder why I can't seem to orgasm. But if he was thicker, I'm sure I would orgasm every time."

Jeanette: "My husband likes watching pornos while we're having sex. This doesn't turn me on, but I have seen some fairly large penises out there. Maybe sex would be better if my husband's penis was bigger."

Marcy: "That wouldn't work with me. I won't let my husband watch pornos while he's having sex with me."

Sarah: "I think I'm going to get my husband a penis pump for Christmas. You don't think he'll get offended, do you, Kathy?"

Kathy: "He might like seeing his thing grow, and I know you will. But there's something else I should tell you. He hooks a vacuum up to it. He leaves it on for about a half hour. Then we have sex. Boy, does it feel wonderful. He fulfills my sexual needs all the way. He's like a porn star!"

Jeanette: "Kathy, is that why you have so many kids?"

Kathy: "I'm not sure. I just know I'm always ready for him. Anytime is a good time!"

Scott, Jimmy, and Jason came back from the restroom. All four sat in the booth. They ordered their drinks and food from the waitress.

Scott: "Ricky, it looks like you have something on your mind."

Ricky: "No, I was just thinking, or daydreaming."

Jimmy: "Well we have this lunch date with all four of us to decide how many we need to hire for the Cedar Rapids North store for next Monday."

Ricky: "That's simple, we need three full-time and three part-time."

Scott: "Yeah, but we need to think about the ones we have hired to see if they want to go to full-time. I remember Jermaine saying he would love to be full-time."

Jimmy: "I think Jermaine would be a good one to be in charge of the north store. He has shown himself to be very credible in doing deliveries."

Scott: "Well, we need to find out from Joe, Dan, and Glen if they would like to do full-time during the day."

Ricky: "I say we hire six people and let them know there may be full-time positions in the future. Also let it be known they're hired as part-time, until a full-time position comes available."

Jimmy: "I suppose that could work!"

Scott: "Okay, everyone, that calls on the ad we placed should show up on Thursday night at 6:00 PM at our place. Nice, my steak is here! I'm sure hungry!"

Ricky: "What you think, may I have tomorrow off?"

Jimmy: "Sure, there's no need to have four of us in the morning anymore."

Scott: "Yeah, we can get by with just three. You can even go home early today."

When they finished their lunch, they headed back to the store to run more deliveries. But Ricky had another idea on his mind. He went shopping for a vacuum. Ricky went to where the vacuums were held in the store.

Ricky: "Hey there, sir, could you help me?"

Bernard's Employee: "What may I do for you?"

Ricky: "I'm looking for a vacuum that has a lot of suction. Also that is very durable."

Bernard's Employee: "May I ask what you're using it for?"

Ricky: "I needed it to suck for a long time."

Bernard's Employee: "What is it sucking up?"

Ricky: "Well, I need it to pick up rocks off of the ground."

Bernard's Employee: "I've never heard anybody trying to pick up rocks with a vacuum. If I had to suggest a vacuum, this one here is the most powerful and durable machine we have. But it's quite large and expensive."

Ricky: "I'll take it! Does it have a warranty?"

Bernard's Employee: "Yes, thirty days!"

Ricky then took the vacuum to the register and purchased it. He left out of the Bernard's store. Then he headed to a sex shop downtown Cedar Rapids. He entered the sex shop and went to the counter where a gentleman was standing.

Ricky: "Sir, I was wondering if you could help me out?"

Gentleman: "What is it that you're looking for?"

Ricky: "I was wondering if you could find or show me a penis pump to purchase?"

Gentleman: "What size are you looking for? Follow me!"

Ricky: "The biggest one you have."

Gentleman: "You must be well endowed in size to ask for the biggest."

Ricky: "Yeah, you could say that!"

Gentleman: "Our largest is 9" x 2.25". If you can fill this, it will please any woman, I assure you."

Ricky: "Yeah, I'll take it!"

Ricky then left the sex shop and headed home. He realized that he didn't have much time to try the pump.

Scott had a house addition package to deliver to the southeast Cedar Rapids area. When Scott got to the address, he went to the door, blocked by a fairly good-sized dog at the door. The dog would not move its ground away from the door for Scott to ring the doorbell. The dog was growling and showing its teeth. Scott knew not to approach the dog in fear that it might bite. As Scott was leaving to go back to his truck, the dog

started to chase him. He barely made it inside the truck, but the dog had nipped at his shirt and ripped it. Scott felt lucky that he escaped a dog bite. He then called the individual that was listed on the paperwork to let them know he was there for the delivery. A woman answered the phone.

Peggy: "Hello, this is Peggy speaking!"

Scott: "I'm here for delivery! I'm out in front of your house. Where would you like me to dump the load on the truck at?"

Peggy: "Could you take it around back? There is a path leading there."

Scott: "Sure, I'll be there in a minute."

Scott drove the truck around back of the house and then backed up to the house addition. Scott got out of the truck and then met Peggy.

Scott: "Your dog is very dangerous. He bit my shirt and almost bit me."

Peggy: "Yeah, don't get too close to him, he will bite. He bit one of the workers in the face last week and the individual needed eighty-five stitches."

And she laughed.

Scott: "I would say your dog needs to be put to sleep. He's not safe around humans, someone trained him to be vicious. Now he's a threat or harm to all individuals. What if a child was next to the dog and he did this to the child?"

Peggy: "They shouldn't come around my place then. The dog wards off predators, possible thieves!"

Peggy laughed some more.

Scott finished delivering the load and had Peggy sign the paperwork. He then headed back to Bernard's. When he got in the yard, Scott got out of the truck while Chuck reloaded another delivery. Scott changed his shirt.

Chuck: "You might want to keep your shirt on. You might attract women to you."

Scott: "I don't think that will happen. I'm a little too old to be looked at."

Chuck: "For your age, you're in pretty good shape."

Scott: "Thanks."

Chuck: "What happened to your shirt anyhow if I may ask?"

Scott: "At my last delivery, there was a crazy lady that thought her dog was fine after almost biting me."

Chuck: "Owie, was it a big dog? Your load is ready!"

Scott: "Yeah, it was a big dog. And it did eighty-five stitches to a person's face last week."

Chuck: "I would consider you lucky then."

Scott continued to run deliveries throughout the day until the next working shift came in. Scott, Jimmy, and Jason had headed out in the morning to Bernard's the next day.

Ricky woke up around nine o'clock. He watched TV, and then around 12:30 PM, after he had his lunch, he decided to go to his room and hook up his penis pump to the vacuum hose with duct tape. After he attached the penis pump, he clicked the vacuum on and inserted it over his penis while lying in bed with the covers over him. He was in amazement of how much suction it had. He shortly fell asleep afterward.

It wasn't until 4:30 PM when Jason had come home from Bernard's. Jason was curious of the noise coming from Ricky's room. As Jason went to check on Ricky, he realized there was a vacuum that was smoking and sounded like it was shorting out. Jason walked into Ricky's room, then he turned the vacuum off. He noticed that Ricky was asleep with a vacuum hose attached to his penis under the covers so it looked and he tried to wake Ricky up.

Ricky was in the middle of a dream. It appeared to be a beautiful woman giving Ricky a blow job. She was under the covers facing Ricky. She had beautiful long blond hair. Jason tried waking Ricky up. But Ricky wasn't waking up right away. Right before Ricky woke up in his dream, the woman that was giving Ricky a blow job looked up at Ricky. She was an ugly zombie with deteriorating flesh from her face. That scared the crap out of Ricky in his dream, which woke him up immediately.

Ricky was embarrassed to have Jason see what he was doing. Ricky attempted to take the penis pump off of his penis, which was stuck. It would not come off. Ricky undid the duct tape and removed the vacuum hose and used both hands to try to remove the penis pump, but that was unsuccessful. Ricky then was very concerned about his penis. His penis had expanded to fill up the whole tube. He then asked Jason if he could help him out.

Ricky: "Jason, it isn't what it looks like."

Jason: "What is it supposed to look like? You have or had a vacuum hooked up to your penis!"

Jason laughed.

Ricky: "This isn't funny. I can't get the tube off my penis. Maybe you can help me pull it off?"

Jason: "Oh no, I ain't touching your penis!"

Ricky: "Please I need some help! You're the only one here! All you need to do is grab a hold of the plastic tube and pull. You won't be touching my penis."

Jason: "I suppose I will, but you better not say anything to anyone about this."

Jason went to pull on the tube, while Ricky was standing. But there was no luck. The tube was stuck. He then tried to pull a little harder and placed a foot up on his hip and began to pull. But there still was no luck.

Jason: "Ricky, I hate to say this, but you need to go to the doctor's office to get this removed. If you don't get it removed shortly, your penis might die and fall off."

Ricky looked as if he was in despair.

Ricky: "I suppose you're right, could you take me to the doctor's office then?"

Jason: "Sure, get some pants on!"

Ricky put his pants on but was unable to close them up. He buttoned up the top of his jeans with the penis tube sticking out the front. He then took a dishtowel from the kitchen and draped it over the penis and tube. They headed out of the house and arrived at the doctor's office. They walked in; there was a lobby full of people waiting for their appointments. Ricky walked up to the counter.

Ricky: "I have an emergency!"

Receptionist: "What's the emergency?"

Ricky: "I have a tube stuck on my penis."

Receptionist: "Really, a tube stuck on your penis? Let me see!"

Ricky removed the dishtowel and revealed the tube with his penis in it. Other people from the lobby noticed as well. They began to walk up to Ricky and looked closer. There were a few that asked questions of how he got the tube stuck on his penis.

Receptionist: "Wow, you definitely need to get that off and quick."

The receptionist left the desk for a second and knocked on the door where the doctor had an appointment with a patient. She told the doctor what was going on with Ricky and the tube he had stuck on his penis. The doctor finished up with his patient and then requested that Ricky come back immediately.

Dr. Chase: "Hello there, sir, my name is Dr. Chase. I see you have quite a problem going on today. May I ask how this happened?"

Ricky: "I thought I would try to use a vacuum for my penis for it to become larger."

Dr. Chase: "Well, it obviously worked. How long have you had it on for?"

Ricky: "Around four hours, with the high-suction vacuum."

Dr. Chase: "Why didn't you turn it off earlier?"

Ricky: "I fell asleep!"

Dr. Chase: "How do you sleep through a vacuum running?"

Ricky: "I don't know! That makes me wonder too!"

Dr. Chase: "You must've passed out due to lack of blood to your brain."

Ricky: "Do you think you can remove it quick?"

Dr. Chase: "We can try to, just hope your penis doesn't turn black. Or you will have to have it surgically removed."

Ricky: "What! You're kidding, right?"

Dr. Chase: "Nope, not kidding!"

Ricky began to panic. Dr. Chase ordered the nurse to inject Ricky's penis from the tip with a needle and syringe of Benadryl to reduce the swelling.

Nurse: "This may sting a little bit, but we have to do this to see if we can get some of the swelling to go down for we can pull it off."

Ricky: "Isn't there another way? That will hurt! Please not the needle!"

Dr. Chase: "Do you want to keep your penis or not?"

Ricky: "Okay, I suppose! Go ahead and do it!"

The nurse injected a long needle into the tip of his penis from the tube. Ricky screamed in agony as the needle penetrates his penis.

Dr. Chase looked at the nurse.

Dr. Chase: "You may also want to get some Coumadin in his system to thin his blood so it doesn't clot and causes a stroke."

Dr. Chase waited about five minutes to see if the Benadryl was effective. But it was not as he was trying to pull the tube off of his penis, the doctor was unsuccessful.

Dr. Chase: "Well, the Benadryl doesn't seem to be taking affect. We will have to try another method."

He looked at his nurse.

Dr. Chase: "Could you get me the cast-cutting saw? We will have to try to see if we can cut it off."

The nurse handed Dr. Chase the saw. He began to try and cut horizontally along the tube to split it in half, but it was not effective.

Dr. Chase: "Ricky, I'm starting to get worried for you. If we don't get this off soon, your penis will turn black. I've got one other alternative we can try."

Ricky: "Sure, anything, let's get it off!"

Dr. Chase handed his nurse the keys to his car and told her to go in the trunk of his car to grab a hammer. The nurse brought in a five-pound hammer to the doctor's room.

Dr. Chase: "Ricky, we have to do this. It may hurt a little and hopefully it breaks the tube for it to come off of your penis."

Ricky: "You're going to hit my penis with that hammer. That will hurt which may be worse for my penis. Can't we try something other?"

Dr. Chase: "If you want any hope of saving your penis, we must do this."

Ricky: "Okay, do it!"

Dr. Chase told Ricky to stand close to the counter where his penis in the tube was stretched out on. Then Dr. Chase lifted the hammer and gave the tube with his penis in it a fairly decent smack. The tube then shattered in multiple pieces. Ricky screamed; his penis was finally free.

Dr. Chase: “Well, you may be in luck, Ricky. Your penis has good color, it’s just a little blue. I’m not sure, but I don’t think it will turn black. But it’s extremely large. Was it fairly large prior to putting the pump on?”

Ricky: “Not really! Will it stay that size?”

Dr. Chase: “I highly doubt it! But I have heard of cases where the penis did stay larger. Maybe you will have a little luck.”

Ricky: “Well thanks, Dr. Chase, you saved my penis.”

Dr. Chase: “You’re welcome, Ricky! Next time, don’t leave it on for more than a half hour and a little lube wouldn’t hurt.”

Sondra, Scott, and Jimmy had made it home from work. They were wondering where Ricky and Jason were. And then about 5:30 PM, Ricky and Jason showed up at the house.

Sondra: “Ricky and Jason, where have you two been?”

Jason: “It was the funniest thing, Ricky had put a penis pump tube on with a vacuum hooked up to his penis. We had to go to the doctor’s office to get it removed.”

Sondra laughed.

Sondra: “Why did you do that for, Ricky? Are you okay?”

Ricky: “I should be fine, and I had heard through the grapevine that’s how you can make your penis grow. But trust me, it’s not worth it. I’ll never do it again!”

Scott: “So did it make it bigger?”

Jason: “His penis is huge; he’s hung like a horse now.”

Ricky: “That’s not funny! I could’ve lost my penis today.”

Jason, Jimmy, Sondra, and Scott were all making jokes to Ricky about how he stuck a vacuum to his penis.

Sondra: “I’ve got to call my friends and tell them about this.”

Ricky: “No, please don’t!”

Sondra laughed.

Sondra: “You did it to yourself, now we can share the experience with others.”

The next day, Thursday, everyone left the house to go to work. Deliveries went fine for the day and then it was 6:00 PM. There were a total of eight people that had showed up for the job. Jimmy went over the duties of the job with the employees to be. But they had to eliminate two. They told the two that they will keep their resumes on file. They were all qualified with CDL license, mostly class A. Their names were Kenny and Curt, for full-time positions. Jermaine was the only one that wanted to go for full-time from the other four that they had hired. Then there was Lonnie, Richard, and Todd for part-time delivery. They were told to meet up at the

Bernard's Cedar Rapids North store on Monday, July 3. They were all eager looking forward driving for them. Sondra got the information from the individuals for payroll purposes. And Ricky got the clothing sizes from the individuals so he can order the uniforms.

Monday had come where Jermaine, Kenny, and Curt showed up at the Cedar Rapids North store to run deliveries. Jimmy was there at the store waiting for them so he could explain the duties and what needed to be completed for the new individuals. At that time, he told Jermaine and the other workers that Jermaine would be in charge. They had a first-out delivery of sheet rock for a contractor in Monticello for a new construction of a house. Jermaine had picked Kenny to go with him to do the first-floor delivery of sheet rock. On the ride to Monticello, they had made conversation to get to know each other.

Jermaine: "Where you from, Kenny?"

Kenny: "I'm from Lisbon! I've lived there for the last two to three years. Prior to that, I lived near Omaha, Nebraska."

Jermaine: "So you've been a country folk all your life?"

Kenny: "I suppose you could put it that way. Where did you grow up?"

Jermaine: "I came from the streets of Chicago, where something is always going on, you could say, brother."

Kenny: "How far is this ride to Monticello?"

Jermaine: "Oh, you could say about an hour, maybe forty-five minutes. Why do you ask?"

They were driving about twenty-five minutes.

Kenny: "Well, my stomach is feeling a little upset. I ate some spicy Mexican food last night."

Jermaine: "Brother, you won't catch me eating spicy Mexican food. Maybe some spicy chicken, but that's about it. My stomach can't handle it, it gives me the shits."

Kenny: "About how far are we to a gas station so I can go in to take a shit?"

Jermaine: "Maybe fifteen minutes!"

Kenny: "It's coming on strong, if we don't stop soon, I'm going to shit my pants. I really have to go! You going to have to pull off to the side of the road, I really got to go. Like really bad. Can you pull off now?"

Jermaine pulled off to the side of the road. There was a roll of paper towels in the cab. Kenny hurried up to the side of the road of a busy four-lane highway. He went to pull down his pants to take a shit. Before Kenny could get his pants all the way down, he shat all over inside and outside of his pants. People were driving by honking their horn. And Kenny realized he had a major problem with a shitty mess, which he did not want to mess with, but knew he had to. Kenny was still squatting on the side of the busy four-lane road. Kenny was using the paper towels. Kenny tried to clean out the shit from inside and outside of his pants and from his ass. There was a mess of shitty paper towels all over the ditch where he was at. He finished up the best he could, then he went back inside the cab.

Jermaine: "Oh no, don't you dare sit on that seat without putting something down first."

Kenny found some greasy towels behind the seat to sit on.

Jermaine: “Oh boy, oh boy, oh man, you had to shit like that? Wow, man, you sure stink!”

Jermaine tried to breathe, but the smell was too unbearable, so he rolled down the window to try and air out the cab.

Jermaine: “You really couldn’t hold that, huh? From now on, I’m going to call you poop stain.”

Kenny: “That’s not funny! What if it were to happen to you?”

Jermaine: “Not likely! I take my shits early in the morning prior to working.”

Kenny: “Well, I didn’t have to go then. But drinking my coffee must’ve triggered it.”

Jermaine and Kenny got to their destination in Monticello and began carrying the sheet rock into the house. The construction workers smelled Kenny and couldn’t figure out where the smell was coming from exactly. Until Jermaine called Kenny poop stain. They asked Jermaine and Kenny what had happened, where Jermaine had explained to them. They all were joking and making crap of Kenny. They finished their delivery and returned to the store. Then Jermaine told Kenny to go home, shower, and change clothes.

Jimmy was still at the north store doing deliveries. Jermaine thought what Kenny did was funny, so he told the other workers. That worked in the yard and delivered for Ace Services. From that moment on, Kenny was known as poop stain. Deliveries went fine for the rest of the week.

The weekend came again where Jimmy had set up another date with Melanie at her house to eat dinner and watch movies again. Jimmy knocked on the door; Melanie answered and saw that Jimmy has a long small thin box. Jimmy then handed the box to Melanie where she opened the box.

Jimmy: “Do you like it?”

Melanie: “What is this for?”

Jimmy: “It’s a friendship bracelet! I just want to let you know, you mean a lot to me. And I also would like every time you look at it, then you can think of me.”

Melanie: “Aw, isn’t that sweet of you.”

Melanie bent forward and gave Jimmy a kiss on the cheek.

“Thanks, that means a lot to me. Come on in! Zachary is in the living room playing with his toys. You can hang out with him until I finish cooking dinner.”

Jimmy: “What are we having?”

Melanie: “I thought spaghetti would be good. Do you like spaghetti?”

Jimmy: “Yes, I love spaghetti!”

Melanie: “That’s good, so does Zachary! I figured it would be good meal to have tonight with breadsticks.”

Jimmy went to the living room and sat down next to Zachary.

Jimmy: "Zachary, I see you have a Lego train set."

Zachary: "Yes, and I have some Lego cars too."

Jimmy: "Did you set the track up yourself?"

Zachary: "I did, with a little help from Mom."

Jimmy: "Can I see one of them Lego guys?"

Zachary: "Sure."

Zachary handed Jimmy a Lego guy.

Zachary: "I was just wondering, Jimmy, are you going to bonk my mommy?"

Jimmy was shocked at what Zachary had asked him.

Jimmy: "What do you mean, Zachary?"

Zachary: "Well, I heard from a friend that if you bonk mommies, they will have babies and I would really like to have a brother or sister."

Jimmy: "Well, we will just have to see, maybe someday."

Zachary: "I really like you. I think you would make a great daddy."

Jimmy: "Has your mommy been talking about me?"

Zachary: "Mommy been in a great mood lately after she seen you."

Melanie walked into the living room and told Jimmy and Zachary that supper was ready. Jimmy, Zachary, and Melanie went back into the kitchen and sat down at the table. The spaghetti meat sauce and noodles were on the table with the breadsticks.

Melanie: "So, Jimmy, how was your week?"

Jimmy: "It's been great. I couldn't stop thinking about you all week. Even when I sleep at night, I've had dreams of you."

Melanie: "Ahh, that's sweet! I've been thinking of you a lot too. And I've been in a good mood. How was work this week?"

Jimmy: "It's been good! We hired six more people Thursday, and we started running deliveries from the Cedar Rapids North store on Monday."

Melanie: "That's great your business is really growing. And you haven't been in business very long."

Jimmy: "Yes, it's been great. It's like God's looking out for us."

Melanie: "You believe in God?"

Jimmy: "Oh yes, I do! I go to church about seven to ten times a year. It makes me feel good!"

Melanie: "That's great! What are you, Catholic or Lutheran?"

Jimmy: "I'm Lutheran!"

Melanie: "That's great, me too, we should go to church some time together."

Jimmy: "How about this Sunday I bring you to my church service?"

Melanie: "That would be great! I'll be looking forward to going with you and Zachary."

Jimmy: "I'll pick you up at 8:15. Service starts at 8:45 AM in Monticello. How does that sound?"

Melanie: "That sounds great, that'll be our third date then."

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary finished eating their spaghetti. Zachary left to go back into the living room to play with his Legos.

Jimmy: "I bet you can't guess what Zachary asked me?"

Melanie: "What, maybe he says he would like to have a dad to be around?"

Jimmy: "Close, he asked me if I'm going to bonk Mommy."

Melanie laughed with a big smile.

Melanie: "I wonder where he got that from. Kids can say the strangest things. And to answer your question about bonk, I'm going to have to get to know you a little better. I don't want to make the same mistake twice."

Jimmy: "That's fine, I understand, sex doesn't make the relationship. But I do have a lot of feelings for you. The reason why he asked me, if I was going to bonk you, is because he would like to have a brother or sister. His friends told him that a couple has to bonk to get one."

Melanie finished cleaning up after the meal. They went into the living room. Melanie put cartoons on the TV to watch. Melanie and Jimmy had a romantic evening. They gave each other massages.

Sunday had come. Jimmy had picked up Melanie and Zachary to go to church. While in church, they smiled at one another and enjoyed the service. The sermon was about relationships and how important they are to keep true to one another to live in honor for one another with God in their hearts.

When Monday came, it was raining. From the Cedar Rapids North store, Jermaine had a delivery of sixty sheets of OSB centered on the truck. It was a delivery going to North East Cedar Rapids in a residential housing area. When Jermaine pulled up, he noticed the driveway was on a downhill slant. He backed up on an angle in the driveway approximately ten to fifteen feet away from the house. He was met by the owner.

Jermaine: "How are you doing, sir? I have a delivery for you. Is right here okay?"

House Owner: "Good! And you, that should be fine."

Jermaine: “We might have a slight problem though. With the rain coming down the steel on the bed of truck, the position of where the OSB is at on the truck along with your downhill slant of the driveway and only having two steel bands on the bundle of OSB, when I go to dump the load, it’s possible the bands will break, and with the rain making it slippery, your OSB may go down the hill approximately one hundred foot. It’ll look like a deck of cards spread out. But the good thing is we should miss the house. That would be the worst-case scenario. Are you okay with that?”

House Owner: “I’m not fine with that! But let’s not hope for the worst-case scenario.”

Jermaine: “Well, here it goes! I will go ahead and dump the delivery.”

Jermaine slowly lifted the bed of the truck up. The OSB slid off the back of the truck bed, hit the ground, the band’s snapped, and oriented strand board spread out like a deck of cards down the side hill of the house approximately one hundred foot. The owner was in disbelief of what he had told him prior to the dumping of the delivery. Then he was amazed it happened, just as he said.

House Owner: “You’re not just going to leave me here, are you, to pick up the OSB? Could you help me please pick them up and carry them back to a pile on the driveway?”

Jermaine: “Well, officially I’m done with the delivery once I dump it. But yes, I will help you pick them up.”

House Owner: “Thanks much!”

At the Cedar Rapids South store Monday afternoon, the discussion of the part-time began.

Scott: “Some of the part-time guys, Jimmy, are asking to get more hours. So I was thinking I would like to go fishing with Jason tomorrow. You can schedule Glenn and Dan to come in for the morning to run deliveries all day.”

Jimmy: “Okay, I’ll give Glenn and Dan a call to make sure they want to work.”

The next day, Scott and Jason went fishing just after lunch. They grabbed the fishing poles. They used Scott’s pickup and headed over to the Anamosa damn to see if they could catch some bass. They got there and parked on the north side of the dam. They walked down to the water side.

Scott: “Jason, are you ready to catch some big fish today?”

Jason: “I’ll make a bet with you to whomever catches the most fish will sit back and watch the other clean the fish.”

Scott: “You’re on! Looks like you may be cleaning some fish today, Jason.”

Jason: “Not a chance!”

They placed the worms on the hooks of their poles, and they cast the lines into the water. Scott had cast his line and placed the pole on the ground. Scott was standing next to the water side. He happened to look or glanced down at the ground, and he saw a brick at the edge of the water. As he looked at the brick, he noticed there was three o’clock written on top of the brick. So Scott looked at his watch at that time and it said 7-11 1:11:11 exactly as he looked. He saw in like a vision and brief split second of an asteroid heading toward Earth. He thought that was strange, and as he glanced down at the brick, this time he saw what appeared to say BOO. Scott was stumped on what he just saw happened to him.

Scott: "Jason, come over here for a second. What time do you have?"

Jason: "I have 1:11 PM!"

Jason walked over to him.

Scott: "Look at that brick and tell me what it says."

Jason: "Looks like it says three o'clock."

Scott: "Well, when I saw it the first time, it looked like three o'clock. Then I glanced at it again and it looked like it said BOO."

Jason: "Yeah, I can see that! It also looks like it could say BOO."

Scott: "When I saw the time of 1:11:11, it's like I saw a vision of an asteroid."

Jason: "Strange, what do you make of it?"

Scott: "It's a message of some kind, speaking to me for the future. I'm just not sure what it is yet."

Jason: "I got a fish on the line."

Scott: "Don't let it get away, reel it in."

While the time they were fishing, Jason caught the most fish. Scott had to clean them and then they went home. But Scott was confused and was stumped at what had happened that day.

On Monday, Scott was called by one of the desk employees of Bernard's. The Bernard's employee had asked if they would be willing to carry three hundred large blocks around the back side of the person's house. Scott said that there will be an extra fee to do that. Then he said how about \$150 extra? The Bernard's employee at the desk had asked the person who wanted the blocks delivered behind the house if that would be okay. The one for delivery agreed to the terms to pay the extra \$150 plus the handling fee and the delivery to Stanwood.

Tuesday, Scott and Ricky took the delivery of bricks to Stanwood on the red flatbed truck first thing in the morning. They had six pallets of bricks on the truck. They were toward the back of the truck. They strapped down the load and headed out the gate.

Scott: "So, Ricky, do you feel up to handling these blocks?"

Ricky: "I do, it might take a while to carry them. They're pretty heavy, I will only be able to carry two at a time."

Scott: "That's fine, that's all I think I can handle too."

Ricky: "Do you mind me asking about the third judgment?"

Scott: "That's fine! Let me tell you what I think I know about it. Well, you see this judgment is the hardest and longest judgment of all three, but the most important. See, with the first judgment, I had to acknowledge the existence of the second coming to the world with the boss date. Which the boss date was 9/11 2012 to be

noted for the world. The second judgment was for me to survive the universal test that was placed upon me to be the Savior. That's why I had to escape from the hospital so I can continue to show the world that there is hope and a new way of life. It was also noted by the court. The third judgment starts out as me trying to convince the people that I'm the chosen one so they can follow me in establishing a new world order."

Ricky: "So you say you have completed the new world order for the people to follow, to have salvation and peace on earth?"

Scott: "That's correct. First off, I had to get a book written for the people to see and read to understand what had happened to me. Why I say I am the second coming or the Messiah."

Ricky: "You complete your book when?"

Scott: "I completed it in January 2014, right after I had the dream on January 13 at 1:45 in the morning. This dream explained everything to me on how the world should operate and be run. So I have been making videos and I explained it in the book on what we have to look forward to in the future."

Ricky: "So one dream explained everything to you?"

Scott: "It was like a computer download to my brain. But of course as time went on, I refined the order to make it most likable for the people and legit to be operated as a world."

Ricky: "And it's complete. All the Ps and Qs of the world order."

Scott: "Yes, different segments of it has enhanced as time went along. You see from the Bible it talks about the Sabbath day or Sabbath year which is every seventh day or seventh year. But it also says 7 x 7 equals 49 years. For the people to know! But they won't know until my forty-ninth birthday, which is December 13, 2019. That is *if* I'm the Sabbath, it'll be known by then."

Ricky: "It's awful hard to believe that you say you're the Messiah. But we will just have to see."

Scott: "I agree with you, I had a hard time believing it in the beginning as well. The odds of me becoming the Messiah are really great. I didn't choose it, but *if* I fail to bring peace on earth, I would be considered the antichrist. That is to bring doom to everyone or what it says in the Bible two thirds of the population will be nonexistent due to three waves of asteroid strikes."

Ricky: "That doesn't sound very good. I hope you're successful then if you're the chosen one."

Scott: "I'm trying with all my might. But it's hard to convince the nonbelievers and even believers that don't see the signs that I see to save the world, but I need their help as well."

Ricky: "So how do you plan on getting your message across to the world to bring salvation?"

Scott: "God and the spirits have helped me along this far. And I have faith and belief in the spirits and in the Lord to help me on this journey I've been on. But I believe I will need media attention to get the word spread across the world. When it'll happen, I'm not sure and how I don't know yet. But as long as I believe and follow as I should do, it will happen."

Ricky: "But the doctors have diagnosed you with bipolar affective disorder or schizoaffective disorder because of your condition or what you see and talk about."

Scott: "For me to say that I have bipolar, it is hard to accept, but even if I do, it doesn't hurt for me to try to make peace and keeping God first in my heart. Ahh, I see we're coming up on an open scale. I best pull in."

Scott pulled in and onto the scale. He could see two officers through the window talking to each other. Then one of them had come outside the door to address Scott and Ricky in the truck.

Scale Officer: "Sir, you're overweight on your rear axle. But today can be your lucky day if you take the time and move the blocks from the rear to the front of the truck."

Scott: "Can't you just let us go? How far over are we?"

Scale Officer: "Well, I can write you a ticket for around \$2,000 for being overweight. And you still would have to move or do something different to make it legal to drive on the road."

Scott: "That's fine, we can move the blocks."

Scale Officer: "If you could move forward and off to the right, that would be great, when you get them moved. I need you to drive back over the scale to verify your weight."

Scott: "Okay, thanks very much, give us about a half hour and we'll be back over the scale."

Scale Officer: "Sure thing."

Scott pulled the truck forward to the right of the scale. Scott and Ricky started moving the blocks of the back two pallets on the truck to the front. Ricky was on the back of the truck moving one block at a time to the middle so Scott could pick up and stack on an empty pallet. They finished moving all the blocks from the back two pallets. Then Scott and Ricky refastened the load, then pulled back over the scale. The scale officer weighed the truck and gave a thumbs-up through the window to let them know they're good to go.

They continued on their journey to Stanwood and arrived at the residence house. Scott then backed up as far as he could on the driveway. They got out of the truck and began to unstrap the load. They were met by the house owner.

House Owner: "Welcome, I see you're here with my blocks."

Ricky: "Yes, where would you like them?"

House Owner: "Follow me to the back! You can see where the skid loader cut the dirt out of the side of the hill. If you could scatter the piles from one side to the other side where the dirt cutout wall is at, that would be great."

Ricky: "Sounds good! We will stack them up on pallets along the back, about five feet from the dirt cutout wall."

Ricky and Scott took about two hours to unload the truck and stack them in piles next to the cutout dirt wall. Then they went to the owner and had him sign the paperwork. They then headed back to Bernard's for more deliveries.

Jimmy and Ricky were back at the house later that evening.

Jimmy: "Ricky, what do you think about going to a Skillet and Ashes Remain concert on Saturday, July 29, at the Seasons Center in Cedar Rapids?"

Ricky: "That sounds great, let's do it."

Jimmy: "I'll order the tickets online!"

Ricky: "Skillet is one of my favorite bands."

Jimmy: "I like Skillet too, also Ashes Remain is a good band."

Ricky: "Is Ashes Remain the opening band?"

Jimmy: "Yes!"

Ricky: "Have you thought about asking Melanie to go to the concert?"

Jimmy: "She has plans with her family that weekend. She told me to go have fun."

Ricky: "Well, it should be a great concert and hopefully we will have a lot of fun."

The next day, while Jimmy was running deliveries, he received a phone call from Amerio Laveechie.

Amerio: "Hi, Jimmy, this is Amerio Laveechie, do you remember me?"

Jimmy: "Yes, I remember you, Amerio, how are you doing? And thanks for the trucks, they're great."

Amerio: "I need to ask you something. Since I believe you owe me a favor. I would like you to do a delivery from New Mexico to Chicago. But we will have to talk in private, not over the phone. Let me know when a good time is to meet with you? Preferably within a week!"

Jimmy: "How about you meet me at Happy B's in Cedar Rapids next Saturday at noon? We can discuss the delivery then."

Amerio: "I'll be there! You might want to bring your partners with you."

Jimmy: "Okay! I'll see you then! Have a good day!"

Jimmy hung up the phone with Amerio. Then he called Scott and Ricky to let them know about next Saturday's meeting at Happy B's.

On Wednesday night, Jimmy made a date with Melanie to go to the park at six o'clock with her and her son, Zachary.

It was now Wednesday night. Jimmy knocked on the door of Melanie's house; Zachary came to the door.

Jimmy: "Hi, Zachary! How's it going? Is your mother around?"

Zachary: "Good, and my mommy's in the laundry room. My mommy told me to let her know when you get here and let you in. Mommy, the one you like is here."

Jimmy: "Zachary, have you been good to your mother lately?"

Zachary: "I think so!"

Melanie then came to the living room where Jimmy was sitting on the couch with Zachary, talking about

what he would like to do that night.

Jimmy: "Melanie, I was thinking about we go to Mickey D's to eat some burgers, and maybe Zachary might want to have chicken nuggets with fries and a shake. Then we can head out to the park."

Zachary: "I love chicken nuggets; could you also get me a chocolate ice cream too?"

Jimmy: "That's no problem, sure!"

Melanie: "Yeah, sure, that sounds good! I love Mickey D's, their burgers are the best."

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary arrived at Mickey D's. Then they ordered their food and sit in a booth.

Jimmy: "So how was your day. Melanie?"

Melanie: "It was good. There was this one guy though, when he took his eye exam for his driver's license, who complained after he failed the exam, saying he doesn't need to wear glasses. And he didn't want that restriction on his license, besides that it was good."

Jimmy: "You have to do your job, so I wouldn't feel bad."

Melanie: "How was your day?"

Jimmy: "I had seven deliveries which I must've driven 250 to 300 miles. But it was good! Are you looking forward to going to the park? I was thinking about going to the playgrounds by the underwater bridge."

Melanie: "Yeah, that's always a good spot. Zachary loves playing in the water there."

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary finished up at Mickey D's and headed to the park. Zachary played on the playground set for about a half hour. There were other kids there as well. Then they went to the water to play. They were splashing water with their feet and watching for the cars to drive through. Jimmy and Melanie started to hold hands while they were talking to one another and watching Zachary play. When Jimmy dropped off Melanie and Zachary that night, Melanie leaned over in the car and gave Jimmy a kiss on the lips. She mentioned that she had a great time.

It was Saturday the twenty-second. Scott, Jimmy, and Ricky were sitting at Happy B's just before noon. Amerio had showed up right at twelve o'clock and then sat down at the table. They ordered their drinks and lunch.

Amerio: "I set up this meeting to ask you if you can do a job for us. The job will pay \$1.5 million. All you have to do is carry one ton of cocaine from down in New Mexico to Chicago and deliver it to a bio lab."

Scott: "Jimmy, I'm not sure if you're thinking correctly on this. Don't let the money fool you. If you would get caught, you would get a minimum of twenty-five years in prison."

Jimmy: "We don't have the trucks to do the delivery. Plus, it's awful risky to smuggle drugs."

Amerio: "I saw how you operated before with the Audi R-8. And I believe you're the luckiest individual in the world to be able to pull that off. If there is anyone that can do the job, I have faith in you. Just tell me what you need from me and I'll see if I can take care of it."

Jimmy paused for a while, thinking how he could accomplish the task without getting caught. It was like

his brain just knew he could do it and pull it off. He thought for a second again and then he responded.

Jimmy: “Okay, I believe we can do it, but we’ll need a little time. I will also need you to get me two more trucks. Two new box trucks that are twenty foot long with lift gate that folds underneath and they have to be CDL 33,000 gross vehicle weight. I will need at least two to three months to set this up.”

Amerio: “Okay, I’ll get you the two trucks and I’ll give you three months. Then I’ll expect the delivery around the first week of October. Once you deliver the cocaine to the bio lab, you will have your money sitting there for you. I’ll give you the addresses to pick up and deliver at a later date when the trucks are dropped off to you. You will have to keep in touch with me from time to time to let me know how things are going.”

Ricky: “I really don’t want to go to jail, Jimmy. Are you sure this is a good idea?”

Jimmy: “Ricky, I’ve got this covered. It should be a walk in the park.”

Amerio: “When would you like the trucks?”

Jimmy: “How about August 17 at the Great Jones County Fair during the concert of Nickelback that will be playing that night? We’ll meet at the beer tent on the north side, and we will have on our Ace Services hats for your guys to recognize us.”

Amerio: “Okay, sounds great, there will be two biker guys delivering them. They might want to see if you’re legit. So don’t be afraid if they test you. Well, that about covers it for now, thanks for the meal and I’ll be hearing from you soon.”

Ricky, Jimmy, and Scott said their goodbyes with a sigh of disbelief but were willing to try for \$1.5 million.

Saturday came for the concert of Ashes Remain and Skillet at the Cellular Center in Cedar Rapids. Ricky and Jimmy went to the beer counter, and each got two cups of beer. They found their seats and sat down. Then the concert began of Ashes Remain. It was then intercession of the first band, and Ricky and Jimmy had to go to the restroom. They figured it was a good time to go pee before the headline band started. As they walked to the restroom, there was a small line. Once they got in the restroom, Jimmy saw a urinal to urinate in, and Ricky figured he would try to use one of the toilets since all the urinals were taken. As Ricky pushed the door of the first stall in and then attempted to walk into the toilet stall, there was a fine-looking long brown-haired thin female in there going to the bathroom.

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Well, hi there.”

Ricky: “Oh, I’m sorry, I didn’t know you were in here.”

Ricky went to turn to leave the stall.

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Hold on, you’re kind of cute. I’ll tell you what, you show me yours and I’ll show you mine.”

Ricky was about to leave, then the beer that he drank made him think, sure. So Ricky unbuttoned and unzipped his pants and pulled out what looked like a ten-inch thick cock.

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Wow, that’s big, I got to have that.”

The female in the bathroom with her pants down got off the toilet and turned around.

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Do me please, please do me!”

Ricky then inserted his penis, and all you could hear from the female in the bathroom stall was, “Oh my god, oh my god, oh my god.” The other individuals that were in the bathroom were wondering what was happening in the stall; their imagination was correct. There was a female having sex with another guy. They were only wishing it was them instead.

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Oh, ooohh, my god, yes, yes, yes.”

Ricky had finished up and came with all his might. This was the best experience Ricky had ever experienced. And it felt great, awesome, then Ricky was about to leave the bathroom stall.

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Wait a second, I never found out what your name was.”

Ricky: “You can just call me Ricky LongJohn.”

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Okay, Ricky, I hope I see you again. You can call me Corky Courtney.”

Ricky: “Okay, Courtney, maybe we’ll see each other again. Have a wonderful evening and enjoy the concert.”

Female in the Bathroom Stall: “Oh, I already had a great night. You made it great, thank you!”

Ricky met back up with Jimmy. While they were walking back to their seats, Ricky mentioned to Jimmy about the experience he just had in the bathroom.

Ricky: “Jimmy, you wouldn’t believe what just happened to me. Best night ever! I just had sex with the most-fine female in the restroom. She was awesome.”

Jimmy: “Did you get her number, Ricky, for you can see her again?”

Ricky: “Ahhh, I knew I was missing something or forgot. Maybe I’ll see her yet during the concert.”

Ricky and Jimmy had finished the concert. Skillet put on an excellent performance, but Ricky could do nothing but think of the female in bathroom.

Jimmy had to get some items from the Dollar Colonel. Jimmy was in line at the counter to pay for his items. There was a little old lady before him purchasing a pack of cigarettes. The lady behind the counter then asked the little old lady for some identity. The little old lady pulled out her driver’s license and showed it to the lady at the counter. Jimmy saw what the lady at the counter did.

Jimmy: “Are you serious, you’re trying to check her age to purchase a pack of cigarettes? What year was she born in?”

He asked the lady behind the counter.

Lady Behind the Counter: “She was born in 1924.”

Jimmy: “So you carded a woman that is ninety-three years old. Don’t you realize you only have to card a person that looks forty years old or younger!”

Lady Behind the Counter: “It is store policy to card everyone. If I don’t, I may lose my job.”

Jimmy: "That is ridiculous; you should understand and make exceptions to the rule."

Jimmy then turned to the little old lady.

Jimmy: "If I were you, I would make a lawsuit against Dollar Colonel. I feel that's an insult to your integrity. And I bet you that you would win the case."

Little Old Lady: "You know what, you're right, I think I'm going to sue them."

Jimmy then purchased his items. Then he had left to go home.

Ricky had a delivery from the south store to the north store. When he got to the north store, Ricky saw Jermaine. He figured he would go over and talk to him.

Ricky: "Jermaine, how's it going?"

Jermaine: "It would be better if I had a woman in my life."

Ricky: "What kind of woman are you looking for?"

Jermaine: "Preferably a white woman, with a little booty to her."

Ricky: "So any white woman with a little booty?"

Jermaine: "Yes, that would make me happy. You see, I got to go white because I worry about sickle cell disorder for my future generations. Plus, I like white. That's one reason why I moved from Chicago to Cedar Rapids."

Ricky: "I might just have the perfect female for you."

Jermaine: "If you do, I would owe you a big one."

Ricky: "Well, let's just see what happens first. So don't get your hopes up yet."

Jermaine: "If you do, set a date up for this Saturday. Tell the woman I would like to take her out bowling and then to a movie."

Ricky: "Okay, I'll call you if it's a go."

Jermaine: "Sounds good, brother!"

Ricky had left the Cedar Rapids North store. He then headed to do another delivery. Ricky then gave Laverta from the DOT office a call.

Ricky: "Is this Laverta?"

Laverta: "Yes, I've been waiting for your call, Ricky. Are you single now? Did you leave your girlfriend? Please tell me you did!"

Ricky: "No, not exactly! But I've been thinking of you. I found the perfect gentleman that might want to have a relationship with you."

Laverta: "Oh, you did! Tell me more about him! Is he handsome? Does he have a job?"

Ricky: "He's not bad looking, he's really nice. He's from Chicago, and yes, he does have a job. Does color matter to you for what he looks like?"

Laverta: "You can say my first preference is dark meat. But that's not always important, it depends on the individual."

Ricky: "Well, he is a black guy, and I think he'd make a perfect fit with you. Would you like his number? And his name is Jermaine Jackson."

Laverta: "I like it already! And Jermaine is a nice name. Yes, I would like his number."

Ricky: "He would like to take you on a date this Saturday night to go bowling and then take you to a movie of your liking."

Laverta: "Ohoo, I'm so excited! I haven't been on a date in ages. What should I wear? Should I kiss him on the first date?"

Ricky: "I would just dress casual maybe blue jeans and a nice blouse. And if you want to kiss him, that's up to you."

Laverta: "Thank you, Ricky! I owe you a big favor."

Ricky: "I may be collecting it sooner than you realize. No problem."

Ricky then hung up the phone on Laverta after he gave her the phone number. Then he called Jermaine and told him it's a go and said Laverta would be giving him a call to set up the time and location to meet. Jermaine was happy.

Late one evening, Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, Jason, and Sondra were sitting around at the house discussing what needed to happen in the near future to make the delivery from New Mexico to Chicago.

Jimmy: "First off, we need to get an intrastate DOT number. For which we can travel across the states legally. Sondra, can you do this, to start the paperwork?"

Sondra: "Yes, I'll start it tomorrow! It might take a month to get though."

Jimmy: "We will need the trucks first. But once we get the two trucks, I will see if Melanie can't duplicate a license plate number for the second truck on the registration. So we can have two trucks with the same license plates. If we get pulled over, the paperwork will be legit. We will take the set of license plates and only place them on the back of the two trucks, which we will place the registration sticker on both plates."

Jason: "That's pretty clever, good idea!"

Jimmy: "Ricky, I will need you to talk to Officer Williams. You say she owes you a favor. Maybe she will sit there and give us critical information that we will need. You see I mapped out the path that we will take from New Mexico to Chicago, there's a total of thirteen scales along the way. I will need you to obtain from Officer Williams the DOT ticket books from each state that we cross. And also the officers that work at each station for the times they're on and off the clock."

Ricky: "How is that going to help us out?"

Jimmy: "You'll see, we will have two trucks, which will look identical to one another. One truck will be a decoy truck, with nothing in it. The other truck will have the contents in it. We will have premade tickets set up in the first truck with the contents, just in case we get pulled over. The tickets will excuse us from getting a second search of the vehicle. They will just let us go. We will have to do a logbook so they can see where we are coming from."

Ricky: "So you're saying we will have multiple tickets with the officer badges written on them just in case they ask for the ticket?"

Jimmy: "That is correct. We will need to order 1,500 moving pads to use in the first truck to conceal the contents we're hauling."

Jason: "Is that all we need to do?"

Jimmy: "We will also need a decoy vehicle to follow us. Just in case we get an unscheduled DOT officer that chooses to pull over the lead vehicle. I was thinking of you, Jason, to do this."

Jason: "What can I do? Following you isn't going to save you."

Jimmy: "Yes, it will! You will have to take one for the team. What I need you to do when you're driving about 500 feet behind the truck, if an officer should choose to flip its lights on, you will have to come up beside the car and bump it on its side. That way the officer will choose not to pull the truck over and go after you instead. All you have to do is pull off to the side of the road and take the ticket."

Jason: "Ahhhh, okay, I see it now!"

Jimmy: "I was thinking that me and my dad will take the contents in our truck and lead the convoy. Both trucks will run all the scales if they're open. That will be the only problems that we have with the officers. And I was thinking for the decoy truck, we will use Jermaine to drive and, Ricky, you can ride with him."

Ricky: "But we won't let Jermaine know what we're doing, will we? And we will take all the tickets from the DOT officers?"

Jimmy: "That is correct!"

Scott: "What if you get pulled over unexpectedly without none of this working? Do you have a plan for this? You know they carry drug dogs."

Jimmy: "I have a plan for this, don't worry about it. We should be safe with no problems."

They packed up the meeting for the night. They knew what each one had to do. They were all very nervous though. They all prayed to God in their own separate ways.

It was Saturday, August 12, a special day for Zachary. It was Zachary's birthday. Melanie had plans with Jimmy to come over to help celebrate Zachary's birthday. It was about 4:30 PM and Melanie had made Zachary's favorite dish, spaghetti. They ate spaghetti for supper and then served the birthday cake with the candles lit. They sang Zachary a happy birthday song while sitting at the table. Then Zachary blew out the candles.

Jimmy: "So how old does that make you now, Zachary?"

Zachary: "Six!"

Jimmy: "What would you like to have for your birthday?"

Zachary: "Well, I would really like to have a puppy."

Melanie: "I'm not sure that's a good idea, Zachary, they are a lot of responsibility."

Jimmy: "Would you take care of the puppy, Zachary?"

Melanie: "You mean, would I take care of the puppy?"

Jimmy: "Oh, Melanie, come on now! Zachary would love a puppy and I'm sure he would put in a share of work with it."

Zachary: "Oh please, Mommy, oh please, could I get a puppy please?"

Melanie: "One condition, I might let you have a puppy if you care for it, feed it, let it out to go to the restroom, and whatever else needs to be done in taking care of the puppy."

Jimmy: "How's that sound, Zachary? Your mom says yes!"

Zachary: "Oh boy, oh boy, yes, yes, thank you, Mommy, thank you, Mommy. I can teach the puppy new tricks. The puppy can sleep with me at night."

Zachary opened his birthday presents from Jimmy and Melanie.

Zachary: "When can we get the puppy, Mommy?"

Melanie: "It might be a few days, sweetie."

Jimmy: "I have an idea, why don't we go down to the shelter right now to see if they have a dog that you might like."

Zachary: "Oh, could we, Mommy, could we?"

Melanie: "If the shelter's open and Jimmy is willing to come with us, sure."

Jimmy: "Okay, let's go!"

Melanie, Jimmy, and Zachary left the house to go to the animal shelter in town. They got to the animal shelter, and Zachary was looking at all the dogs. There were no puppies available. But this black-and-white terrier and border-collie dog caught Zachary's eye. They asked if they could play with the dog. The one that was working there took the dog out of the kennel. And instantly the dog and Zachary had a bond for one another. It was like they were meant to be together.

Zachary: "Mommy, Mommy, can I have this one please, please?"

Melanie looked at Jimmy and then at Zachary.

Melanie: "Oh, I suppose, sweetie!"

Zachary: "Yes, yes, thanks, Mommy!"

Jimmy: "Zachary, you will have to name the dog. It's a girl, so you will have to come up with a girl's name."

Zachary: "Annie, I like Annie for a name."

Melanie: "I like that name too!"

They asked the one that worked at the shelter if they could get the dog. The person said it was fine; they just had to pay \$150. So Jimmy filled out the paperwork and paid \$150 for the dog. Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary took the new dog home. The dog was so excited to have owners and a new best friend, Zachary, which the dog licked Zachary all over the face.

Sunday, August 13, Ricky and Jimmy knew on Thursday they were going to meet up with the two biker guys for the trucks. They were thinking of a way to convince the biker guys without them having to be put through a test, so Ricky had an idea.

Ricky: "Jimmy, what do you think about this for the biker guys that we're meeting on Thursday? We will be meeting in a public place at the beer tent. We could get some marijuana and smoke it there and also have some for them."

Jimmy: "I don't think that's a good idea, Ricky. There are officers that roam the beer tent. They will smell it and we're busted for sure."

Ricky: "Not necessarily!"

Jimmy: "What do you mean not necessarily?"

Ricky: "Well, if we put it in bags like you would purchase tobacco and make up your own label on it, the officers would have to buy what the contents are. Especially if there's four bags that say the same thing from four different people."

Jimmy: "But you can smell the marijuana if you smoke it."

Ricky: "Trust me on this one, I think I got it covered."

Jimmy: "Not only that, where are you going to get the marijuana? We don't smoke."

Ricky: "Well, you remember Bobby Thorneroad? I think he'll do it for me, if I do him a favor."

Jimmy: "Good luck with that!"

Ricky gave Bobby Thorneroad a call.

Ricky: "Hi, is this Bobby?"

Bobby: "Yes, who is this?"

Ricky: "Ricky! Bobby, I was wondering if you could do me a big favor?"

Bobby: "Well, hi, Ricky, what's the favor you want?"

Ricky: "I was wondering if you could get me some marijuana?"

Bobby: "Well, that depends! Are you still with them two girls I saw you at the movies with?"

Ricky: "No, but maybe we can work something out."

Bobby: "Well, I tell you what, if you hook me up with them two girls, I'll see what I can do about getting you the marijuana."

Ricky: "That might be tough! But I'll give it a try!"

Bobby: "How much do you need?"

Ricky: "I'm not sure. I don't want the smallest amount, but like a fair amount. I need to divide it four ways and if you could get me wrapping papers to make joints."

Bobby: "I tell you what, I will get you one ounce of the finest marijuana that you can get if you set me up on a date for this weekend with them two girls. How does that sound?"

Ricky: "So you'll buy it for me then? And can you separate it into four equal amounts?"

Bobby: "I sure can, if you set me up with them girls."

Ricky: "When can you get me the marijuana by?"

Bobby: "As soon as I'm hooked up with them girls."

Ricky: "Okay, let me give you a call back in a few minutes. I'll give them a call!"

Ricky hung up with Bobby and gave Samantha and Holly a call.

Ricky: "Is this Samantha?"

Samantha: "Yes, who is this?"

Ricky: "This is Ricky!"

Samantha: "Hold on, let me put you on speaker."

Samantha (to Holly): "It's little Ricky, Holly."

Holly laughed with Samantha.

Samantha: "What are you calling for?"

Ricky: "I was wondering if you could do me a favor?"

Samantha: "What's the favor, Ricky?"

Ricky: "I was wondering if you can go on a date this weekend with a friend of mine named Bobby?"

Holly: "Tell Ricky we don't want any shortcomings."

Holly laughed.

Ricky: "I heard that, that's not funny. But I have this friend and I think he's well-to-do. You might even remember him from the movie theater. He was sitting behind us."

Samantha: "Yeah, we remember him! He was kind of cute! What do you think, Holly, should we do it?"

Holly: "We don't have anything going on this weekend. If he is willing to take us out to eat and a movie, sure, I'm up for it."

Ricky: "Okay, thanks! I'll give you his phone number. I'll call him and let him know it's on for Saturday night."

Samantha: "It's not that we don't like you, Ricky, but you need to grow up."

Samantha and Holly laughed.

Ricky: "That's not funny, and you could say I'm an old man now. But I guess you'll never know."

Ricky called Bobby back.

Ricky: "Hey there, Bobby!"

Bobby: "What did you figure out, Ricky? Is it a go, did the girls say yes?"

Ricky: "Yes, it's a go, under one condition, you will have to buy them supper and a movie."

Bobby: "Oh yes, thank you, Ricky! I'll get you the marijuana as soon as possible. Consider I owe you another favor once I hear from them. Or you could give me their phone number too so I can call them and set up the time for Saturday night."

Ricky: "Give them until the end of today to call you. And if they don't, here's their phone number so you can call them."

Ricky hung up the phone. The next day after work, Ricky went to an office supply store and purchased some small white foil-lined bags, which look like tobacco bags without a label. Later that night, Ricky got on the computer and designed the bag label. Then he printed the four bags out. Bobby had dropped off that evening one ounce of marijuana that was divided into four bags.

It was now Thursday night of the concert at the Great Jones County Fair where Nickelback was performing. Jimmy and Ricky had found a picnic table on the north side of the beer tent. They were sitting there waiting for the two biker guys to show up.

Biker Guy Number 1: "Hello there, you must be Jimmy and Ricky?"

Jimmy: "Yes, have a seat please!"

The biker guys then took a seat next to them on the same table.

Biker Guy Number 1: "My name is Hawk, and this is Hank. Good to meet you!"

Ricky: "Hi!"

Then Ricky handed Hawk and Hank a bag. Hank opened the bag and smelled what's inside.

Hank: "Wow, this smells like some good marijuana. Why did you give me this?"

Ricky: "So we can smoke it here, why else?"

Hawk: "I don't think that's a good idea. I can't afford to go back to prison, I'm on probation."

Ricky: "Trust me, you'll be fine. Read the label."

Hawk and Hank read the label. Then they laughed.

Hawk: "Is this real, it's not marijuana?"

Ricky: "Oh, it is, but trust me on this one."

Hawk, Hank, Ricky, and Jimmy all rolled up a joint. And then they lit it up. They were just smoking it, like it was just a rolled cigarette. The people around them were all asking questions and wondering why they were smoking marijuana at the beer tent. Then two officers came over to them because of the curious smell. One of the officers was Wayne.

Wayne: "Now, Ricky and Jimmy, you know you can't smoke marijuana in public, plus, it's illegal to have."

Ricky: "Wayne, it's not marijuana. It's weed!"

Wayne: "That's the same as marijuana!"

Ricky: "Trust me, read the package. I got it from Smoking Moz in Cedar Rapids. Anyone can get this."

Wayne: "It says on the package!"

The package had a big marijuana leaf, with "weed" written across it.

Wayne: "This is not marijuana. It may smell like it, look like it, even taste like it."

Wayne and the other officer were stumped with the smell and look of the contents inside the package, but the package had a surgeon's general warning on it and a contact address of where it was made. Everything on the package seemed to be legit.

Wayne: "I will just have to see and try it."

Ricky: "That's no problem, we will roll you one. Heck, we will roll you ten of them so you can pass them around to your friends."

Wayne: "So you say this is not marijuana?"

Ricky: "Yes, this is weed, not marijuana!"

Wayne and the other officer had left Ricky, Jimmy, Hank, and Hawk alone while they were smoking their dubies.

Hank: "Well, I can see you guys are pretty legit. Not bad for the stunt you pulled off with the marijuana."

Hawk: "We have the trucks that you ask for sitting at Marty's gas station, here are the keys."

Jimmy: "Was there anything else, like the paperwork on the trucks so we can register them?"

Hawk: "We have an envelope that is sealed."

Hawk pulled out of his pocket a yellow envelope.

Hawk: "It must have the paperwork inside it and whatever else you need. Amerio gave it to us to hand to you, which you can see it is still sealed, we haven't opened it."

Jimmy: "Nice, so where are you guys from?"

Hank: "We're from Chicago and belong to a biker club called the Gypsies. We do special favors for Amerio."

Ricky: "The Gypsies. How big is that club?"

Hank: "It's about a hundred bikers in this club."

Ricky: "Cool. We are Ace Services and we have fourteen employees. Me and Jimmy are co-owners!"

Ricky, Jimmy, Hawk, and Hank sat around smoking, communicating to one another, and enjoying the Nickelback concert.

Wayne and the other officer went to the front gate of the beer tent. They communicated with a couple of the other officers there. They lit up a rolled joint and began smoking it.

Gate Officer 1: "Are you kidding me? You're smoking marijuana on duty, in front of the public, Wayne."

Wayne: "This is not marijuana, it's weed!"

Gate Officer 2: "Isn't weed the same as marijuana?"

Wayne: "Trust me, I read the package that it came in, it smells like marijuana, it looks like marijuana, and it even tastes like marijuana. But it's not marijuana."

Gate Officer 1: "If that's the case, give me one and I will try it."

The gate officers then started smoking some of the rolled joints. Before long, the other officers roaming the tent and the fairgrounds joined in with the smoking of the joints. They pulled up a picnic table to sit next to the gate, which then they were all having fun and joking around. They forgot about the gate and why they were there for. Then there was a fourteen-year-old boy who walked up to them with a beer in his hand.

Fourteen-year-old Boy: "Would you like me to get you guys a beer?"

Fairground Officer: “No, sir, we’re on duty, we can’t drink. By the way, how old are you?”

Fourteen-year-old Boy: “Old enough to drink, my ID was checked when I came in. I just look young and a little short for my age.”

Wayne: “Well, enjoy the concerts, sir!”

Fourteen-year-old Boy: “Ohhh, I will and I can see you guys are having a good time as well. Do you by any chance have one of them cigarettes for me?”

Wayne: “Sure, I can always get more, here you go!”

Wayne and the other officers finished the concert at the beer tent. They went home and slept off the high they had. The next day, Wayne realized he was tricked. But he remembered giving a young kid a joint, so Wayne chose not to do anything in fear of losing his job.

It was Saturday, August 19, Scott had a brainstorming idea. He was thinking about all the questions that people have asked him about the new world order, so he wrote down on the computer the questions that the people have asked, then he answered them accordingly. He wanted it to be filmed and placed on YouTube for the American solar eclipse which was on Monday, August 21. The video went like this.

Scott: “Questions asked in reference of the second coming and the new world order. First question is from Todd and Stevie, in reference to feeding the economy with money. Asking how it could be possible to feed the world with money you make out of thin air, there won’t be any value content to it. One thing is that all nations will be together as one. Second off, there will be a fixed rate on all or maybe partial commodities depending on what the people decide. For instance, let’s say a gallon of milk costs four dollars and you say there is a tariff put on it so it can’t exceed \$4.40 for a gallon of milk or 10% from year to date governed by the government per county or district that is set up. So the retailer has to be careful on what prices they list because it will be governed and fined if not in compliance. This is to secure the value of the dollar, coin, token, or credit for whatever you make the currency as for this new world. There won’t be any taxes federal, state, or local, which will allow businesses to thrive. The businesses will have to follow the guidelines, which the government will set to allow a solid economy. After time the economy will not fluctuate much. People are to be looked at and taken care of as if they were kings and queens of this world, that’s what we can have.”

It was now Monday, August 21, the American eclipse day. Sondra and Scott went out to Scott’s father’s farm and filmed the questions that Scott had written down. It was a cloudy day, then they came back home, and Sondra placed it on YouTube. Later that night, Scott, Sondra, Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason were sitting around in the living room and were watching the YouTube video on TV. What they notice amazed them!

Jason: “Did you guys see what I saw? I saw the sky lit up a couple different times when you were speaking, Dad.”

Scott: “Yeah, interesting, isn’t it! It’s like God was speaking through my message to the world.”

Ricky: “Let’s rewind that and play it again. All the times it was lit up happened in the first five minutes of the ten-minute video. I think it’s a very interesting and excellent video you made there, Scott.”

Jason: “The first time I noticed was for county or district that is set up.”

Jimmy: “It also lit up when you said dollar, coin, token, and credit. And I also saw it when you said twenty-year retirement plan.”

Sondra: "I saw it lit up when you said cost-of-living allowance."

Scott: "So it's county or district set up, dollar, coin, token, credit, then twenty-year retirement, and last but not least, cost-of-living allowance. That really is interesting, they are the main points that are addressed to the world about the new world order that was mentioned."

Jimmy: "Isn't it in the Bible when they speak of the eclipses and the blood moons that the chosen one is soon to follow?"

Scott: "Yes, it is. I believe I'm the chosen one to set forth the new world policy."

Sondra: "If you're the chosen one or Messiah, that makes me Queen Elizabeth."

And Sondra laughed.

Scott: "Well yes, you would be of God's royal family. So it would make you a queen."

Scott, Sondra, Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason watched the video a few more times to see if they could find any more lightning in the sky. But the four times was all they saw it.

Chapter 4

It was later on during the week. Ricky decided to give Laverta a call to see how her evening with Jermaine went.

Ricky: "Is this Laverta?"

Laverta: "Yes, is this Ricky?"

Ricky: "Yes, I was curious to find out how your evening with Jermaine went?"

Laverta: "Oh, it was great. He took me to Happy B's to eat instead of bowling. We both ate steaks and we had a great conversation. We really hit it off! I am so happy you set me up with Jermaine. He is so great more ways than one if you know what I'm talking about. We then went to the movies where we watched a comedy. Then we were so close and I felt so good that I invited him over to my place. Before you know it, we were like teenagers experiencing love for the first time. I know I shouldn't have, but I fell for his charm and his romantic ways. So we did it! It was so fantastically great, I've never had an experience so great and had never climaxed so extreme."

Ricky: "Wow, so you really like him now?"

Laverta: "Yes, you could say we fell in love. We saw each other every night this week and we're constantly doing the nasty, but it's like I can't get enough of him."

Ricky: "So what about us?"

Laverta: "Well, you're a nice guy and all, but I think I'm happy with Jermaine. But I owe you a big one for hooking me up. If there's anything I can do for you, just let me know."

Ricky: "Well, actually there is!"

Laverta: "What can I do?"

Ricky: "It's a pretty big request, but I think you can do it. I will need DOT ticket books from New Mexico, Colorado, Texas, Oklahoma, Kansas, Missouri, and Illinois. Do you think you could do this for me?"

Laverta: "Why would you need them for?"

Ricky: "It's hard to explain. But there's more, I also need you to give me all the officers' names and badge numbers that would be on duty during the day and night from each state from each weigh station. We're thinking there may be thirteen stations along the way. But maybe there's a better route we could take. So if you could do this for me, it would be great. Make sure you place the officers that are with each scale together for day and night shift."

Laverta: "It sounds like you're up to something no good. But since I owe you a favor, I can probably achieve this for you since I have access to the DOT computer. But it might take a while. You're asking for quite a bit of information. Remember if any questions arise about this, you don't know me."

Ricky: "Who did what? I don't know what you're talking about. How did we achieve this information? We got it from a fairy, you could say."

Laverta: "That's like it! I still think you're a nice guy and please don't get into any trouble."

Ricky: "If you do what I ask, there should be no trouble. And thanks a lot, Laverta, you're so sweet. I really like you a lot as a friend. Make sure you tell no one about this. How long do you think it'll take you to get the information then?"

Laverta: "I tell you what, in two to three weeks, I will give the information in a sealed envelope to Jermaine to give to you. To get the ticket books may raise a red flag though for other states. But I think I can do it and I will place them in envelopes as well to give to Jermaine."

Ricky: "Thanks, Laverta, and don't forget, if you need a friend to talk to from time to time, give me a call. I'm always there to help you out in any way I can."

Ricky then hung up the phone with Laverta and called Jimmy to let him know it's on for the information that he requested.

Jimmy had received a phone call from the city administrator of Marion. That individual had asked if they could move a large boulder from Hawkeye, Iowa, to Marion and place it at the entrance coming in from Highway 151.

Jimmy: "What size of boulder is this?"

City Administrator: "It's fairly good size! I would say it's about eleven foot tall, twelve foot wide, and about twenty foot long."

Jimmy: "I'm not sure if we can haul that, but I will check into it. Is there a place and time that you can show me where it's at?"

City Administrator: "Just come down to the office tomorrow about one o'clock and then I'll drive you to show you where it's at. It's about an hour and a half drive."

Jimmy: "Okay, I'll be there tomorrow. What's your name so I know who to contact?"

City Administrator: "My name is Don Johnson."

Jimmy: "I'll bring somebody else with me, but I'll see you then."

Jimmy had called Ricky and asked if he could go with him the next day to check out the boulder in Hawkeye, Iowa. Ricky had given a call to Todd that works in the north store, which was his day off, to see if he could come in and run deliveries for the south store. There was no problem; Todd had said yes.

The next day came; Jimmy and Ricky went down to the city administrator's office and talked to Don Johnson. They took off and headed to Hawkeye where the boulder was located. It was out in a farmer's field about a half mile from a gravel road; the rock was huge. Jimmy knew this to be quite a task to complete.

Ricky: "We can't do this; it's too big to move."

Jimmy thought about this. He knew the rock would be heavy, almost too heavy to carry on the road. But he thought about it and figured he could probably do it if the price was right.

Jimmy: "Well, Don, you're not asking of a simple task here. This will take mega resources to move. I would need an excavator, probably two cranes and at least an eight-axle trailer to put the boulder on. Not only that! I need to get approved by the state for a permit to move heavy loads on the highway."

Don: "Well, I can try to get the moving permit as soon as possible. What do you think you would charge if you did do it? And when can you get it moved? We would like it there as soon as possible."

Jimmy: "Well, just off the top of my head, I will tell you that I would need at least \$100,000 to relocate the boulder. I should probably be able to move it within a month. Ricky, figure out approximately what the weight would be on the boulder."

Ricky did some computations with the size of the boulder.

Ricky: "It's approximately 80 ton. I figured it to be about 10' x 11' x 20' and took the formula of 150 pounds per cubic foot. Then I divided it by the amount of a ton."

Jimmy: "They should be fine to carry it on the highway if it's 80 tons. But I'm not sure if you can carry much more than that on an eight-axle trailer."

Don: "Well, I'll go back to the board of Marion. We have a meeting tonight to see if they'll allow \$100,000 to move the boulder. I'll let you know tomorrow if it's a go for \$100,000."

Jimmy: "We will need half of it up front before we will attempt to move it."

Don: "I'll let that be addressed in the meeting, and I will give you a \$50,000 check if it's approved. And you said you could do it in less than a month, correct?"

Jimmy: "Yes, correct!"

Don, Jimmy, and Ricky had left Hawkeye to go back to Marion. Jimmy was thinking about all the problems that may occur trying to move the boulder. One thing that he thought was good; it had clay soil and it's been dry for most of the summer and the ground was harder in the fall. He also realized there were new constructed bridges along the way which had no weight restrictions on them.

Later that evening, Jimmy went over to Melanie's house to hang out. While he was there, he was playing with Zachary and having a good time with Melanie.

Jimmy: "Melanie, I was wondering if you could do me a favor. It would only be for a short time. But I need you to make a duplicate registration for the trucks we just purchased. We will need two registrations with the same plates but two different vin-numbers of each truck."

Melanie: "Why do you need this, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "So we don't get detected while carrying an illegal substance. I can't tell you all the details, but it pays well for doing the job. I would give you \$50,000 if you could do this for me."

Melanie: "I could lose my job if they found out I made a duplicate registration. But I'll see what I can do, because I love you and I have faith in you."

Jimmy: "Later, I'll go back into the courthouse and say that I lost my registration and I need another copy, for it to get straightened out and then you wouldn't get in any trouble."

Melanie: "Please don't get in trouble, I need you. You're the best thing that's happened to me besides my child."

Jimmy: "If everything goes as planned, there shouldn't be any problems."

Jimmy then left Melanie's house that evening. The next day then came and Don had contacted Jimmy on the phone.

Don: "This is Don! Is this Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "Yes, this is Jimmy! What did you figure out at the meeting?"

Don: "It's a go. They decided on it and accepted the hundred thousand dollars to move the boulder. You can pick up your check anytime you like. It'll be sitting at the city's administrator's office."

Jimmy: "I'll try to get the rock moved within two to three weeks, but it might take a little longer, it for sure will be done within a month."

Later that week, Jimmy had made some calls. First call was for an excavator to be delivered to Hawkeye so he could dig the ends of the boulder to place cables which can be used to lift the heavy rock. Then Jimmy had called a place in Waterloo about an eight-axle tandem trailer and semi for the job. He had set the move for the second week in September. He also called a crane company in Cedar Rapids to see if he could get two large cranes that can lift eighty tons for that date.

Scott, Sondra, Jimmy, and Ricky were sitting around the house discussing what they needed to do with the two new trucks they got. Jimmy suggested they could use the two new trucks for furniture delivery.

Scott: "We could check the paper to see if there is any furniture stores looking for a delivery service."

Sondra looked in the paper and noticed there were three stores in need of a delivery service.

Sondra: "We have three stores looking for delivery service. One of them is Top-Notch Furniture. Another one is We Are Appliances & More store. And a third store is Soft and Firm Mattresses."

Jimmy called the three stores and discussed what the rate was for local and out-of-town deliveries. He also let them know he could start delivering on October 15. Top-Notch Furniture and We Are Appliances & More accepted right away to the terms and wanted them to deliver as soon as they could or by October 15. Soft and Firm Mattresses said they would let him know within a week if they would like them to be their delivery service.

Ricky: "We will need more than three stores to keep two trucks running."

Jimmy: "All in time, we'll get more!"

Ricky: "And Soft and Firm Mattresses may not accept us. They said they ran about five deliveries a day. Didn't you say, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "Yeah, they did say that! But let's find out in time to see if they want us or not."

Scott: "Sondra, may I ask you if you can continue to look at the paper each day to find out if there's any more delivery services looking for delivery?"

Sondra: "Sure, I can do this!"

Jimmy: "Mom, you're the best. You do the payroll and all the legal mumble jumble that we have, and you look out for everything we do. Thank you!"

Scott: “And what about me, Jimmy?”

Jimmy: “Well, you are good too, Dad. It’s just that I see you more every day. Trust me, I sure appreciate both your help, matter-of-fact. I appreciate everyone who helps in this business and my faithful partner, Ricky.”

Ricky: “Well thanks, Jimmy, and Mr. and Mrs. Chally, I appreciate your hospitality that you give me. I owe you all big time!”

Jimmy: “Mom, I will need you to contact the two individuals that we told that we may hire in the future. See if they would like to do the furniture delivery for us, I believe it was Marty and Chester.”

Sondra: “I’ll give them a call yet tonight to find out how many I need to place in the paper for help.”

Jimmy: “Thanks, Mom!”

Sondra called Marty and Chester; they were both excited to work for Ace Services. Then she placed an ad in the Cedar Rapids paper for two to-do deliveries for furniture.

Within a couple of days, the job positions were filled. Their names were Justin and Freddie, both with CDL license and a good resume.

Jimmy went down to this city administrator’s office and picked up the \$50,000 check. He told Don that they were going to move the boulder on September 15 and everything was in place. All he needed was the moving permit made out to Ace Services from the state. Don assured them they’ll get the permit within three days.

It was the big day of moving the boulder. Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason were all at the site in Hawkeye at the farmstead where the boulder was sitting. The semi with trailer, the excavator, and the two cranes were there as well. The excavator dug out five to six feet on each end of the boulder so they could place heavy cables for the cranes to pick up the boulder. The cranes were then put in place to lift the boulder. The truck and trailer was up along the side of the boulder. The cables were attached to the cranes. They attempted to lift the boulder equally at the same time. The two individuals that were running the cranes stopped as they had lifted the boulder about five feet in the air. They stepped out of the cranes and approached Jimmy.

Crane Operator 1: “Sir, I’m not sure if you know this, but this boulder must weigh more than eighty tons. My weight gauge on the crane went into the red. And this is an eighty-ton crane.”

Jimmy: “Ricky, did you hear that?”

Ricky: “Yeah, I heard, it should weigh roughly eighty ton. I sat there and figured it myself, I took the height minus a foot or two times the width minus a foot or two and the length of twenty foot, times it by 150 pounds per cubic foot and divided it by 4,000 pounds.”

Jimmy: “Where did you get the 4,000 pounds from?”

Ricky: “That is a ton, isn’t it?”

Jimmy: “No, a ton is 2,000 pounds.”

Ricky: “Ooops, I guess I figured it wrong.”

Crane Operator 1: “What would you like us to do?”

Jimmy thought for a moment and knew it would be a big challenge. But also knew he promised Don he would get it done. He figured maybe, just maybe, he wouldn't see any DOT to pull him over to scale the trailer. And he also figured that most equipment is rated for half the weight of what it can actually haul. So he made the decision to go ahead and place it on the trailer.

Jimmy: "Go ahead and place it on the trailer."

Semi Driver: "I'm not sure that's a good idea."

He looked at Jimmy and Ricky.

Jimmy: "I think we'll be okay!"

Semi Driver: "You do know it's like a dollar per pound that you're over on the weight, if you get scaled. Plus any damages you do to the road."

Jimmy: "Well, let's just hope we don't get pulled over."

The cranes lowered the boulder onto the semitrailer and fastened the straps. The semi went to pull the heavy load. The rear tires of the semi began to slip in the dirt, so they had to figure something else out. They decided to hook the excavator to the front of the semi to help out in pulling the heavy load through the farm field. The semi had left tracks all the way to the gravel road in the farmer's field about six inches deep. Once they got to the gravel road, they disconnected the excavator to see if they can travel on the gravel road without slipping.

The semi-tractor and trailer was able to pull the load on the gravel road, which was leaving three- to four-inch ruts in the gravel from the tires. The tires looked as if they were half inflated. They traveled another mile until they got to a hard-surfaced road. Everything was going fine. The highway if it already didn't have cracks in it did now. Everything was smooth going with the pace vehicle leading the way with its amber lights on, while Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason were following. They had made it all the way to Highway 13, which was at the edge of Marion, when a DOT car then decided to place its lights on to pull over the heavy load. They stepped out of the vehicles and walked up to the officer.

DOT Officer Danny: "Who's in charge here?"

Jimmy and Ricky approached the officer.

Jimmy: "I am, what may I do for you?"

DOT Officer Danny: "Well, I'm a guessing you're overweight. Do you have your permit to carry this load?"

Jimmy: "Yes, I do!"

He handed over the permit to the officer.

DOT Officer Danny: "This permit says eighty ton and it's authorizing you to travel from Hawkeye to Marion."

Jimmy: "We're almost at the destination! We just have to go to the edge of Marion on Highway 151."

DOT Officer Danny: “Do you realize the damages you’re doing to the road? And I’m guessing you’re at least twenty ton over your weight. That would be at least \$40,000 if I scale you. What do you have to say?”

Jimmy: “Come on, give me a break today! We are doing this for a good cause. This is going to be the new entrants sign to Marion from Highway 151. The city asked me to haul it for them.”

DOT Officer Danny: “I see, maybe just maybe there is a way. Do you have any ideas?”

Jimmy: “Maybe I can bribe you with paying you \$10,000.”

DOT Officer Danny: “If I scale you, it’s going to be \$40,000 or more you will have to pay to the state. I’m thinking more like half of what I guess, let’s say, \$20,000 and I’ll pretend this never happened.”

Jimmy: “Okay, I don’t have that much cash on me right here. How would you like that? Would a check be okay?”

DOT Officer Danny: “Yes, a check would be okay if we can call the bank ahead of time to make sure it clears.”

Jimmy called the bank and handed the phone over to the DOT officer Danny. He asked if the \$20,000 check would clear the account if he took it to them today. The bank said yes, the check would be fine. The DOT officer accepted the check.

Jimmy: “One more request if you could please?”

DOT Officer Danny: “What’s that?”

Jimmy: “If you could please, would you lead us to our destination so we don’t have to acquire any more DOTs?”

DOT Officer Danny: “I suppose I could do this! I appreciate the business, maybe I’ll see you again sometime to do more business.”

Jimmy: “Thanks!”

They continued on their way with the DOT officer leading, then the pace car, the tractor, and the trailer with boulder on it and then Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason in the pickup behind. They made it to their destination on Highway 151. They turned in and had experienced the same problem once they approached the dirt. They had to wait for about a half hour until the semi with the excavator had arrived. Once the excavator arrived, they hooked it to the front of the semi and pulled it into location. The cranes arrived on semis and were unloaded also then put into place.

They hooked up on the boulder and placed it accordingly to where it would be very visible from the on approaching traffic coming into Marion. Don had met them at the site to verify how it would be set. This had completed the delivery of carrying the boulder from Hawkeye to Marion. Jimmy was a little nervous and still concerned with the damage that he had done to the roads, hoping nothing would come of it.

Jimmy had paid the excavator, tractor, trailer, and the crane companies. All said and done, Jimmy had made a total profit of \$57,000 for Ace Services, which it could have been worse or went wrong to where it may have cost him more than \$60,000–\$70,000. Jimmy had figured that it was another one marked off in the books to be completed for the business.

It was another day of delivery at the north store. Todd was driving the flatbed that day. He was in the

yard getting loaded up by Randy, a yard worker. He had three deliveries on the truck. One of the deliveries was sixty small blocks, another delivery was twenty-two bags of insulation, and a third delivery was a small shed kit. They were mostly around north of Marion. Then there was one extra delivery thrown on the truck.

Randy: "Hold on there, Todd!"

He stopped and handed Todd a two-by-four.

Todd: "What's that, did you forget something on one of the deliveries?"

Randy: "No, I figure you might as well run this one too. It's a simple delivery in town, looks like it may be going to an apartment."

Todd: "Is that it, just a two-by-four?"

Randy: "Yeah, just the two-by-four!"

Todd: "Only if all the deliveries were like that or that simple. That individual must have a lot of money to spend forty bucks to get a two-by-four delivered."

Randy: "They must only have a motorcycle for vehicle."

Todd: "Aahhhaa, maybe, or their elderly!"

Todd had finished securing the load. Then he looked at the deliveries to be delivered and figured he would take the first delivery in town that was out of the way from the others, which was the two-by-four delivery going to an apartment complex. Todd had headed out the gate to the apartment complex. He parked the truck in the parking lot taking up four spots. He then got the two-by-four and noticed the paperwork said Apartment 204. He walked to the second floor and found Apartment 204; he then knocked on the door. He looked at the paperwork to see what the name was. It was a strange name which he never heard of before. He heard a lady from a distance through the door saying, "Come on in." Todd opened the door and started to walk in with the two-by-four.

Todd: "I'm looking for a Miss Boottie!"

Miss Boottie: "Who?"

Todd: "I'm looking for and that is if I'm saying the name right, Iwannasome boottie!"

Miss Boottie: "AAAAAAAhhhhhhh, my stud has arrived! Please come in me, I mean come in the bedroom."

Todd went to where he heard the voice was coming from. As he entered the bedroom, he saw approximately a middle-aged woman that was nice looking but fairly thick. She had a really pretty face with long black hair and had a white robe on.

Todd: "Where would you like the stud at?"

Miss Boottie: "On the bed would be great, but if you like it on the side of the bed, that is okay as well with me."

Todd set the stud on the bed. He then noticed out the corner of his eye, the robe fell off the female. He

immediately turned and looked at her. He noticed that she had nothing on but underwear and she had huge jugs, which she was fine as can be for her size. He was immediately aroused; she grabbed his full attention as she was smiling at him.

Todd: "I don't know what you're thinking, but I don't think I can do this, what I think you're thinking of."

Miss Boottie: "Ohhhh, I think I'm looking at getting laid by a stud."

Todd: "It's not that I don't like you, Miss Boottie. I think you're beautiful. It's just that sometimes I have erectile dysfunction."

Miss Boottie: "I haven't had a man yet that hasn't been able to get it up, I will make it happen."

Iwannasome Boottie got down on her knees in front of Todd and unzipped and unbuttoned his pants then pulled out his shriveled thing. And within a matter of seconds, she went from stroking to sucking. Todd then had a tall salute, you could say.

Todd: "I still don't want to have sex with you though. I worry about diseases."

Miss Boottie: "Don't worry about that, I've got it covered."

She opened the dresser drawer and pulled out what you consider a zip line of condoms.

Miss Boottie: "What about now?"

Todd: "I suppose I could, just once. But you can't tell no one about this."

Miss Boottie: "That's more like it, my stud. I'll make sure you won't forget me."

She then took a condom and placed it over Todd's penis.

Miss Boottie: "Now ride me, you stud, you cowboy, you manly man."

And she pulled down her underwear while she's lying on the bed.

Todd and Iwannasome Boottie finished having sex on the bed. Then Ms. Boottie put her bathrobe back on and Todd pulled up his pants.

Todd: "There is one last thing I need to do before I go."

Miss Boottie: "What's that, do round two?"

Todd: "No, I wish I could though. No, it's just that I need you to sign the delivery form."

Miss Boottie signed the paperwork in the signature spot—"One nice stud" with a smiley.

Miss Boottie: "Well, Todd, my stud, if you ever want to do this again, just give me a call, my Number's on the paperwork. And my real name is Marcy Higgins."

Todd: "Don't be surprised if I don't call you quite often, Marcy. You were wonderful! And I just recently got over a divorce, so this makes it even greater."

Marcy had walked Todd to the door; she leaned forward and gave him a kiss and said thank you for making her day great. Todd left to continue his deliveries. All that day, Todd had a smile on his face from ear to ear.

Scott and Sondra were walking down the sidewalk. Viewing the stores and shops of the inner city of Cedar Rapids one afternoon, Scott happened to notice a unique shop window and sign that said “Special Psychic Healing & Readings.” Scott was thinking about why he was having all the visions he saw and that they were pointing to him of being the Messiah to save the world from destruction, so he looked at Sondra and back at the window of the shop. He then kindly asked Sondra if she would mind going in with him to do a reading.

Then they both went in. It was a unique shop with books on shelves, crystals and crystal balls displayed on multiple tables. As they walked to the back of the shop, there was a round table with the red cloth and crystal ball on top. As they got closer to the table with the red cloth and crystal ball, there was an old dark complected gray-haired gypsy-looking female that came from the back room through some beaded blinds covering the doorway.

Gabriel: “Hi, my name is Gabriel, what may I do for you today? Is there anything in particular you might want?”

Scott: “I was looking around your shop. It fascinates me with all the crystals. Do you believe the crystals have good powers?”

Gabriel: “Of course, crystals have good power to the beholder that holds them, and if you’re faithful to them, they will protect you. But I can tell you’re here for more than just crystals. You would like to know your future, am I correct?”

Scott: “Yes, you’re correct, I would like to have a reading done today if you could please.”

Gabriel: “Why don’t you have a seat at the table along with your wife if I’m not mistaken?”

Scott: “Okay, and yes, you’re correct, she is my wife.”

Gabriel: “Would you like to have a short reading or a long reading? I’m guessing you’d like to have a long reading, am I correct?”

Scott: “Yes, you are correct! I would like to have a long reading. To figure out where I stand in this world and what my future may hold.”

Gabriel: “Well, you came to the right place. Give me a second so I can get the cards to do the reading.”

Gabriel stepped out of the room to the back and then back to the table.

Gabriel: “I grabbed my most reliable deck of cards for you. This should be pretty accurate with what will come about in the near future. So don’t be afraid if you see something that you don’t like or like to hear.”

Scott: “Don’t worry, there is nothing that I’ll be afraid of that you could say or do.”

Gabriel: “Don’t be so sure of this. But the first question I want to ask you as you look into the crystal ball. I would like you to ask what you are here for today. And then why it’s so important to know? Remember you’re working and dealing with spirits. They know everything, so don’t lie.”

Scott: "I would like to do a reading to know if I'm the true Messiah, to know if I'm destined to save the world."

Gabriel: "Very odd of that question you ask. But I will do the reading for you to show what you're destined for."

Gabriel then placed the deck of cards in front of Scott.

Gabriel: "Now I would like you to place your hand over the deck of cards without touching them for about thirty seconds."

Gabriel shuffled the cards. Gabriel then lay out a pyramid-like formation of the cards, all upside down, until ten cards were laid of the fifty-two-card deck.

Scott: "Could you explain to me what that pyramid supposed to mean?"

Gabriel: "Patience, lad-de, I'll get to it. We will start with the bottom row first. This will explain a lot of what has happened and will show your strengths."

She flipped the four cards.

Gabriel: "Interesting, very interesting! It shows the lightning card for the wind and sky, and then it shows the fire card, and then shows the water card, and last but not least, the earth card."

Scott: "So what's that supposed to mean? Is that good or bad?"

Gabriel: "Well, it shows the four powers of the earth—wind, water, fire, and earth. So far it is a mysterious reading, I've never seen cards show like this especially in the fourth tier of the pyramid."

Gabriel flipped the next three cards.

Gabriel: "These cards represent your relationship with the surroundings. And I can see it is definitely most unique which I've never seen before. They are kindness card, friendship card, and the love card."

Gabriel flipped the next two cards.

Gabriel: "Very, very, very, very interesting. You just happened to pull the only two power of kingdom cards from the deck. One is a bishop of power and ministry, and the other one is a rook to protect."

Scott: "So how is my reading coming along so far? Can you tell me a little bit about it?"

Gabriel: "Well, what I can tell you as of right now. You are superior in power supposedly as far as it's telling me. The next card could mean that you are the Messiah if it's a king. Or if it's the death card, it could mean you're the Antichrist. Any other card is safe that you're a noble citizen."

Scott: "Oh please, oh please, let it be a king."

Scott crossed his fingers. Gabriel then flipped the last card.

Gabriel: "Wow, wow, wow, wow, it can't be! I've never seen anything like this before in my life. Of all the readings I've ever done, I have never seen nothing like this. You must be the Messiah, the spoken one to come about. It's a king, the only one that can hold this spot to be the Messiah. You must stay here for a

moment, I have to give you something.”

She stepped in the back room and got something off the shelf and returned to the table with what looked like a candy box.

Gabriel: “Now, Scott, this is saved for a special occasion just in case someone like you shows up in my shop. I made them fresh last week; this is a box of twenty-four chocolates so they appear to be. They’re very unique and something told me last week to make them for this special occasion. You must be the one destined to receive them. There are two layers of twelve with a paper dividing the two layers. All I ask of you to hold your reading to be true is to eat the top twelve chocolates. Some of the chocolates may not taste very good. Whatever you do, do not spit them out, it’s very important that you swallow everything. They’re not poisonous nor will they harm you. Some may taste like grapes, others may taste like nuts, others may taste like caramel, and there may be some crunchiness involved. If you don’t like the taste, just swallow. They’re supposed to represent the twelve tribes of Israel or also known as the twelve tribes of Judith. This will help you on your journey that is in front of you. Whatever you do, don’t break them open until they’re in your mouth. Whatever you may like to do with the other twelve, that is your decision. One other thing before you eat them, it should be late at night prior to going to bed.”

Scott: “Wow, I knew I was the Messiah, all the signs told me so. See, honey, Gabriel had done the reading and it proves that I’m the Messiah.”

Sondra: “It may just be a coincidence, honey. Don’t be doing anything foolish to embarrass me, like going around trying to heal people. Or being a preacher in a church speaking of what you think you know.”

Scott: “Oh, come on, baby! You know me better than that, I won’t. But someday you will see! When I change the world and make peace for all.”

Gabriel: “Now, some of that may not be a bad idea, Sondra. Scott, have you tried healing anybody?”

Scott: “No, but I did heal a colorblind man to see normal again when I was around.”

Gabriel: “You might just have more powers than you realize. You may want to work some of what you believe in healing. You just might be surprised with the spirits on your side what you can do.”

Scott: “I suppose you’re right. By the way, what do I owe you for today and the candy?”

Gabriel: “Nothing, it’s an honor meeting you. You are to bring hope to the world, that’s the payment.”

Scott and Sondra had left the gypsy shop and headed home. Once they got home late that evening after supper, Scott had told Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason the story of what happened earlier that day. Then Scott figured it was time to eat the chocolates. Scott bit into the first chocolate, and it tasted okay, not too bad. The second one tasted like caramel. The third one had a crunchy taste to it and kind of a bitter taste. Until all the chocolates on the top roll were finished. Some of them were really nasty tasting. Scott kind of had the feeling that some of them had bugs in them but did as Gabriel had requested him to do.

Scott: “Jimmy, Ricky, and Jason, would you like to have some of these chocolates?”

Jason: “Sure, Dad, give me one!”

Scott handed Jason a chocolate.

Jason: “That kind of looks like a large beetle that’s covered with chocolate.”

Jason took a bite out of the chocolate, leaving half of it in his hand. And then he looked down at the chocolate that he just ate from. He noticed a bunch of long silky-type worms with blackheads moving around in the other portion of the chocolate. He then spat the rest of the contents in his mouth out and rushed to the faucet to get some water to rinse his mouth out.

Jason: “Ohhhh, that’s nasty! It’s full of worms, maggots, you ate them chocolates.”

Ricky: “Ohh, that’s okay, I don’t want any, Scott. They’re all yours, oh yeah, you can have them. I don’t want them!”

Ricky and Jimmy began to laugh.

Jason opened up a few other of the candies, and there were all sorts of bugs, different bugs for each piece of candy, some had shells, some were like flies, others were like worms or maggots. Scott had seen what Jason had done with the candies and then he felt really sick to his stomach. He wanted to throw up, but something inside him said he just couldn’t if he was to be the Messiah.

And then it was like someone was shaking him and yelling out his name: “Honey, honey, honey, wake up, you okay? Honey, hello!”

Scott then woke up in a sweat, realizing it was all just a dream, disappointed in many ways for not having the reading for the chosen one but was glad he didn’t actually eat those bugs in the candies.

Jimmy called Amerio Lavechie on how they were coming along as far as doing a delivery from New Mexico to Chicago.

Jimmy: “Hi there. Is this Amerio?”

Amerio: “Yes, how are you doing? Who is this?”

Jimmy: “This is Jimmy from Cedar Rapids.”

Amerio: “How are you coming along, are you going to be ready in October?”

Jimmy: “Yes, I was just calling to inform you that we have the intrastate DOT numbers and the trucks are registered and have the location for pickup and drop-off. Everything is in order to run the delivery whenever you give us the date.”

Amerio: “Great, the product is sitting ready for pickup, how about the first Saturday in October, you be there ready in New Mexico at the address at, let’s say, 8:00 AM?”

Jimmy: “That’ll work, consider it to be done. We should arrive in Chicago at the bio lab address by Monday, let’s say, no later than 5:00 PM. That is, if everything goes as planned.”

Amerio: “I hope you know what you’re doing. You don’t want to piss off the boss. He’s got a lot of money on this. Your percentage is just chump change.”

Jimmy: “I’m assuring you it should go as smooth as ice.”

Amerio: “If not, you might be made into ice. So I hope you know what you’re doing. I do have faith in you though.”

Jimmy: "Talk to you later, thanks!"

Jimmy then hung up the phone with Amerio.

The north store had a delivery approximately two o'clock in the afternoon, for sheet rock to the first-floor delivery in Marion for new construction of a house. Curt was driving the flatbed for that day. One of the part-time guys came in early to help out with the sheet rock delivery. He was covered in tattoos and had piercings on the face and ears. There were ninety sheets of 4 x 12 sheet rock on the truck, strapped down and ready to go.

Curt: "Well, Richard, you ready to do this?"

Richard: "Na-noo-not exactly, but . . . we'll see, I-I-I'll give . . . eei-it a try."

Curt: "Well, it shouldn't be too bad, it's only ninety sheets to the first floor."

Curt and Richard were to get into the truck.

Richard: "I-I ain't go-go-going in . . . thee-ther. There ie-ice-is a spider, ao-on the see-ssss-seat."

Curt was in the cab of the truck. He saw the small spider on the seat and took his index finger and squashed it.

Curt: "There it's gone. Come on in, Richard."

Richard looked nervous but got in the cab. They headed out the gate, driving to their destination.

Curt: "Well, Richard, tell me a little bit about yourself."

Richard: "Woo-well, ya-you ca-ca-ca-can call me, de-di-de Dew-twister."

Curt: "So your nickname is Dew-twister, that's unique, and actually I suppose you would be considered Dick-Dew-twister."

Curt laughed.

Curt: "How did you get a name like that?"

Richard: "I-I-I was ii-in a rock band. Playing a b-baa-base ga-ga-ga guitar."

Curt: "Wow, a rock band. May I know the band?"

Richard: "Na-na no, pa-pro-probably . . . not. I-ei-it was ca-ca called the Silver Salutes."

Curt: "No, I've never heard of that, but interesting. What made you give up the band?"

Richard: "Yaa-yeo you ca-can . . . say I-I-I was u-u-using, ta-to many d-drugs. It co-caused ma-ma my stu-stu-stu-stuttering problem."

Curt: "Sorry to hear. Are you clean now?"

Richard: “Ya-ya-yes, fee-fo-for about a-a year.”

Curt: “Where you from?”

Richard: “Cla-Cle-Cleveland, Oo-Ohio a-rig-ently.”

Curt: “Never been there, but heard good things about that place. Is it nice or was it?”

Richard: “Ye-yes, v-e-aarr-y nice. But I . . . I had to le-lev-leave my f-fr-friends behind. Ff-for I cou-ld st-sta-start o-ov-over my life.”

Curt: “Well, that’s good, you seem like a nice guy.”

Richard: “Ta-tha-thanks.”

They arrived at their destination and started to carry the sheet rock in the house. After about five or ten sheets that were doubled up, Richard began complaining about his back hurting, so they had to split the sheets down to carry in singles. A construction worker stopped them to talk to Richard.

Construction Worker: “Hey there, I like your tattoo, that you have of the skull on your arm. My name is Henry, what’s yours?”

Curt: “You can just call him Dick Twister, I mean Dew-twister.”

Richard: “Th-the-thanks.”

Construction Worker: “Dick Twister or Dew-twister, very unique name either way. They also call me Bow.”

Curt: “Sorry, sir, but we must continue on this delivery, there are still a lot of deliveries yet to be run today.”

Curt and Richard finished carrying all the sheet rock into the house. They went back to the truck. Curt grabbed the paperwork from inside the truck. Richard got in on the passenger side of the truck to wait for Curt to get the signature on the paperwork. Richard was sitting in the passenger seat. All of a sudden, he saw thousands upon thousands of spiders coming from underneath the seat and started crawling up his legs, on his shirt, his neck, and his face. Richard immediately jumped outside the truck and started to brush his face, his head, shoulders, chest, and legs to remove the spiders. He was freaking out. Curt was coming back from inside the house and saw what he was doing. Curt couldn’t figure out what he was doing.

Curt: “What’s going on, Richard?”

Richard: “The-th-they’re all over me.”

Curt: “What’s all over you?”

Richard: “Spi-der-ss.”

Curt: “I don’t see any, you okay?”

Richard: “N-nn-no, I-I-I’m not. Yyy-ou . . . don’t se-see ttt-thh-em.”

It took Richard about five minutes to calm down but still believe there were spiders in the truck. And Richard made up his mind at that moment that this job wasn't for him. His back hurt, sore muscles, and with the vision he saw of the spiders, it made him quit the job.

Richard: "I-I-quit . . . I-I-I ai-ain't going back e-ea-in that truck."

Curt: "How are you going to get back to your car at the store? You need to get back in the truck."

Richard: "I-II-I'll call a-a taxi!"

Curt: "Okay, I suppose, if that's what you want to do, I'll let Jermaine know that you quit."

Richard: "Tha-th-thanks!"

Curt then took off in the truck to head back to the store and left Richard behind at the site.

It was October 4, the big day came, to set out on the journey to New Mexico. Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason met up at the house in Monticello. Jimmy had explained what was going on for their journey to everyone and all the details that needed to be known.

Jimmy: "Okay, everyone, this is the plan. We will be driving approximately 500 to 550 miles a day, eight-hour days, in the trucks, to get down to Anthony, New Mexico, and back. There will be logbooks in each truck to mark our hours and locations that we will travel to and from. There will be a bogus factory we will meet at to pick up the merchandise that we're delivering from in Anthony to Chicago. Jason, you will be driving your car behind the first truck in between the two trucks. Everyone should stay at least 500 to 1,000 feet behind each other, to and from the destination. You got that, Jason?"

Jason: "Roger that, and I realize that if you get an unexpected DOT with its lights on to pull you over, I will take one for the team and bump the car. Is that correct?"

Jimmy: "That is correct! If it's needed, your dad will call you, you don't have to answer the phone but look to see if the number is from your dad on your cell phone. But we really shouldn't come up with unexpected DOTs on the way down to Anthony. We will be staying overnight in three locations. The first location we will be spending the night at is Omaha, Nebraska. The second location will be Colorado Springs, Colorado, and the last location will be in Anthony, New Mexico. Everything should go as smooth as silk on the way down. I already have reservations for two rooms at each location that we'll be staying at. We will only be traveling on the main interstates. Any questions so far?"

Jermaine: "What are we hauling, drugs?"

Jimmy: "You could say, it's good stuff, but there's nothing to worry about, Jermaine."

Jermaine: "I don't want to end up in jail doing something foolish. But I'm a team player, and I'm thankful for the job you have given me. Just tell me that I won't go to jail for what we're doing?"

Jimmy: "I assure you that you won't. It's just that this load is confidential. We just cannot let the authorities see it. The first truck will have 1,500 moving pads in it, along with 16 pallets, 18 sheets 4' x 8' green treated plywood. The second truck will be completely empty. That's the truck you're driving, Jermaine, with Ricky."

Jermaine: "I don't understand why you would drive the second truck down to New Mexico with nothing

in it and return with nothing in it.”

Jimmy: “It’s just a decoy truck. You see both trucks will have a rear license plate and sticker of ACE 7. When we travel back to Chicago, we will run all the scales.”

Jermaine: “That doesn’t sound like a good idea. They will chase after you and pull you over.”

Jimmy: “That’s the idea. You will be in the second truck. They will pull you over and ticket you for skipping the scale. But once they check your cargo, they will realize it wasn’t a big deal. But what I need for you to do in the truck, Ricky, is to give a call to my dad. Tell him what the officer’s name was and time of the ticket given with mile marker. That way we will know and be prepared if a second DOT would choose to pull us over.”

Ricky: “I filled out the tickets with officer names for the states of New Mexico, Colorado, Nebraska, Iowa, and Illinois, for all the weight stations of the officers that work there. So you should know approximately what officer had written the ticket.”

Jimmy: “I saw that, it looks great what you did, and I’m sure it took quite a bit of time to sort and figure out which officers were at which scale for each of the tickets that we have with us.”

Jermaine: “How would you know which officers work at what scale, and what their names and badge numbers are? Are you God?”

Scott: “You could say something like that. We just know, we had a fairy help us out.”

Jason: “So what if two DOTs leave out-of-the-weight station and decide to pull you over?”

Jimmy: “That’s when your dad will call you. And you know what you have to do then.”

Jason: “Got it, okay. What if there was a third DOT?”

Jimmy: “That’s when I got to cross my fingers and hope my plan works if they check my truck. Any questions, are we ready to go?”

Ricky: “No questions, and yes, I’m ready.”

Jermaine: “I think we got this.”

Jason: “I’m nervous, but I think I’m okay.”

Scott: “Come together, let’s put our hands together. I’ll do a prayer for us on this journey: Dear God, please protect us on our long journey that we take today, being Wednesday and return on Tuesday. That we will have spirits protect us and look out for us, for that we don’t end up in any type of mishap, which could cause us problems in the near future. We thank you for the greatness of today and tomorrow and every day that you allow us to live in peace and prosperity. Amen.”

Jimmy: “Amen.”

Ricky: “Amen.”

Jermaine: “Amen, my Lord.”

Jason: "Amen. One last question! What if we need fuel?"

Jimmy: "When I notice our fuel gauge is at a quarter of a tank, I will give you, Jason and Ricky, a call to follow me into a gas station so we can fill up again. So I highly suggest if you have to go to the restroom, do it now and each time we stop. But if you have to go in between on our journey, just give me a call and we will pull into the nearest rest stop."

Jason: "Okay, got it!"

Jimmy: "There is one major concern that I do have. We will have to pass through a US border patrol checkpoint that is located in Las Cruces, New Mexico. Chances are I will probably be pulled off to the side to be inspected. If I fail this checkpoint, you can say the missions over. But I ask of you, Jimmy and Ricky, to try to stay at least six to seven cars behind going through the checkpoint. That way they won't pay attention to the license plates that are the same on the trucks."

Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, Jason, and Jermaine had gotten into their trucks and car approximately 8:00 AM to head out. They drove to Iowa City on Highway 1 until they got to Interstate 80 west. They were traveling approximately three to five miles over the speed limit on all roads. They made their destination stop to Omaha, Nebraska, approximately one thirty to two o'clock in the afternoon. Scott made notes of all the DOT stations along the way. They filled up their trucks for fuel for the next day. They then went to their hotel and parked the trucks. Jason wanted to see stuff around the city of Omaha. So they all decided to pile in Jason's car and drive around.

The next day came, they drove from Omaha to Colorado Springs, it was proximately an eight-and-a-half-hour drive. There once again Scott took notes of the DOT stations of where they were at to see if the information was correct on the tickets and to organize them. Jason wanted to travel around Colorado Springs to see the sights which they all piled in the car again. They spent the night in a hotel in Colorado Springs.

They left out bright and early at six o'clock in the morning. They arrived in Anthony, New Mexico, next to the border approximately 3:00 PM. Jimmy didn't realize the high-tech equipment that the border patrol had and that made him very nervous for the next day. Scott took notes again of the scales for where they had to travel. Once again, Jason wanted to travel around Anthony to see the countryside. They then spent the night in a hotel again.

The next morning, they met up with at the location of Custom Cast Company, in Anthony, New Mexico, by 8:00 AM. They backed the two trucks up to the docks. They went inside and were met by a gentleman named Chavez Garcia.

Chavez: "Welcome, gentleman! We've been expecting you! You're right on time, are you ready for the big move? I don't understand why you have two trucks though. There are only two crates!"

Jimmy: "Hi, Chavez, my name is Jimmy. I'm in charge of this today. One of the trucks is just a decoy. I will need to unload some things out of the truck prior to you loading the merchandise. Do you have two 3'9" wide x 3'9" inches tall x 4' long crates waiting for me, as I requested from Amerio?"

Chavez: "Ahhh, okay, and yes, we do. The product barely fit in the crates, but it's all there."

Jimmy: "I'll take your word for it. If it's short, you will have to deal with Amerio."

Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, and Ricky removed most of the contents out of the truck. Chavez then loaded the two crates down the middle of the truck, as directed by Jimmy. Jimmy then put the two-foot pallets on each side of the crates until they were level with the top of the crates. Jimmy then slid two three-quarter-inch 4' x 8'

plywood, along each side of the truck. He then stacked eight sheets side-by-side across the top of the pallets. Last but not least, he placed five sheets of three-quarter-inch 4' x 8' plywood, along the front of the pallets and crates. They then placed the moving pads over the top of the product and plywood. Then they stacked the back half of the truck with the rest of the moving pads.

Jimmy: "Well, that about does it. It's loaded. Thanks, Chavez, for your kind hospitality."

Chavez: "You're welcome! You are one brave individual to attempt this, that's a lot of product to carry across the border. And if they're suspicious of anything, they will unload the whole truck just to see what's inside."

Jimmy: "I realize that, but I think I'm safe."

Chavez: "Well, good luck! And have a safe journey!"

He patted Jimmy on the back.

Jimmy: "Thanks! Have a good one!"

Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason got in their vehicles and headed out on their journey. It was probably about forty-five minutes later when they came upon the US border patrol station. They were sitting in line waiting and were nervous wondering if the border patrol were going to wave them through were not.

Scott: "Now, Jimmy, pretend you don't have anything illegal in this truck. Also make it look like we're having a decent conversation to one another. And keep a smile and a happy face going through this checkpoint. Trust me you got this planned out, it will work, just believe."

Jimmy: "Okay, Dad, I believe you, we should be fine."

Scott and Jimmy appeared to be having a great conversation as the border patrol officers were looking for anything suspicious about the truck. After they passed the x-ray, radars, and heat sensors, as they approached the building with the glass windows, you could see the patrol officers looking at monitors. Then one of the officers signaled the one at the window to have the truck to be pulled off to the side for inspection. Jimmy then watched the officers as they guided him off to the side of the road. A border patrol officer walked up to the vehicle on the driver side.

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Sir, I will need your license and passport from both of you and your logbook. May I ask where you're coming from and where you're going to?"

Jimmy: "I'm coming from Anthony, New Mexico, from a delivery that I made yesterday, and we're going to be heading back home to Cedar Rapids, Iowa, in the next couple days."

Border Patrol Officer 1: "What was your purpose of business there in Anthony?"

Jimmy: "Well, we had a delivery of spices and condiments from Cedar Rapids to Hot & Spicy Sausages in Anthony."

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Do you have a receipt for the delivery?"

Jimmy: "Yes, just a second, let me get it."

Jimmy got it out of his clipboard and handed the receipt to the officer.

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Is there anything else I should be aware of before I take off to the office?"

Scott: "Tell him about the supplies you picked up yesterday."

Jimmy: "Yeah, there is one more thing. We stopped in to a moving supply company called Everything To-Do-With Moving in Anthony and picked up some moving pads and plywood."

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Could you give me that receipt as well?"

Jimmy handed the border patrol officer the receipt.

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Okay, give me a few minutes and I'll be back. I'm going to check out your information you gave me."

Jimmy: "Okay, thanks!"

Jimmy and Scott waited patiently.

The border patrol officer came back to the vehicle with a couple other patrol officers and two drug dogs. The border patrol officer walked up to the window of the truck.

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Sir, I need you and your partner to step down out of the vehicle."

Jimmy: "Sure, no problem! Does everything check out?"

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Well, we will find out. Your locations for delivery and pickup seemed to be legit. But we will need to do a routine drug check with the dogs."

They walked around to the back of the vehicle.

Border Patrol Officer 1: "I will need you to open up the back of the truck please?"

The other two border patrol officers that were with him took the drug dogs and lifted them up into the truck. The dogs began to sniff. But both dogs began sneezing relentlessly.

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Are you trying to cover something up here with some sort of spices all over the floor?"

Jimmy: "No, I'm serious, no, I'm not. But it was just that one of the bags opened up on us and spilled a little bit in the back of the truck prior to making the delivery or at the delivery."

The border patrol officer looked at the other two officers and happened to realize that he did have a delivery to Hot & Spicy Sausages in Anthony.

Border Patrol Officer 1: "Okay, I can understand that. But we will have to take out some of the contents to verify the load is not carrying any drugs."

Jimmy: "Sure, no problem, take out all the plywood and pads. You'll see there's nothing in there but what I say."

The other two border patrol officers began shuffling and handing the moving pads from the right side and

to the back of the truck then off of the truck so they could get to the plywood. Jimmy was nervous inside but tried his hardest not to show it. Once they made it back to the plywood that was stacked up, there were two straps holding the plywood secure to the front sides of the truck. But the ratchets on the straps were on the left side, the opposed side that they had cleared the pads from.

Border Patrol Officer 2: “Well, we made it all the way back to the plywood. It looks as if it’s stacked up accordingly, Brian.”

Border Patrol Officer 1 (Brian): “Well, this receipt says there are 133 sheets! Gene, go ahead and see if you can figure out how many sheets are in that location that is piled up, plus whatever he’s got stacked in front.”

The border patrol officer Gene did the calculations on his phone.

Border Patrol Officer 2 (Gene): “As far as I can figure, there should be two piles of 64 sheets to equal 128 sheets stacked. Plus however many sheets that is in front of the two piles.”

Gene went to the front of the truck and counted five sheets in front of the piles.

Border Patrol Officer 2 (Gene): “Looks like there are five sheets in front of the two piles of 64 sheets, so it does add up to 133 sheets.”

Border Patrol Officer 1 (Brian): “Okay, your receipts check out with the items you got in the truck. Okay, Gene and Tim, go ahead and place the pads back in the truck.”

They stacked the pads back in the truck.

Border Patrol Officer 1 (Brian): “Now, sir, you realize why we did a vehicle search on you, don’t you? The x-ray detectors from the side and underneath couldn’t see the contents in the front of the truck. May I ask you, sir, why you have quarter-inch steel on your bed of your truck?”

Jimmy: “Well, we had to have this truck lined with steel on the bed due to the factory that we haul for in Monticello, they use steel tubs. And they slide the tubs on the floor of the truck which tears up the wood.”

Border Patrol Officer 1 (Brian): “Well, it raised red flags, so we had to search the contents of the truck. But I can tell you this that everything checks out, so you’re good to go.”

The patrol officer handed the logbook, receipts, and IDs back to Jimmy.

Jimmy and Scott had taken off from the border patrol station.

Jimmy: “Wow, Dad, that was close, I thought we were busted for sure. We can laugh about it now. Everything’s good now, we just got the other twelve weight stations to clear.”

Scott: “I wouldn’t laugh about it too soon. You never know what could happen. Let’s just hope for the best and say our prayers that we didn’t get caught.”

All of a sudden, Ricky looked in the rearview mirror of the truck and had noticed there was a patrol car coming up behind them with its lights on.

Jimmy: “Oh shit, we’re busted! There’s a car coming up behind us with its lights on.”

Scott: "You shouldn't have laughed, let's be calm and see what the officer wants. Maybe it's no big deal, at least let's hope not."

Jimmy pulled off to the side of the road and patiently waited for the officer to come up to the window. Then Ricky rolled the window down to speak to the officer.

Border Patrol Officer 1 (Brian): "Hey, sir, I had found your driver's license on the ground and figured you might need it again. You must've dropped it right after I handed it to you, assuming you had it."

Jimmy: "Thanks, sir, that's mighty nice of you to chase me down. I appreciate it, thanks again!"

Border Patrol Officer 1 (Brian): "No problem, sir, we take care of our fellow Americans. You two have a great day and drive safe."

Jimmy: "You too, have a great day!"

Jimmy and Scott took back off in the truck.

Scott: "Nice going, Jimmy, that officer about gave me a heart attack, coming up to your window. I thought he was going to tell us to turn around and go back to the border patrol station."

Jimmy: "Yeah, I know, right!"

Scott: "I have to say, that was a good idea to line the front of the truck and the two sides with 4 x 8 quarter-inch steel. The radar detectors thought it was one solid load. X-ray scanners couldn't see the contents inside the box that you made with the steel."

Jimmy: "Something told me to do this. I don't know why, but I just did. And it wasn't voices!"

Scott: "And it worked out well from the Custom Cast Company having that table saw to cut the sides of plywood down one at a half inches, to square up the plywood. It appeared to be perfectly stacked."

Jimmy: "There is the other truck and Jason behind them on the side of the road."

Scott received a call from Ricky.

Ricky: "Wow, I was wondering if you guys would make it through the checkpoint, especially when the officers pulled you off to the side. I was thinking of giving you a call. But I didn't want to arouse suspicion."

Scott: "You did just fine, you made a smart move. So if you could just fall in behind us again, we will continue to the next checkpoint as planned."

Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason had continued on their journey. The next scale was close. That was a sigh of relief for them. They had made it to their destination in Colorado Springs and spent the night in a hotel that was reserved. Then bright and early the next morning, they left again on their journey. They had approached another scale on I-76 in Colorado and the scale was open. This was a test to see if their plan would work. Both trucks passed up the scale, then Jermaine and Ricky noticed a DOT pulling out of the station and headed for them. The DOT had put its lights on for Jermaine and Ricky to pull over, so they pulled over on the side of the road. The officer got out of his car and walked up to the driver's side window.

I-76 DOT Officer: "Do you know why I pulled you over, sir?"

Jermaine: “We were talking to one another, then I realized at the last minute I was supposed to pull in back there at that scale. But figured if I would have, I may have went off the road and caused an accident. I’m sorry!”

I-76 DOT Officer: “Could you show me proof of registration, insurance, and your ID please? I would like you two to step out of the truck and opened up the back? I will be right back, I’m going to check your credentials out.”

Jermaine and Ricky: “Okay, sure!”

The I-76 DOT officer went back to his squad car and looked up the information that was given to him. Everything had checked out. He then walked back to the back of the truck where Jermaine and Ricky were standing. Ricky had opened the back of the truck.

Ricky: “We also weren’t carrying anything, so we didn’t think it was such a big deal to skip the scale.”

I-76 DOT Officer: “Well, it is a big deal, I could see though by your record it’s clean. And I can also see you’re not hauling anything, so I will let you go this time with just a warning.”

Ricky: “Thank you, sir, that is mighty nice of you.”

I-76 DOT Officer: “You two have a great day and drive safely!”

Ricky and Jermaine: “You too. Thanks!”

The I-76 DOT officer pulled out after Ricky and Jermaine pulled out and followed them until the nearest turnaround. In the meantime, Ricky gave Scott a call.

Scott: “I see you got pulled over. Did everything go okay? Do you have the officer’s name, time, and mile marker?”

Ricky: “Yes, the officer’s name is Dennis Churchill and the time was 8:45 AM, mile marker 36. He didn’t even write us a ticket. And he also turned around, so I think you’re safe. Unless there’s another DOT officer sent your way. I suppose we’ll find out soon.”

Scott: “Thanks, that’ll work, let’s hope for the best.”

Scott sorted through the tickets for that scale and pulled out Dennis Churchill’s name. He placed the mile marker and time where Jermaine and Ricky were pulled over on the ticket. They continued on their way, and then they were on I-80 east. They knew they were safe from that scale, that they wouldn’t be seeing any DOT, which then the following four scales, two in Colorado and two in Nebraska, were closed. Jimmy and Scott were extremely happy about this, until they had passed Lincoln, Nebraska. This scale was open; once again a DOT officer came up behind Jermaine and Ricky’s truck. The DOT officer had pulled them over and walked up to the driver side window.

I-80 Nebraska DOT: “Sir, I will need your registration, proof of insurance, and license.”

Jermaine handed over the registration, proof of insurance, and license. Then the officer went back to his vehicle to check the credentials out. The DOT officer then came back to the vehicle and requested for them to open up the back of the truck. They opened the back of the truck for the DOT officer.

Ricky: “Sorry that we accidentally ran the scale. You can see we don’t have anything in the back of the

truck.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT: “Yeah, I can see, but I will still have to cite you with a ticket for running the scale. Give me a minute and I’ll be right back.”

The DOT officer went to his car, then wrote the ticket and returned to the truck.

I-80 Nebraska DOT: “Sir, I’ll need to have you sign this.”

Jermaine signed the ticket, then the DOT officer handed him a copy.

I-80 Nebraska DOT: “You two have a good day, and don’t be running no more scales.”

Jermaine: “I’ll try not to. And same to you, have a good day.”

Jermaine and Ricky noticed another DOT passing them up. As the DOT which pulled them over got into his squad car, Ricky gave Scott a call.

Ricky: “Scott, the DOT officer’s name is Stephen Suspenskie. The time he pulled us over was 3:47 PM at mile marker 395. There is another DOT on the way to you though, we just seen him pass us.”

Scott: “That’s good to know, thanks, Ricky.”

The Nebraska DOT officer caught up to them. He flipped his lights on. Jimmy and Scott pulled off to the side of the road. The DOT officer got out of his car, then walked up to the driver side window. Jimmy rolled his window down.

Jimmy: “May I help you, sir? I can’t figure out why you’re pulling me over, when I just got pulled over fifteen minutes ago.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT 2: “That’s like impossible. You couldn’t have got pulled over fifteen minutes ago.”

Scott: “Here, show the officer the ticket we just got.”

Jimmy handed the officer the ticket.

I-80 Nebraska DOT 2: “Okay, you two stay put, I’ll go back to my vehicle to check this out.”

The DOT officer looked at the ticket and noticed it was written by Officer Suspenskie, so the I-80 Nebraska DOT officer gave Officer Suspenskie a call on the radio.

I-80 Nebraska DOT 2: “Officer Suspenskie, come in. Over.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT 1: “This is Suspenskie. Over.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT 2: “I have a vehicle with a license plate of ACE 7, with your name on it, that you pulled them over about fifteen to twenty minutes ago, is that correct? Over.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT 1: “That’s correct, I cited them for running the scale. Over.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT 2: “It just seems strange, but okay, thanks. Did you check out the back the truck by chance? Over.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT 1: “Yes, they weren’t carrying anything. Over.”

I-80 Nebraska DOT 2: “Okay, thanks! Roger out.”

The I-80 Nebraska DOT walked back to the driver’s window of the truck.

I-80 Nebraska DOT 2: “Well, sir, I can’t figure this one out, but your ticket checks out. I don’t understand how you got a ticket from Officer Suspenskie when I had passed you in the truck with him. Maybe I need to take the rest of the day off. I feel I’m getting delusional over this matter and I just need to rest. But that’s enough of my personal problems. You two have a great day and drive safely.”

Jimmy: “We all get stressed out at times. I understand, it probably wouldn’t hurt to take the day off. You have a good rest of the day as well.”

Jimmy and Scott were relieved that it worked for them. They sorted a laugh at the situation that had evolved. Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason had made it to their destination in Omaha, Nebraska, and settled in for the night at their hotel.

The next day bright and early, Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason headed out on their last leg to Chicago. The first scale in Iowa was closed; the second scale that they came across was open. They ran it like usual. But there were no DOTs that came after them; this made them very happy. The last scale in Iowa was also closed. They were getting happier and happier that they only had two more scales left on the journey to get by. The first scale in Illinois was closed. Now they only had one scale left to worry about.

Jimmy: “Dad, just one more scale and we’re home free home.”

Scott: “Don’t get too excited, this could be the scale that stops us. Let’s just hope for the best.”

Jimmy: “I suppose you’re right. We’re not out of the clear yet, are we?”

Scott: “No, we’re not! I feel just as nervous as the border patrol checkpoint on this one.”

Jimmy: “We’re down to our last sixty miles. Just cross your fingers and maybe pray.”

Scott, Jimmy, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason came up upon the last DOT scale. They ran the scale like normal. Jermaine and Ricky noticed there were two DOT cars pulling out of the station, which were heading for them, with their lights on, so Jermaine and Ricky pulled off to the side of the road. One of the DOT cars pulled over with them. There was no time to call Scott and Jimmy to let them know there was a second car headed their way.

Scott had noticed the second car headed for them with its lights on. He immediately gave Jason a call. Jason saw that the first DOT had pulled over Jermaine and Ricky. He knew it was his time to shine. So Jason had let the other DOT get in front of him. Then Jason went to pass the DOT on the left side. Jason had answered his cell phone as the DOT officer glanced in his direction. Then Jason barely bumped the left side of the DOT’s car as if he were going to pass him. The DOT officer in the second car signaled for Jason to pull over, so at that time Jason pulled over to the right behind the DOT car. Jason saw the DOT through the rear window of his car that he was on the radio with someone. He suspected that he was calling another car. While Jason was on the phone with Scott or his dad, he said to be cautious and be prepared for a third car, then hung up the phone.

About five minutes later, Jimmy and Scott had seen a DOT car with its lights on, coming up behind them. They immediately pulled off to the right side of the road. There were two DOT officers that had come

up to the driver's side window.

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "Do you know why we pulled you over, sir?"

Jimmy: "Not exactly, could you tell me why?"

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "You ran the scale about ten miles back. Are you hiding something for the reason of running the scale?"

Jimmy: "No, we really didn't realize we ran the scale. We were having a conversation and listening to music, sorry, we weren't paying attention."

Scott was fumbling through six DOT officers for that station on the tickets that he had. He decided to go with one of them to see if he had any luck with letting the officer know they were just pulled over recently.

Scott: "Jimmy, let the officers know that we were just pulled over by I believe it was an Officer Miller recently."

The officers heard what Scott had said.

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "That's impossible. Officer Miller was relieved of his duties last week for taking bribes."

Jimmy: "Well, it was somebody who had pulled us over before the scale that you talk about, it was maybe twenty miles back. The officer was kind enough to let us go though. We were traveling a little over the speed limit."

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "That must've been a state trooper."

Jimmy: "Maybe you're right! It must've been a state trooper."

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "Well, anyhow, I will need your IDs, registration, and proof of insurance. I'll be right back after checking your information out."

Illinois DOT Officer 2: "May I ask what you're hauling? You're not hauling any contraband, are you?"

Jimmy (making a smartass comment): "What do you think we're hauling, a ton of cocaine? No, just kidding, we're hauling moving pads for the business and some plywood that we had picked up after a previous delivery."

Illinois DOT Officer 2: "Well, I would like you two to step out of the vehicle and open up the back of the truck."

Jimmy and Scott stepped out of the vehicle and went to the rear of the truck to open up the sliding door. The officer got up in the back of the truck and started moving pads from the right side until he got to the plywood. He saw that they were stacked up neatly in two piles with a few sheets of plywood in front. The other officer came back to the truck.

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "I did some checking on your registration and it doesn't make sense. It shows you have two vehicles registered under ACE 7. Can you tell me why that is?"

Scott: "Well, recently we took the plate from another truck that we got rid of. And we re-registered it to this vehicle."

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “So how many trucks do you have?”

Jimmy: “We have seven trucks for the business.”

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “Mike, go ahead and get the dogs out of the car and see if they can sniff out any contraband that they may be hauling. I’ll be right back, I’m going to make a call.”

Jimmy: “Is that really necessary? I tell you we’re not hauling any contraband and we just got the truck.”

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “Well, if it checks out, we will let you go.”

The Illinois DOT officer then went back to his car. He got on the phone and called the Jones County Iowa license and registration office.

Melanie: “Hello, this is Jones County license and registration, may I help you?”

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “Yes, ma’am, I have a vehicle pulled over and I checked into the registration and noticed there were two vehicles registered under the same plate. Could you tell me why this happened or what’s going on?”

Melanie: “Could you give me the license number please?”

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “Yes, the license plate number is ACE 7.”

Melanie pulled the license plate number up.

Melanie: “Ahh, yes, I see the problem. You’re correct, it does have the same number for two different vehicles. That was a mistake on our part. We were supposed to take one of the registrations off and we didn’t do that. I’m glad you brought that to my attention. It shows about two weeks ago they switched the vehicle out for the new vehicle. Just to verify the vehicle you got pulled over with the registration, could you give me the numbers please? That way you’ll know which registration for the plate is legit.”

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “Shouldn’t you know which license plate is what?”

Melanie: “Well, what if they were using the old vehicle on that plate.”

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “I suppose you’re right. The number is AJ2369 . . .”

Melanie: “Yup, I have that, thanks for pointing this out to us. Is there anything else you need today?”

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “No, that should do it, thanks. Have a good day!”

Melanie: “You too, thanks!”

Melanie hung up the phone.

The other Illinois DOT officer took the dogs in the truck. But the dogs started sneezing relentlessly because of the substance that was spread over the floor. The other DOT officer came back to the back of the truck and saw what the dogs were doing.

Illinois DOT Officer 1: “Could you guys tell us why the dogs are sneezing?”

Jimmy: "Well, we had a delivery of spices to a place in New Mexico. One of the bags from the delivery broke open in the truck. Sorry for the inconvenience that it's causing to your dogs."

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "Something seems awful fishy about you two. I can't quite pinpoint it, but I'm going to try and get to the bottom of it. Your registration checks out. But I would like to see your logbook and receipts for the contents in your truck."

Jimmy: "Sure, no problem!"

Jimmy went to the cab and grabbed the logbook and receipt.

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "I see it does show that you had a delivery to New Mexico to a Hot & Spicy Sausage. And the receipt shows you got 133 sheets of plywood in the truck, which was picked up in Anthony, New Mexico. Mike, go ahead and see if you can figure out how many sheets of plywood they have in the truck, will you?"

Mike figured out the count with the calculator on his phone.

Illinois DOT Officer 2 (Mike): "As far as I can see, and what I figured out, the count seems to be right."

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "They must've gone through the border control checkpoint, so, Mike, go ahead and pack things up. They seem to be legit even though I think or feel there's something wrong with this truck or picture. But, sir, I am going to have to cite you for not having a front license plate."

Jimmy: "We must've lost it on the journey. Can't you just give me a warning?"

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "You're lucky that's all you're getting."

He went back to the vehicle and wrote the ticket. Then he came back to Jimmy to have him sign it.

Illinois DOT Officer 1: "Well, you two have a great day and safe journeys."

Jimmy: "You two have a great day."

Scott: "I'm glad we got law enforcement like you checking everything out. You're doing a great job!"

Jermaine and Ricky had continued on their way after being pulled over. They had passed Jimmy and Scott on the side of the road. They continued for about another five miles and pulled off to the side to wait for Jimmy and Scott. Jimmy and Scott then continued on their way. Then about fifteen to twenty minutes later, Jimmy and Scott had passed them on the road and then Ricky gave Scott a call.

Scott: "How did you guys do back there?"

Ricky: "It wasn't too bad, they just cited us for running the scale. And how did you manage to pull that off without being thoroughly checked?"

Scott: "I'll just put it this way, God was on our side, you could say."

Ricky: "Well, I'm glad nothing went wrong. We should almost be home sweet home with this delivery, we only have about fifty miles left to our destination."

Scott: “We hope so, but I wouldn’t count our chickens yet, they’re not all hatched. Well, I’ll let you go for now, I’m going to give Jason a call.”

Scott hung up the phone on Ricky and called Jason.

Jason: “Hi, Dad, I’m sorry that I couldn’t help you out better. But I did what I could. Did everything go fine?”

Scott: “Yes, we survived, but I was sweating it! Just like at the border patrol checkpoint. How did it go for you with the DOT? Was the officer lenient?”

Jason: “No, he was very upset, he cited me with two tickets. One is for being on the cell phone while driving. And the other one was for reckless driving. Now I will have to have SR 22 insurance. I’m considered a high-risk driver now, which I’m not very happy.”

Scott: “Well, in all due time, that ticket will fall off your record. And I think we can handle the cost of the insurance, so you don’t have to worry about the payment of it.”

Jason: “That’ll work, thanks, Dad, well, we’re almost there. Let’s hope everything goes fine. Talk to you later.”

Scott: “Okay, thanks for trying, see you in a little bit.”

Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason had made it to the bio lab address in Chicago where they were supposed to go by four o’clock. They pulled into which appeared to be a big warehouse, and inside the warehouse, there were some loading docks, which someone had let them in through a big sliding door from the side of the warehouse—they were expecting them. Amerio was there and then walked up to Jimmy and Scott.

Amerio: “Wow, you pulled off the impossible. Amazing, you always seem to amaze me, Jimmy. Do you have the contents in the back of the truck?”

Jimmy: “Yes, we do! Do you have the money?”

Amerio signaled for a gentleman to come over to them with two black business briefcases.

Amerio: “As soon as I can see the product, these two cases are yours.”

Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason took all the contents, except for the two crates out of the back of the one truck. A forklift took the two crates and set them on the floor inside the building. Only Jimmy was with Amerio when he pried open the top of the two crates.

Amerio: “Looks good. You have succeeded. And those two briefcases are yours.”

Jimmy took the briefcases and opened them up on top of the crates.

Jimmy: “I’ll take your word that it’s all here.”

Jimmy had never seen so much money in his life.

Amerio: “It’s all there! Maybe in the future we can do some more business. I have one question, how did you get past the border patrol with that much cocaine?”

Jimmy: "You could say it's a secret. God was on our side!"

Amerio: "Well, thank you, until later!"

Jimmy: "Thank you as well for the business."

Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason had gotten into their vehicles and left the warehouse. They were then heading back to Monticello. Jimmy felt relieved that everything went so well. He then asked his dad a question.

Jimmy: "Dad, you were mentioning some songs a while back that when you were born point you out to be the Savior. Could you tell me a little bit about it or them?"

Scott: "Sure, the songs actually started just before I was born. But when I had the episode, they also were songs that were speaking to me of the becoming world or relationship with the second coming. They really increased after I had written the second half of the book that I published. It was of the episode back in 2006 and 2007. I was done writing the second half of the book at the end of 2012 and beginning of 2013. The songs really had increased since then, speaking of the second coming of the world and what I should do for the current day."

Jimmy: "So you're saying the music is speaking of what's going to come about and who you are as the Savior?"

Scott: "That's correct! Eventually it's meant to show the people how God acts and exists through everyone. We all have the God gene in us."

Jimmy: "So you're saying I have God in me?"

Scott: "Yes, that's correct. But I'll start with back in 1969, when the Beatles released a song called, 'Here Comes the Sun.' It speaks of a celestial body that comes each and every day. But if I was the Savior, you could also speak of here come's our son the Savior."

Jimmy: "Yeah, I know that song!"

Scott: "The second song, which I point out, doesn't seem like it speaks of me. But it does very much so. It was on the number one Billboard chart, it ran one week before my birthday and one week after my birthday. It was called 'Tears of a Clown' by Smokey Robinson and the Miracles. The reason why I say it speaks of me is because of my challenging life that I had. And if I was to be the Savior, you would think a joyous easy life would be set forth for me."

Jimmy: "Yeah, I can see that!"

Scott: "The third song is from George Harrison and is called 'My Sweet Lord.' It also was on the top of the Billboard chart for December 20, 1970. It came out one week after I was born. No one put two and two together back then, but for the future, it will be well-known."

Jimmy: "Yeah, interesting!"

Scott: "The fourth song that had come out around my birthday was called 'Joy to the World' by Three Dog Night. It actually came out Easter of 1971, between three to four months later. It also spoke in reference to the Messiah coming to save the world, which is supposed to bring peace and prosperity for everyone in the world."

Jimmy: "Yeah, I know that one too. It goes something like, 'Jeremiah was a bullfrog.'"

Scott: "Yeah, that's correct! But there's so much more to them songs I speak of."

Jimmy, Scott, Jermaine, Ricky, and Jason had made it back to Monticello approximately 11:00 PM that night. They chose not to stay in a hotel in Chicago but to get home instead. The next day, they all took off work to relax. Jimmy had gone to the courthouse to change the registration on the vehicle and requested a license plate of ACE 8 to be ordered for the truck. In the meantime, he was given a temporary plate. Melanie was happy to see Jimmy and that no problems had occurred. Later on that evening, Jimmy went over to Melanie's house. He brought \$50,000 with him to give to Melanie. Melanie was so happy to receive the money and to know that he was safe, that she gave him hugs and kisses and couldn't stop talking to him.

Soft and Firm Mattresses had called Jimmy to accept to the terms of delivering for them. They had about twenty deliveries to go out for delivery. October 15 was the date for them to start delivering, so Jimmy contacted the four drivers. Marty and Chester were to be set up for one of the trucks, and Justin and Freddie were for the other truck.

October 15 had come, and all four drivers took off to start delivering. Marty and Chester had the deliveries from Soft and Firm Mattresses. Justin and Freddie delivered for Top-Notch Furniture and We Are Appliances & More Store.

Marty and Chester had backed up to the Soft and Firm Mattresses dock. They loaded the truck with the twenty deliveries. They were about to take off to start delivering when one of the employees of the store addressed them.

The store employee Tommy showed the delivery statement.

Tommy: "Hey, Marty, I just want to let you know that you need to do this delivery first. The lady says if she doesn't get it early morning on the fifteenth, then she's going to cancel the order, so please do this one first."

Marty: "That's not a problem; sure, it's in town anyhow."

Tommy: "Thanks, try to call the deliveries before going to them or let them know during the day when you will approximately get to their location."

Marty: "Will do!"

Marty and Chester then left to go to the first delivery. It was off of Huntington Ridge Drive in Cedar Rapids. They arrived there approximately eight o'clock in the morning. They backed the truck up on the driveway. Then Chester opened the back of the truck. Marty went to the door and rang the doorbell. A nice-looking female with the blouse and skirt came to the door.

Marty: "Hi, ma'am, we're here to deliver a mattress to you."

Natasha: "Well, hi there! My name is Natasha, glad you came so early. I've been expecting you guys!"

Marty: "Well, we will get the mattress and bring it in. Just let us know where you want it."

Natasha: "Okay!"

Marty and Chester brought the mattress into the house. Natasha led them to the bedroom with the mattress.

Natasha: "Well, if you could, I would appreciate it if you can take the old mattress off the frame and set it aside. Then place the new mattress on the frame."

Marty: "That's no problem, sure, ma'am!"

And they took the plastic off the new mattress.

Marty and Chester removed the old mattress and set it along the wall and then placed the new mattress on the frame of the bed. Then Marty and Chester noticed Natasha unbuttoning her blouse. She was then sitting on the side of the bed.

Natasha: "How would you two like to break this bed in with me?"

Chester: "Are you sure you want us to break it in with you? You want us to have sex with you?"

Natasha: "Oh yes, I've always dreamed of having two men. But I don't want to be a sandwich. So you know what I mean."

Marty: "Well, I'm a little uncomfortable to show my junk to another man. And, Chester, if we do this, I don't want you touch on me or any anal."

Chester: "Trust me, I'm not into guys. I won't be doing that."

Natasha: "Well, if you like, you both can get naked and put a blanket over us."

Natasha lay on the bed and then pulled her skirt down. Marty and Chester dropped their pants and crawled under the blanket, one on each side of her.

Natasha: "Well, who would like to go first?"

Chester: "I would, is that okay, Marty?"

Marty: "I suppose that's fine with me."

Chester mounted Natasha from the top and began to have sex with her. Less than a minute later after rapid humping, Chester blew his load inside of Natasha.

Marty: "Are you kidding me! We're supposed to make this last and take turns. Now I'm going to have sloppy seconds."

Chester: "Trust me, I didn't mean to go so quick. But it's like she super tight. And it's like she just sucked the semen out of me, sorry, Marty."

Then Chester rolled off to the side.

Marty: "Now, it's my turn! Natasha, I'll make you feel good and I will last longer."

Natasha: "Just give me the semen like Chester did and that would be great."

Marty then got on top of Natasha and began having sex with her. She screamed, "Faster, faster, harder,

harder!” Then Chester reached between Marty’s legs and grabbed ahold of his testicles. Marty then came and filled Natasha up with semen, just as Chester did.

Marty: “Chester, why in the hell did you do that for? You touched my balls!”

Chester: “I figure you laughed at me cumming so early, so I would make you cum early too.”

Marty: “That’s not funny. Natasha only had about one minute of sex from both of us.”

Natasha: “That’s okay, I don’t like guys anyhow, I just needed your semen. I want to have a child and one of you two is going to be the daddy. Of course, though twins do run in my family and it’s possible that both of you could be the father if I have two children. You guys came in perfect timing where I’m ovulating today. I feel good about this!”

Marty: “That’s not funny, I’m married!”

Natasha: “You should have thought of that before you mounted me.”

Natasha made a phone call.

Pamela: “Is it done, did you get it done, do you have the semen in you?”

Natasha: “Yes, Pamela, sweetie, we should have our child now. You can come into the room to meet the possible fathers.”

Pamela walked from another room from inside the house to the bedroom. She introduced herself to Chester and Marty and thanked them for their semen.

Chester: “I suppose you want some of my semen too.”

Pamela: “No, that’s okay! I can’t visualize a man inside of me. I think men are gross!”

Pamela gave Natasha a hug and kiss.

Pamela: “Now, Natasha, you need to put your hips up in the air for the semen to get to the eggs to make sure they fertilize them.”

Natasha: “You’re right, I love you, Pamela. We will have our children yet. I’ll make sure.”

Pamela: “We will need your full name, address, and security number when the children are born or child so we can do a DNA test and get ahold of you. Plus, we need to collect child support from you for the next eighteen years. Of course, we will let you see the child if you’re the father as he or she grows up.”

Marty and Chester then left the house. They got back into the truck and argued with one another about what just happened.

Marty: “Now, Chester, why did you let me go ahead and do this for? You know I’m married! Now I’ll probably end up getting a divorce because of this if I’m the father.”

Chester: “You’re just as guilty as I am. Trust me, I don’t want to have a child out of wedlock.”

Marty: “Now we just have to pray and wait, hoping that one of us isn’t the father or neither of us.”

Chester: “I have this feeling that we’re both in for a big surprise!”

Marty and Chester continued with their deliveries for the day, which they couldn’t stop thinking about the great time that they had. But what a major mistake it was.

Chapter 5

Ricky had taken off November 1; he figured this was the big day—the extraordinary, great day that he’s been waiting for the last six months to be with Molly. He wanted to make a lasting impression to make her want to be with him, so he thought he would do something crazy, like only wear his underwear briefs to visit her in the supermarket. So that’s what he did. It was about eleven o’clock in the morning when he left the house in nothing but underwear, socks, and shoes.

He made it to the supermarket, walked in as all the people were staring at him. Molly had noticed him walking through the door. She smiled and started to laugh as he walked in. Ricky grabbed a couple select items in the store. Then he walked up to Molly’s register. After waiting in line, it was his turn at the register with Molly.

Ricky: “Well, hi there, Molly, you ready for today?”

Molly: “What do you mean, today?”

Ricky: “You know, if you’re not pregnant by today, you said you’d give me a try.”

Molly: “Oh, is that today? It’s been six months?”

Ricky: “Oh yes, I’ve been counting the days down. And I got two items. His and her sex lube and a pregnancy test.”

Molly laughed and began to blush.

Molly: “Yes, I guess you’re right! I did say that, didn’t I?”

Ricky: “When would you like me at the house? You can see I’m ready for you, I’m all stripped down.”

Molly: “Well, Wayne is working the night shift tonight. He’ll be leaving the house at six o’clock. I suppose 6:30 PM would be good for you to show up.”

Ricky: “Sounds great, I’ll be there at six thirty sharp. Be ready and wear something sexy. Maybe something a little sleazy, I don’t mind.”

Molly: “I see you put a sock in your underwear. Is that to impress me?”

Ricky: “You’ll see tonight, that’s no sock.”

Ricky reached down into his underwear from the front and grabbed some cash that he had stashed there so he can pay for the items.

Molly: “Ooohh, you’re turning me on. I’m looking forward to tonight!”

Ricky: “I’ll make you mine yet, you will see, Molly.”

Ricky then left the supermarket then headed back to his house. He was patiently waiting until 6:30 PM. He then showed up at the door of Molly’s house with the two items he purchased at the supermarket and a bottle of wine. Molly opened the door in sleazy, swanky lingerie. Ricky’s mouth opened and was speechless for about five seconds.

Ricky: "Wow, you're so beautiful and your body is awesome!"

Molly: "Well, thank you, Ricky! Please come in!"

Ricky: "I figured we would start the evening out right with a little wine. I also have a pregnancy test to clear up any doubt if you're pregnant."

Molly: "I know I'm not pregnant, so that really isn't necessary."

Ricky: "It will clear my conscience, if you take it."

Molly: "Okay then, since you insist! Give me a few minutes and I'll be right back to prove the results."

Molly went to the bathroom and came back out with a pregnancy test.

Ricky: "What does it say?"

Molly showed Ricky the test. There was a negative line showing.

Molly: "See, it says I'm not pregnant."

Ricky: "Sweet, I'll get another one of them pregnancy test in a couple weeks. But then it will show you're pregnant."

Molly: "That would be great, and I would be yours forever."

Ricky and Molly then were sitting on the couch, drinking wine and communicating to one another about the good old days in school and what they would like for their future life to be. Ricky had Molly laughing over and over of different stories that he told. You could see Molly was really falling for Ricky. They felt so good being together. It was like they were meant to be with one another. After the bottle of wine was done, they moved their foreplay to the bedroom. It was dark in the bedroom. That was the way Molly wanted it to be. They both stripped down and crawled into bed. But Ricky had the desire to go down on Molly. He wanted more of her. It was like he couldn't get enough.

Molly: "You really shouldn't do that. It's that time for me."

Ricky: "That's okay; it's that time for me too."

Molly: "Okay, if you insist!"

Ricky went down on Molly and excited her extraordinarily, where she felt like she was on cloud nine. This lasted for about twenty minutes. They couldn't resist each other. Then Ricky used his and her lube and inserted his penis into her. They were like teenagers doing it for the first time. It lasted about a half hour. After he had cum in her, he felt like he had to go to the restroom to pee. He went to the restroom; he then had finished peeing. As he was walking out of the restroom, he glanced into the mirror and noticed he had blood all over his face on each side of his cheeks and nose.

He was embarrassed what had just happened, but remembered Molly saying it's that time for her. He remembered some old conversations with other guys talking about Red Wings. Now he said to himself, "I earned my Red Wings." He then was kind of proud. There wouldn't have been any other woman that he would've desired more to do this with than Molly. He grabbed a washrag and washed his face and private area and then returned to the bedroom with Molly.

Ricky: "Molly, why didn't you tell me you were on the rag?"

Molly: "I tried too; I thought you understood when I said it was that time for me."

Ricky: "Well, you could say I had made my 'Red Wings' with you."

Molly: "I don't quite understand!"

Ricky: "Well, I bloodied up my face when I ate you out. It is called Red Wings."

Molly laughed.

Molly: "So you're proud now?"

Ricky: "Yes, you can say this!"

Ricky and Molly were just lying in bed talking of stories and life in general. They soon fell asleep. It was a little bit after four o'clock in the morning. Wayne had come home from his second-shift job. He walked into the bedroom to greet Molly and noticed there was another man in bed with her. He soon realized it was Ricky. This really made Wayne upset.

Wayne: "How could you, Molly? How could you do this to me?"

Molly: "Well, I've wanted a baby and you haven't provided one for me."

Wayne: "Ricky, I'm going to kick your ass. Molly is my woman, not yours."

Ricky: "She likes me better, just ask her."

Wayne: "Molly, is this true? Do you like Ricky better than me?"

Molly: "I have a lot of feelings for Ricky and I always have."

Wayne: "How dare you come in my house and have sex with my girl, Ricky!"

Ricky: "Well, you haven't been doing the job. I figured I would get the job done."

Wayne: "You're a son of a bitch! You just wait I'll figure out something to get you back. You're the whole reason why I can't produce a baby. Because when you kicked me in the balls back in eighth grade, it must've made me sterile."

Ricky: "That's not my fault. You shouldn't have challenged me to fight. You got what you deserved."

Wayne: "I want you both out of my house now."

Molly: "Can't I leave later in the morning?"

Wayne: "No, you go live with your lover Ricky. I'll let you grab a bag to grab some of your clothes. And you can come back later today to grab the rest of your stuff, if not, I'm going to throw it all out on the street."

Molly got a bag and packed some of her clothes. Then Molly and Ricky left the house and went back to

Ricky's house, to Ricky's bedroom, and were discussing how upset Wayne was, but in such a way that was causing them to laugh. Molly was nervous about losing her place where she lived with Wayne. Ricky was making her feel secure that she could live with him as long as she liked. This made Molly happy and secure with Ricky.

Justin and Freddie had gone to Top-Notch Furniture and then to We Are Appliances & More Store and loaded up the deliveries for the day in the truck. They had done a couple of deliveries in town. Then they had a delivery in Martel of a washer and dryer. Justin was driving the truck. They had pulled up to the delivery location. Justin backed the truck up into the driveway. He only looked through his left rearview mirror to back up, not understanding, or it had slipped his mind, that there was a carport that extruded out from the front of the house on the left side of the driveway about twenty feet closer to the street, which he didn't see. As he was backing up, he hit the carport to where it collapsed on the car underneath. They got out of the truck. And Justin was shocked what damage that he had just done. The carport no longer stood eight feet tall. It was like a four-foot carport on top of the car inside it. The owner of the house, Martel, had come out, furious at what just happened.

Martel: "How could you hit my carport? Is it your first day driving? You couldn't see the carport, come on now, what were you thinking?"

Justin: "It slipped my mind when I pulled up. I didn't realize the carport was there."

Martel: "Well, I hope you have good insurance."

Justin: "I really am sorry, sir! But let me make a call to my boss and see what I can do. I'm sure it'll be taken care of soon, or fixed, so you shouldn't have to worry."

Martel: "I shouldn't have to worry? How am I going to get to work? My only car is under the port. And I can't get it out you can obviously see."

Justin: "Maybe you can call a family member to drive you to get a rental car or borrow someone's."

Martel: "I just moved here. And I don't know no one, so how can you tell me to use a family member?"

Justin: "What if I give you \$100 so you can call a taxi, so you can rent a rental car?"

Martel: "Just get your boss on the phone."

Justin called Jimmy and explained to him what he had just done. Jimmy was a little upset, but he told Justin not to worry about it, he would take care of it. Justin passed the phone to Martel.

Martel: "Do you know what your knucklehead driver had done to my carport?"

Jimmy: "I'm sure you're upset, sir, but everything will be taken care of, I assure you. I'll call my insurance company right now to let them know about it. I'm sure they'll fix it within a couple weeks. I'm truly sorry about your inconvenience."

Martel: "You don't seem to understand, I don't have another car or anybody else to call to get around."

Jimmy: "All you have to do is collect and keep your receipts for everything you spend. And then you'll be reimbursed."

Martel: "Okay, but I would like the insurance company to give me a call as soon as possible to inform me that this situation is to be taken care of immediately."

Jimmy: "Sure thing!"

Jimmy hung up, then Jimmy made a call to the insurance company. The insurance company said they would be taking care of it immediately. He had given the phone number to the insurance company to call Martel, the owner, that day.

Justin and Freddie pulled the truck forward ten feet then opened the back of the truck. They got the washer and dryer out of the truck and into the house. Which then they hooked it up for the gentleman. Then they continued with their deliveries. Justin was worried about getting fired, with being their first week doing deliveries and already had an incident. Justin let Freddy drive for the rest of the day. Their deliveries were northeast of Cedar Rapids and Marion that day.

They had a delivery in Wyoming of a dresser. They unpacked the dresser from the moving pads then took it out of the truck. When they carried it in the house, they had a sharp corner to go around. They had accidentally punched a hole in the wall from the corner of the dresser. The property owner wasn't very happy about it and had requested to speak to their boss of the incident. Now Justin was really nervous and upset what had happened. They put Jimmy on the phone again.

Jimmy had explained to the property owners in Wyoming that it'll be taken care of and fixed within a month. Jimmy called the insurance company a second time that day. The insurance company frowned on two incidents in one day. But they ensured that they will take care of the claim.

Justin and Freddie delivered the rest of the deliveries for the day without incident. Justin was relieved that day was over for deliveries.

Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, Jason, Sondra, and Molly were sitting around in the living room that night, discussing what the business should do next. They had over \$1 million, and they knew they needed to invest it into some property.

Scott: "Well, Molly, I can see now that you're going to be part of the team. What do you think you could offer us for the business?"

Molly: "Well, I'm just about done with my college. I'll be finished with my school at the end of December for finance and accounting. I could take over Sondra's job for doing the books and payroll."

Sondra: "That would be great! I've been pretty stressed lately trying to keep up with work and the business."

Molly: "I appreciate you letting me stay here. I can really make a difference if you just let me."

Ricky: "Molly! You would be a major asset to our business. Plus, I love seeing you each and every day. I can't think of a better thing that you could do for us."

Molly: "I don't want to stay here forever though. I would like to move into a house with you, Ricky."

Ricky: "Yeah, I hear you, I would like to move into a house too. Scott and Sondra, you've been great taking care of me. But I was wondering with some of the money we got recently, if I could get a little bit of it to buy a house, preferably up in Cedar Rapids closer to our business which we run."

Jimmy: "How does \$150,000 dollars sound for each of the three of us? Dad and Mom, you can have \$150,000 dollars, me \$150,000 dollars, and you, Ricky, \$150,000 dollars, for the risks that we had taken recently. We can then invest the rest into some property with the million dollars we have left."

Jason: "What about me, do I get any money?"

Scott: "All in due time you will. Just be patient, someday you'll have some money."

Jimmy: "Little brother, we will take care of you. How does it sound making twenty bucks an hour now?"

Jason: "That's a little better, but what about \$150,000 dollars, it would sound better to me."

Scott: "Someday, someday, you'll be taken care of."

Ricky: "That sounds good, \$150,000 dollars would give me a great down payment on a house."

Jimmy: "Molly, I had this feeling someday you'd be with Ricky. You guys were meant to be together. I always knew it. You make a great couple."

Molly: "Oh, thank you, Jimmy, you're so sweet. Just like Ricky."

Jimmy: "I have been noticing a place off of Highway 30. It looked like they closed the doors on a trucking company recently. Maybe they might have that property up for sale. I'll do some checking, and if the price is right, maybe we can purchase it."

Scott: "Yeah, we're getting too big, we need a place to run our trucks out of and to use. I know the place you're talking about. It's a little big for our need. But I do realize you want to start running semis soon."

Ricky: "We also got to think about letting the second-shift workers at Bernard's off for the winter. There aren't as many deliveries to run now."

Jimmy: "That's not a bad idea, they can collect unemployment. I was thinking from first of December to first of April when the deliveries pick back up again."

Ricky: "I'll let them know, that sounds good."

Jimmy: "Sondra, did you place an ad in the paper for household moving yet?"

Sondra: "Yes, I did! We have four household moves coming up soon. I scheduled them for Fridays, Saturdays, and Sundays."

Jimmy: "Good, we just do the household moving on the weekends. That'll keep the workers of the two trucks busy."

Jimmy: "Have you found any other businesses looking for a delivery service?"

Sondra: "I had also placed an ad in the paper looking for businesses for delivery. And we had a call from Iowa Mattress. You can check it out this week, which it sounds like a good account."

Jimmy: "Thanks, Mom, good work. What would I do without you?"

Sondra: "No problem, honey!"

Justin and Freddie had a household-moving job from Olin to Cedar Rapids. They got to the residents at eight o'clock in the morning. They went into the house to talk to the resident that was moving. There was just

a little old lady that lived by herself there named Mrs. Luber.

Justin: "We're here from Ace Services to do a household move for you, ma'am."

Mrs. Luber: "Well, I'm glad you made it. I can show you what needs to go or what doesn't."

Justin: "Okay, Mrs. Luber, we will try to make this as simple as possible for you."

Mrs. Luber: "You gentlemen seemed to be really nice. Would you like to have something to drink? There are sodas in the refrigerator."

Justin: "Okay, maybe a little later, that'll work, thanks!"

Justin and Freddie packed up all the items in the truck from the house that Mrs. Luber wanted to take. They had met Mrs. Luber at the next residence to where they were to unload the truck in Cedar Rapids. They had finished unloading the truck.

Justin: "Well, that should do it, this is the last box."

Mrs. Luber: "Okay, thanks! I was just thinking I probably won't need some old toys that I've been collecting over the years. Actually from my husband, he would always surprise me with a new toy. Would any of you be interested in the box of toys?"

Justin: "Yes, I would be. You say they're old?"

Ms. Luber: "Oh yes, some date back to the 1940s."

Justin: "I'll take them, if you don't mind."

Mrs. Luber: "One condition, you have to make sure that they get good uses. Do you have a girlfriend or wife?"

Justin: "Yes, I have a girlfriend, which I am engaged to."

Mrs. Luber: "That's perfect. I know they will go to a good home then."

Mrs. Luber found the box with the toys in it. Then Justin opened the box. Justin was then surprised of the toys that Mrs. Luber was offering."

Freddie: "Oh yes, Justin!"

Freddie laughed.

Freddie: "You should get good use out of them."

Justin was with a sign of speechlessness on his face.

Justin: "Well, Mrs. Luber, I can see it's a big box of toys. Are you sure you want to give them up?"

Mrs. Luber: "Oh yes. I don't have a need for them no more. My husband passed away six months ago. That was the last time that they were used. He was ninety-two when he had passed. He had taken a Viagra that day and we were having sex. Of course he always liked to do foreplay beforehand. He was on top of me, and

right when he climaxed, he had a heart attack. That was the last of him. It would mean so much to know the toys would have a good home.”

Justin: “Well, I’m sorry to hear for your husband’s death. I will take them. But unsure of how much use they will get.”

Mrs. Luber: “Well, my husband would be so proud if they got used and went to a good home.”

Freddie: “So your husband came to his death?”

Mrs. Luber: “I suppose you could say that, yes, Freddie?”

Freddie: “You couldn’t have picked a better person for the toys to go to, Justin is always speaking of how he tries to excite his woman. Now he has the equipment to do so, so there should be no excuse for him.”

Mrs. Luber: “That’s good to know, thank you guys for moving me today. What do I owe you?”

Justin: “I have to go and figure out what you have to pay. I’ll be right back!”

Justin took the box of sex toys with him to the truck. He figured out on a calculator the amount and hours and rate it took to do the household move, then he returned to Mrs. Luber.

Justin: “The amount we need today is \$970.”

Mrs. Luber: “How about I give you boys \$1,200. That way you’ll each have \$115 extra to spend as you wish. I appreciate the excellent job that you guys have done today with the move. And I’m sure, Justin, you will put them toys to good use.”

Justin: “Yes, Mrs. Luber, I’ll see what my girlfriend says about them.”

Mrs. Luber: “Don’t tell her about them, just use them on her. The less she knows, the better off you are.”

Justin: “Okay, thanks, Mrs. Luber, we got to go now, bye.”

Freddie: “See you later, Mrs. Luber. I wish I had you as my grandma. You’re awesome.”

Mrs. Luber: “You are some fine boys, thank you!”

Justin and Freddie got in the truck. They took off to go back to Monticello to park the truck.

Freddie: “Justin, you’re not going to use them toys, are you?”

Justin: “Well, Mrs. Luber made me feel guilty, maybe I should. I suppose I could sterilize them by boiling them in some water.”

Freddie: “You’re crazy!”

Freddie laughed.

Jimmy headed over to Melanie’s house. He knocked on the door. Zachary came to the door, which he opened up with a big smile.

Zachary: "Jimmy, Jimmy, Jimmy, Jimmy's here, Mama."

Jimmy: "How's it going, Zachary?"

Jimmy picked up Zachary.

Zachary: "Good, Jimmy. You want to see some of the tricks I taught Annie?"

Jimmy: "Sure, that would be great!"

Jimmy set Zachary down. Annie was patiently wagging her tail and jumping up on them. Zachary then began to yelp and howl. And then Annie began to howl, long and loud.

Jimmy: "Wow, Zachary that's pretty cool, you taught her that!"

Zachary: "Yes. And I also taught her this. Annie, sit."

Annie sat.

Zachary: "Annie, lie."

Annie then lay down."

Jimmy: "So you taught her three tricks."

Zachary: "She can also give her paw. Try it, Jimmy!"

Jimmy: "Give me paw, Annie."

Annie gave her paw.

Melanie: "I can see that you're playing with Annie. You see the tricks that Zachary taught her?"

Jimmy: "Yeah, they're great! Zachary, you did great! Are you about ready for that concert that we're going to tonight, which I had told you about last week?"

Melanie: "Yes, I am. But you never told me what the concert was. Who's playing? Do I know the group?"

Jimmy: "No, it's a surprise! You'll see!"

Melanie: "Isn't Zachary too young for the concert?"

Jimmy: "No, he will like it!"

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary got into the car. They drove from Anamosa toward Monticello.

Melanie was a little confused, figured that the concert must be in Dubuque. But then Jimmy took the exit into Monticello and pulled in to the high school. There was a sign in the front of the high school which said, "Christmas choir concert!"

Melanie: “You never seem to surprise me, Jimmy. So we’re going to a Christmas choir concert at the school.”

Jimmy: “Yeah, I figure it’d be a good thing to do with you and Zachary.”

Melanie: “Well, it’s pretty nice, I like it.”

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary went into the school, paid to get into the concert, then had a seat in the auditorium. The concert played; it was about an hour long.

Melanie (smiling at Jimmy): “That was a really nice concert, thank you, Jimmy!”

Jimmy: “You’re welcome, Melanie, now we can go out to eat.”

Melanie: “That was better than a rock concert. You’re melting my heart, and supper too at a restaurant, you’re so sweet. I’m so glad I found you!”

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary finished up eating at the restaurant and then headed back to the house. Jimmy and Melanie hugged and kissed at the door, which Jimmy then left.

Jimmy and Ricky had scouted a place for the business to work out of. The place off of Highway 30 had just gone bankrupt. They contacted the bank that had the property. They had made an offer to purchase it. The bank had accepted their offer. They ended up getting the property for about half the price it was worth. They couldn’t take possession of it until mid-January though.

Ricky and Molly also went out shopping for houses. They found a nice house with three bedrooms, three bathrooms, an eat-in kitchen, and a finished basement off of Boyson Road in Cedar Rapids. They were so excited for the house. Ricky put \$100,000 down and kept the other \$50,000 to buy furniture and accessories. By the end of January, they were all settled in the house and living there.

Melanie was at work one day. She was talking to some coworkers of hers there.

Melanie: “I think I got the perfect man. He’s kind, sweet, smart, good-looking, and very charming.”

Angelica: “Have you been serious with him? Have you let him know how you feel about him?”

Melanie: “Yes, I always tell him, thanks, I cook for him when he comes over. I give him hugs and kisses.”

April: “But are you offering him sex to keep them satisfied?”

Melanie: “No, I haven’t been! I keep telling him, I’m not quite ready yet.”

Angelica: “Well, you got to ride that stallion, otherwise he will get away from you.”

Melanie: “You know you’re right, I do have to make the move. I need sex anyhow! I haven’t had sex in over six to seven years.”

April: “You haven’t had sex in six to seven years? You got to have cobwebs down there. Are you kidding me? I can’t go without it for over a week.”

Melanie: “Well, it’s not like I don’t do it. I just play with myself to get myself aroused.”

Angelica: “Yeah, but, April, you’re married! You have to respect what Melanie’s gone through. If she’s not ready, she’s not ready. But the stallion might find another corral to asleep in.”

Melanie: “You know you’re right, I’m going to make plans this Saturday with him. I’ll invite him over and cook a nice meal for him. My lasagna he loves! I will wear something sleazy to impress him. We’ll watch a nice romantic movie. ’Course though I will have to drop my son off at my parents’ house to be watched. I think I’ll call him right now to let him know for this weekend.”

Angelica: “That’s more like it, girl! Ride that stallion! Let you be the mayor that’s in heat. Make your first time a lasting impression, which he will never forget.”

April: “You go, girl!”

Melanie then called Jimmy.

Jimmy: “Hi, Melanie, how you doing, gorgeous?”

Melanie: “Great, sweetie, I’ve been thinking! I called you to let you know I’m in the mood, I want to do you.”

Jimmy: “You want me right now? Sweet, where do you want to meet at? You know I’ve been getting blue balls holding off. You’re up for a serious cum’ming!”

Melanie: “No, not right now, I was thinking about this weekend. I can drop Zachary off at my parents’ on Saturday. And I would like you at the house about five o’clock. I’ll cook you a nice meal, lasagna. And I was thinking about watching a romantic movie. And then if we get aroused, you can fill me up with your massive load of semen. How does that sound?”

Jimmy: “That sounds awesome. You’re going to have semen coming out your mouth, nose, and ears with as much as I’ve got built up. I’m so happy! I can’t wait! It will be a night we will never forget.”

Melanie: “You’re making me horny just thinking about it. It’s like I’m vibrating down there.”

Jimmy: “I’ll see you then, sweetie, my love of my life!”

Melanie: “You too, baby, I love you!”

Amerio Laveechi called Jimmy the first week in February.

Jimmy: “Ace Services, this is Jimmy speaking, we deliver anything.”

Amerio: “This is Amerio, Jimmy, you remember me?”

Jimmy: “Oh yes, how’s it going?”

Amerio: “Well, I need another favor from you.”

Jimmy: “I hope it doesn’t include anything that entails jail time.”

Amerio: “That all depends on you! How do you feel about doing another run?”

Jimmy: “I was sweating out the last run, not sure if I want to.”

Amerio: “Well, this one would be a big payoff. If you want it, that is.”

Jimmy: “What are we talking about, how much?”

Amerio: “Well, I don’t know all the details. But far as I understand, it’s a \$15 million one.”

Jimmy: “Wow, that’s a lot of money, it must be something big.”

Amerio: “Yes, it is something big! It’s so big that the boss wants to talk to you in private about it. And the boss never handles business on the first-level basis.”

Jimmy: “So what were you thinking of? Should we meet at the same place, Happy B’s, to have the meeting, would that be okay?”

Amerio: “Sure, why not? Let’s make it for Friday, February 15. I’ll give the boss a call to let him know that we will be there on the fifteenth at two o’clock.”

Jimmy: “Okay, I’ll see you there with him at two o’clock. I’ll bring Ricky and Scott as well. How does that sound?”

Amerio: “Okay, talk to you later!”

Ricky was so excited to be with Molly, and he was hoping that he had gotten her pregnant. He had gone to the store and purchased another pregnancy test. He brought it home and gave it to Molly to take.

Ricky: “Molly, look what I’ve got. It’s a pregnancy test! This is the moment we’ve been waiting for. Let’s hope it shows positive!”

Molly: “Oh yes! I’ve been feeling differently lately. I’m pretty sure I’m pregnant, it’s a feeling I’ve never felt before. But give me a second and I’ll check with the test.”

Molly took the pregnancy test in the bathroom. She came back out. She held it up to where both can see. They watched the red line turn into a plus sign.

Ricky: “Awesome!”

He held and lifted Molly up in the air, with a great big hug.

Molly: “I’m finally pregnant! You did it, Ricky! You’re the one! You’re the one that I’ll be with for the rest of my life, I’m so happy.”

Ricky: “I would like to have a boy. We will have to think of a name.”

Molly: “What if I want a girl!”

Ricky: “That would be fine too; a boy or girl is great.”

Molly: “I’m going to call my parents and let them know I’m finally pregnant. They’re going to have a grandchild.”

Ricky and Molly were so excited to be expecting parents. Molly then took the rest the week and started to

buy baby items. They took one of the rooms in their house to be set aside as the baby's room.

Corky Courtney lived at her parents' house and was visiting with a friend of hers named Valerie. They were just sitting around, talking about Courtney's future.

Courtney: "Valerie, I've been so upset lately. I've been wondering about the future of the babies. I almost wish I never had sex with that guy in the restroom. Or at least I wish I've would've gotten his name, which if I had gotten his real name, that is."

Valerie: "I remember you telling me it was the best sex you've ever had."

Courtney: "True, it was! His member was the biggest I've ever seen, and I had to have it. Plus he was gorgeous!"

Valerie: "Well, look at it like this, you got a set of twins out of it. You should be so happy to get twins. To carry and have precious life to watch them grow is wonderful."

Courtney: "I suppose you're right though, I suppose the babies will never know their true father."

Valerie: "Maybe he did give you his real name. What was it?"

Courtney: "His first name is Ricky and he named his member longjohn."

Valerie: "So you say his name is Ricky LongJohn? Why don't I just look on my cell phone to see if there is a name Ricky LongJohn in the area?"

Courtney: "Who would have a last name of LongJohn? It obviously matched his member that he was talking about."

Valerie: "Not necessarily. Give me a second and I'll see what I can find."

Valerie looked on her cell phone. She typed in the name Ricky LongJohn. It had brought up two addresses, which it had listed him as being twenty-four years old, one in Monticello and the other one in Cedar Rapids, off of Boyson Road.

Valerie: "Looks like we just may have found him. It shows two addresses, one is from Monticello and the other one from Boyson Road here in Cedar Rapids."

Courtney: "Are you serious? There really is a name called Ricky LongJohn? Let me see!"

Valerie (holding up the phone to Courtney): "Yes, see right here!"

Courtney: "Boyson Road is just up the street from us. Let's go and check it out, see if we can talk to him about his babies."

Valerie: "Don't you think we should try to call him first? Or visit him at his work? You never know what he has going on for a life. So don't be disappointed if he doesn't want to have anything to do with you."

Courtney: "Well, we don't have his phone number. And we don't know where he works. And I am his life now! So I say let's go and visit him!"

Courtney and Valerie got in Courtney's car. They headed up the street to the address on Boyson Road

and pulled into the driveway. They both got out of the car and walked up to the door; it was late afternoon. Courtney rang the doorbell, and then Molly had come to the door. Courtney was shown as if she was nine months pregnant.

Molly: "Hi! May I help you?"

Courtney: "Yes, does Ricky LongJohn live here?"

Molly: "Well yes! He lives here with me, I'm his girlfriend."

Courtney: "Well, I'm carrying his babies! And I really need to speak with him."

Molly (despaired in shock): "So you're saying you're pregnant with Ricky's babies, you have twins? And you know they're Ricky's?"

Courtney: "Oh yes, Ricky with the long, huge member, is that correct?"

Molly: "What did you say your name was?"

Courtney: "My name is Courtney Livingston. And my friend here is Valerie. What is your name?"

Molly: "My name is Molly Brenneman. That sounds correct, but, but, but how can it be? He hasn't had any other girlfriends in a long time."

Courtney: "We met at the Skillet concert."

Molly: "So what do you want?"

Courtney: "I want to be with Ricky so he can be the father of my two children, watch and help them grow up."

Molly: "You don't seem to understand. I'm pregnant with Ricky's baby. And he's going to be with me."

Courtney: "We'll just see about that! He got me pregnant first, plus, he's got two kids with me."

Molly: "But you don't love him, like I do."

Courtney: "I think I'm in love with him too. So we will just have to see what he says."

Molly: "He'll be home soon, why don't you come in and have a seat in the kitchen?"

Molly, Courtney, and Valerie stepped into the house and went to the kitchen. Molly poured Courtney and Valerie a glass of iced tea.

Molly: "Well, Valerie and Courtney, would you like to have some sugar or lemon with your tea?"

Valerie: "I could use a little lemon."

Courtney: "Sugar and lemon, please!"

Molly: "I just want to get something straight here. I've known Ricky all his life. And I know he loves me

truly. I don't mean to disappoint you, Courtney, but Ricky will choose me over you, I know it."

Courtney: "Well, I realize I've only known him for a few brief moments. But something tells me inside that he will want to be with me too. I've been having a lot of dreams lately, and Ricky is always in them, with the babies."

Molly: "That doesn't always mean anything. You're just dreaming over him. You're just looking for a way to connect with him and your babies."

Valerie: "Molly, what if Ricky does choose to be with Courtney?"

Molly: "I won't let that happen! Ricky is the best thing that's ever happened to me and I love him and he will always be mine."

Courtney: "And I say I won't let him out of my sight. I will bug you and Ricky each and every day until he comes to me."

Molly: "I'll place a restraining order against you if you happen to become a nuisance, and why haven't you contacted him earlier?"

Courtney: "Let's not go that far! Plus, we don't know what Ricky wants yet. He may want to go with me instead, since I have two babies. I didn't realize Ricky Longjohn was Ricky's real name, I've been looking for him ever since I found out I was pregnant by him. And now I have found him."

Ricky came home and then walked through the door. He was surprised to see Corky Courtney at the table with Molly.

Courtney: "Hi there, Ricky! You remember me! I've been dreaming of the day we meet again."

Ricky: "Well yes, I, I, I remember you very well. Are, are you pregnant?"

Courtney: "Oh yes. We're going to have two babies together. Just me and you, how does that sound?"

Ricky: "Two babies, you have twins in the belly?"

Courtney: "Yes, we do, two children, one boy, one girl."

Ricky: "Wow, I did not see this coming. How do you and Molly know each other?"

Molly: "She just showed up at the door about an hour ago. You don't have feelings for her, do you, Ricky?"

Ricky: "Well, I don't know what to say. Molly, did you tell her that you were pregnant with a child too?"

Molly: "Yes, I did, but she's persistent and says that she wants you, and she says nothing will stop her from getting you."

Valerie: "I have a solution! You may not like it, but it would be the best for both of you. Why don't you Courtney and you Molly share Ricky? It would be the best interest for the babies. Plus, you may find out that you like each other more than you realize in taking care of the children."

Molly: "I'm not too fond of that idea. I think my parents may frown on that. I'm not sure if I could do it. I want Ricky to myself!"

Courtney: "I think you're pretty, Molly, and you seem like a really nice person. I can sit there and see us being together with Ricky."

Molly: "Ricky, tell her that you want me, and only me."

Ricky: "I'm not sure what I should do. Both of you women should be entitled to have me. But it's obviously I screwed up along the way, maybe I shouldn't be with any one of you two women. It's not like I don't love you. I believe I have feelings for both of you. But I don't want one of you girls to feel left out by not having me. This will be a hard decision to make. Maybe I'll just be a father to the kids from both of you and live on my own."

Molly: "See what you're doing, Courtney, you're giving Ricky cold feet. Ricky doesn't want any of us now."

Courtney: "Don't blame me! Ricky has to make up his mind of who he wants to be with or both. If he wants to be the father of my children or your child, he has to look out for what's fair."

Valerie: "There's always option two, where you can all live together as one big happy family."

Molly: "What are you thinking, Ricky? Would you like to see us live all together under the same roof? And who would you love more?"

Ricky: "That would be great if it was just that easy. You know yourself, Molly, you want a man all to yourself, and, Courtney, you would be jealous if I was taking sides with Molly one night without you or having sex with one another. The only way this will work if you both agree to have sex together with all three of us. If we can do this, I will do everything in my power to make you the two happiest women in the world."

Courtney: "I would be jealous, but I would have to take my jealousy out on you, Molly. We can always get some sex toys and give it a try to see if we're compatible for one another. That is, if you're looking to try, Molly?"

Molly: "Well, Courtney, I do think you're a very pretty woman. And I do like your quirky attitude. I am willing to give it a try. That is, if you are and if Ricky would like this? Ricky, what do you say?"

Ricky: "Come here, Molly and Courtney, let's bring it together and give a three-way hug and kiss to each other to see if we have the feeling of connection for one another."

Ricky, Molly, and Courtney stood off to the side of the kitchen in a circle hugging each other with simple kisses to each other.

Ricky: "I'll do everything I can to make both you women feel as important as I can. I do have feelings and love for both of you."

Valerie: "Awwwww, isn't that sweet! You make me want to become bisexual."

Jimmy, Ricky, and Scott were sitting at Happy B's on Friday, February 15, at two o'clock. They noticed Amerio approaching them with an older fellow approximately in his sixties. They approached the corner booth where Jimmy, Ricky, and Scott were sitting at.

Amerio reached out and gave a handshake to Jimmy then Ricky and Scott.

Amerio: "Well, I see you guys had made it. This is Anthony Percheatty also known as Tony."

Tony reached out and shook their hands as Amerio addressed them.

Amerio: "Tony is the main boss that I work for."

Jimmy: "Well, it's really a pleasure to meet you, sir. We appreciate the business that you've given us so far."

Tony: "That's good to hear, but I do have a top priority mission for you to do, if you want to take it on. It has some risk though! It'll be the biggest drug run I have ever put together. And if you're successful, it'll probably be my last. It's a major moneymaker for me. I'm investing 250 million for 20,000 pounds of cocaine from Colombia, and the street value is worth 614 million and some change. That's 10 tons of cocaine. You'll receive a nice payout as well. This'll be the last favor I'll ever ask for you guys to do for me."

Jimmy's mouth dropped open.

Jimmy: "That's a lot of cocaine! Is that such a good idea to risk that much money on a drug run?"

Tony: "I had a dream about a month ago that I received the drugs without a problem and it was a success. I have this feeling in my gut that it can be done. I figured since you all did so well on the last delivery, you guys would be the perfect ones to pull it off. I have faith in you guys."

Jimmy: "There's no way we could get it through the border or customs with that much cocaine. Could you fill me in a little bit on how we would get ahold of it or where it would be coming from?"

Tony: "Well, I have connections! I believe if you do it right, you may just be able to pull this off. One thing you would have to do is make up a fraudulent custom slip. It would be coming off of a Navy ship in San Diego. I can only buy you about an hour's time to load the cocaine up on the trucks."

Jimmy: "So you'd be bringing it on a US military ship. Very clever! They pick it up from Colombia and bring it to the port. You must have some pretty good connections."

Tony: "You can say money talks!"

Scott: "Even if you make up a fraudulent customs slip, you still have to make it out of shipyard and are subject to inspection."

Tony: "I have that covered as well, the individual that's in charge of the security gate, I have in my back pocket as well. He will let you go with no problem and stamp your customs form."

Ricky: "Well, basically we just have to carry it from San Diego to the bio lab in Chicago then."

Tony: "That's correct, it's coming in at the Navy port in San Diego. The drop-off point would be at the bio lab in Chicago."

Jimmy: "What would be the payoff be for carrying that much?"

Tony: "I was thinking \$15 million. Plus whatever necessities that you may need like trucks. So what's you thinking?"

Scott: "Ricky and Jimmy, I'm not sure this is a good idea. It sounds way too risky with carrying that much. There are too many possibilities that could go wrong."

Jimmy: "Actually, I just thought of something that I think will work. It's like it just came to my mind and I feel good about it. But, Tony, we will need at least four box trucks that are at least twenty foot long and I would like the truck boxes to have electricity in them. It's a long shot, but I think it'll work."

Scott: "Jimmy, you do know that if they catch us with that much cocaine, they will throw the key away and we will never get out of jail."

Jimmy: "Yes, I do realize this! But I got it, I got this. Everything should go as smooth as silk."

Tony: "If you can get this done for me, I will owe you just about anything that you need at a later time."

Jimmy: "When would you have the cargo come in?"

Tony: "With what I have been communicating with my contacts, I can get it here within about three months."

Jimmy: "That would be perfect! One thing I know I'll need to have done is the customs officer. I need to know who it will be doing the inspection for that day and his receipt number of the custom statement, if possible. Do you think you can get that for me?"

Tony: "Amerio, do you think you can handle this? Can you find out who the officer may be for that day?"

Amerio: "We have contacts there, so I believe we can get this information. If we make a bogus shipment to be inspected prior for the security customs officer to check out, we should know what the statement number should be."

Jimmy reached across the table and put his hand out for Tony to shake.

Jimmy: "Consider it to be done, Tony! But one other thing I would like you to make up an inheritance for we can receive the \$15 million dollars to the business of Ace Services. I'll give you the account for it to go in. But for tax purposes, it will need the bogus inheritance to file."

Tony: "For future contacts, Amerio will be the one to stay in contact with you. If he needs anything from you or if you need anything from me, he will also handle it. The expected date for pickup and delivery you'll get at a later date."

It was now Saturday. Jimmy was excited. He wanted to make an everlasting impression that Melanie will never forget and a night of romantic love. He'd been waiting for this moment for a very long time. He was wondering what would make the night even greater. Jimmy showed up at the door of Melanie's house right at five o'clock. He rang the doorbell, then Melanie came to the door with a shortcut skirt and a maroon blouse with a few buttons undone.

Jimmy saw Melanie and gazed up and down her body after she opened the door.

Jimmy: "Well, hi there, Melanie, you look very beautiful! It must've taken you hours to get ready. I have a couple items for you or for us tonight that you might like."

He handed a bag with a bottle of red wine and some bath and body soap, bubbles.

Melanie: "Well, that's nice! Thank you for your compliment! You look very nice as well, handsome and very attractive tonight. You didn't have to bring anything. I had purchased a bottle of red wine earlier for us to drink tonight. And what is the bath bubbles for?"

Jimmy: "You'll see! Well, I guess we're just going to have to drink two bottles and get drunk then."

Jimmy laughed.

Melanie: "Well, come on in then, the lasagna is done and ready to eat on the table. I hope you're hungry!"

Jimmy leaned forward and gave Melanie a kiss and then walked to the kitchen and saw the table set up with lasagna in the middle, napkins under the silverware, and two candles lit on the table with two glasses of red wine. The lighting was turned down a little and with music in the background from the living room.

Jimmy: "Wow! This is extraordinary! You really have outdone yourself for me."

Melanie: "I just want our evening to be perfect, Jimmy."

Jimmy: "Just being here with you is wonderful. I have so many feelings for you that I can't even express."

Jimmy and Melanie sat at the table and started eating lasagna.

Melanie: "I feel so horny for you tonight, Jimmy. I've been vibrating down there all day. I been wanting to touch myself down there, but I've been saving it for you though."

Jimmy: "I feel the same way about you, Melanie. It's like I couldn't wait for our big moment tonight. I'm going to try to hold off with as much foreplay and touch and feely as possible. You are very special to me and I want to prove it."

Melanie: "Your soft kind words are making me creamy for you, Jimmy, stop it. Or else you're going to make me want to skip supper and just do you."

Jimmy: "Okay, maybe I'll tone it down a notch. How is Zachary doing? Was he okay to go to your parents' tonight?"

Melanie: "Yes, he's such a great sweet boy. He was so mature when I told him that I wanted some time alone with you tonight. It's like he knew this was our special moment. He was willing to go to my parents' house without raising a fuss."

Jimmy: "He's very special to me, you know? You both are!"

Jimmy and Melanie finished their supper and headed to the living room where the lights were turned down and the music was playing. Melanie turned the music off and put a romantic movie on. They had a seat on the couch with some wine next to each other.

Melanie: "I hope you like the movie I had picked out, Jimmy. It's supposed to be very romantic and sexually explicit."

Jimmy: "I really don't need a movie to be with you, Melanie. You are my movie, and on a scale from 1 to 10, you are an 11."

Melanie: "Well, thank you, Jimmy. You're my knight in shining armor that I lust over."

Jimmy: "How would you like to have a body massage?"

Melanie: "Yes, I would like that."

Melanie lay down on the couch after taking her shoes off.

Jimmy: "I'll start with your feet. Let me know if I'm going too hard on the massage."

Jimmy then worked his way up to her legs then her thighs and then he couldn't resist he had to touch her twat.

Melanie: "That feels good! You're the best massager ever. But you're going to have to move on or otherwise we're going to have to skip the movie and hit the bedroom."

Jimmy: "I couldn't resist, it's like you have a special aura that pulls me to you. But I'll move on."

Jimmy then massaged her buttocks and moved up to her back and then shoulders.

Jimmy: "How's that, Melanie?"

Melanie: "That is awesome. I'm melting in your arms. I'm so much in love and wanting you right now, but we will have to hold off. I want this moment to last."

Jimmy and Melanie had finished the body massage and the movie was over.

Jimmy: "Well, I would say it's time to hit the bathroom. That's why I brought the bubbles over so we can take a bath together."

Melanie: "Ohooo, that sounds perfect! I'll scrub on you and you can play with me in the tub."

Jimmy and Melanie went into the bathroom. Melanie had brought the two candles in from the kitchen and lit them. They had gotten undressed and they found themselves irresistible to one another to where they were holding each other naked prior to getting in the tub. The tub was filled up with water and bubbles, lots of bubbles. They got in the tub and Jimmy took a washrag and started washing Melanie's shoulders and then chest.

Melanie then took the washrag and put it over Jimmy's penis as it's risen out of the tub.

Melanie: "It's full mass you can sail this ship with me any day."

They finished up in the bathtub. Melanie put a towel around her, but chose not put any clothing on. Jimmy dried himself off, then put his briefs on, which then they went to the bedroom. A nightlight was all that was on in the bedroom.

Melanie: "Jimmy, I would like the covers over me, but if you would like to foreplay with me down there prior to having sex, that would be great."

Jimmy: "Oh, you know it, sweetie! I'm going to make you cum and cum and cum again. Would you like fingers, tongue, or both?"

Melanie: "You surprise me; do what makes you feel best. It's great with anything you do."

Jimmy did foreplay for a little while. The rest was making history with Melanie, which she would never forget. The next morning, they woke up after spending the night cuddling so close to each other. Melanie got

up out of bed and felt so rested and so relaxed like she was on cloud nine. She went down to the kitchen and made some eggs, bacon, and toast for them to eat for breakfast.

Jimmy: “Thanks, Melanie, for the awesome evening and night. That was wonderful, I just want to make this happen every evening now.”

Melanie: “Trust me; we’ll be doing it again and again and again and again as long as I have my say about it.”

Courtney was now living with Molly and Ricky. Courtney and Molly had made a doctor’s appointment to check on their babies. They had set up the appointment at the same time, and Ricky wanted to come. They were at the doctor’s office in Monticello to see Dr. Chase. They walked in and talked to the receptionist. She told them to have a seat. They would get called in as soon as Dr. Chase was available. It was their turn to be examined.

Dr. Chase: “Well, hi there, Ricky, how’s it hanging?”

Dr. Chase laughed a little.

Ricky: “Mostly to the left, sometimes right!”

Dr. Chase: “Well, I see you’re here with two females, who’s the lucky one you’re with?”

Ricky: “They’re both mine!”

Dr. Chase: “You have two women? Well, you lucky dog, you!”

Molly: “Well, I was with Ricky first!”

Courtney: “He got me pregnant first! And I’m carrying his set of twins.”

Dr. Chase: “Interesting. I can see, Courtney, that you’re pretty far along. How about you get up on the table and go first. We’ll see how the babies are doing. Do you know whether they’re a girl or boy?”

Courtney: “I believe one’s a girl and one’s a boy.”

Dr. Chase took an ultrasound of Courtney’s belly.

Dr. Chase: “Well, you’re correct! One is a girl and one is a boy. They look like they’re almost full-term. I’m guessing according to the ultrasound you’re due around May 1. And they look like they’re all within a normal pregnancy range as of today. They look healthy!”

Courtney: “That’s good, great, thanks!”

Dr. Chase: “Okay, Molly, it’s your turn!”

Molly got up on the table and lay back.

Molly: “Oooh, that’s cold! So what do you see? How’s the baby doing?”

Dr. Chase: “Have patience, Molly, I’m still looking. Well, Ricky and Molly, are you ready for the news?”

Molly: "Don't tell me there's something wrong. Please don't."

Dr. Chase: "Well, there is nothing wrong unless you didn't want two babies. You're expecting twins. That should make you a proud father, Ricky. It's not very often that you have a set of twins. But in your case, you have two sets of twins. Either way you must be extremely fertile, Ricky, or you have twins that run in your family."

Ricky: "It must have something to do with the size. Molly, isn't that great? We're going to have twins!"

Molly: "Oh, Ricky, I'm so excited, not only did I want one baby, but we're going to have two now. And you, Courtney, make our family a total of seven. I can't ask for more than that, a big family which I've always wanted. And a guy that loves us both. Could you tell me when the babies are due?"

Dr. Chase: "Looks like according to the ultrasound they are due around first week of September. And they are healthy! Ricky, if you keep going like this, you're going to have a dozen kids in a couple years."

Ricky then thought about the two women and four kids coming. He was very proud but a little nervous about having to be a father of four newborns and two women to take care of. All of a sudden, it's like he had a vision of four babies crying at the same time and the women weren't there to help; he then felt helpless.

Dr. Chase: "Are you okay, Ricky? I could see you were in deep thought."

Ricky snapped out of it. Then he realized how proud he was.

Ricky: "Yeah, I'm fine, Dr. Chase. I was just thinking about something."

Dr. Chase: "Yeah, you're going to be broke. Especially when the kids have to get braces, want a car, and yet pay for college. I hope you make good money?"

Ricky: "I do okay!"

Dr. Chase whispered to Ricky off to the side.

Dr. Chase: "How did you manage to get two females? I would like to know, it's every man's desire."

Ricky: "It has to do with size!"

Dr. Chase: "So your penis size never went down?"

Ricky: "Nope, in fact it may have gotten larger."

Dr. Chase: "Huummm!"

Jimmy gave Amerio a call to set up the arrangements for the trucks to be delivered.

Jimmy: "Hi, Amerio, this is Jimmy."

Amerio: "Hi, Jimmy, how's it going? What would you like?"

Jimmy: "About the trucks that we will need. Four new trucks will be fine. If you can get them to the shop as soon as possible off of Highway 30. I'll fax you a sheet showing you the address with the requirements that

are needed for the trucks. Can you do this, hopefully within a week? Don't forget I need these trucks put in our business name with a bogus purchase receipt showing the amount of payments being made each and every month for the trucks. That way I can use the trucks as a tax write-off. And it won't bring suspicion."

Amerio: "A week will be pushing it. But within two weeks, I can get it done. Is there anything else you need, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "Yes, if you could get me the customs officer's name or names that will be doing the inspection for the ship on that day and what the Navy ship's name is, when the ship is expecting to come in, and the dock number that we will do our pickup from. It wouldn't hurt to know the contact information for the security gate guard and number of the cell phone so we can give him a call."

Amerio: "Is there anything else you would like at this time?"

Jimmy: "No, we will just start with this for now. Is your fax number on your card still legit?"

Amerio: "Yes, and I have yours as well."

Jimmy: "Thanks, Amerio! Talk to you later!"

Amerio: "Same, talk to you later!"

Jimmy hosted a meeting at his dad's house the next night with his mom, his dad, his brother, Ricky, and Molly.

Jimmy: "Well, I gathered you all here tonight for the biggest operation we will ever pull off. If any of you choose not to do this mission we're about to accomplish, please speak up now! I can tell you this that each and every one of you will receive \$1 million for your commitment and trouble after it is completed. What do you say?"

Jason: "I don't want to go to jail. I would like to hear the plan first before I will make my decision."

Molly: "Well, I won't be driving! Why do you want to pay me so much?"

Jimmy: "You will all play an important role during this period. We will take four days to get to San Diego, California, with the trucks. We will have two drivers per truck and there'll be a total four trucks and a security vehicle to follow. Dad, I will need you to get a license to be a security agency through Ace Services."

Scott: "You know, even if I'm a security agent to run with your trucks, that won't stop the police officers pulling us over, or the scales that we have to enter along the way."

Jimmy: "No, it won't, but trust me, you will be needed. It'll help make the credential of the delivery we are doing so it doesn't arouse as much suspicion. We will be hauling ten tons of cocaine from San Diego to Chicago. We will only put it in two trucks. As far as I understand, there'll be thirty-two evenly distributed crates. The other two trucks will have airplane wreckage. That will be hardly identified as an airplane. We will also need to get a few other supplies like four dummies and four six-foot freezers. I would also like to have some state-of-the-art electrical gold ribbons from like a digital or high-tech computer company."

Molly: "What is my job? I can't see how I could be of any help."

Jimmy: "Well, I will have you as a telephone receptionist for the governor of California. There will be a contact number that will dial your cell phone with an area code of the governor's location in California. You

would have to answer the phone as if you were the receptionist to pass it off to or connect to the governor. And, Jason, this is where you would come in. I know you can do some interpretations of different actors. I need you to do an interpretation of the governor which is Arnold Schwarzenegger. Can you do this, Jason?"

Jason: "Hasta la vista, baby! Yeah, I can do that!"

Jimmy: "Good! Mom, I need you to locate or figure out different information that would be needed in a top-secret government operation. That way we can get our paperwork looking appropriate. List Governor Schwarzenegger's office as a contact number on the papers. It will be Molly's cell phone that we give her. Is there any questions so far?"

Ricky: "We're going to take four days to get out there to California. How long will it take us to get back, four days?"

Jimmy: "Good question. We will be driving continuously on the way back switching off drivers every eight hours. Only to stop for restroom breaks at rest stops and gas stations. It should take us two days to travel to Chicago or less."

Scott: "How are we going to pass all the scales?"

Jimmy: "I'll be riding with you, Dad, and we will have a police escort from San Diego at the dockyard to Chicago at the bio lab. I'll be staying in touch with the lead officer's vehicle to inform them when we need to pull over. So I'll constantly be in contact with the lead vehicle. And anybody who needs anything will have to contact me. The lead officer will be contacting the leading or following county as we enter them for replacements in the escort. Like a week earlier prior to doing the delivery, I'll contact the San Diego Police Department to let him know that we'll be there at a certain time for them to meet up with us for this top-priority confidential government mission."

Jason: "That sounds pretty soundproof mission, excellent plan, Jimmy, I'm in!"

Jimmy: "Is there any more questions? Is everyone in?"

Everyone agreed.

On March 1, the four trucks had showed up at the shop of Ace Services. The following week, Ricky and Jimmy had registered them to Ace Services and ordered the plates of Ace 9 through Ace 12. They took them back to Monticello to the sign shop to get logos put on the vehicles and DOT numbers.

Scott and Ricky had set out on a journey with one of the trucks to the world's largest Air Force salvage bases in Tucson, Arizona to pick up some wreckage that would be unidentifiable to the common eye. They set off on their journey.

Scott: "Well, Ricky, we have quite the ride in front of us. It's a three-day drive, about 500 miles a day. Are you ready for this?"

Ricky: "You bet! I hope we can just find the perfect wreckage."

Scott: "Well, we should! It is the largest airplane salvage base in the world."

Ricky: "I just hope the plan works. I really don't want to spend my life in jail."

Scott: "If we play it smart, we shouldn't. As long as we pay attention to all the details and use clever

thinking.”

Ricky: “I have a set of twins coming around May 1, and I really don’t want to be on the road traveling. I want to see them being born and be with my girlfriends.”

Scott: “I know what you’re talking about. It’s the most important, or it’ll make you the proudest at the moment they’re born. I still can’t believe you have two women. And both are carrying a set of twins. You must be the luckiest man in the world.”

Ricky: “Do you think I’m doing wrong according to the Bible, having two women to love?”

Scott: “Even in the Bible they speak of contra binds. The most important thing is you show or have love for one another or all the loved ones you’re with.”

Ricky: “So, in God’s eyes, I’m okay doing what I am with the two women?”

Scott: “Yes, Ricky, it’s accepted! It’s perfectly fine in the Lord’s eyes. What’s not accepted is if you have group sex for lust or if you have or participate in orgies where there are many partners. And as far as prostitution goes, it’s not accepted in the Lord’s eyes. If you should happen to participate in these types of groups, bad things may happen. For instance, your life may go to shambles. You may have hard times in front of you which will be meaningless for your desire of life. And sexual diseases will be more prone to happen. It’s like the balance of life: you do good, good things will happen.”

Ricky: “I feel better now that you told me this. I was unsure if I was doing the right thing with accepting the two women.”

Scott: “Just remember whoever your partner or partners are, God will accept. We all travel this journey in life. Everything is made up of decisions. If you make the right decisions as time goes on, good things will come about. And if you make the wrong decisions, you’ll have troubles in everyday life. Sometimes it’s very challenging to accept to a decision that is good, but if you believe, good things will come about. We are all destined for a life journey that may be easy or hard. It’s what you make of it.”

Ricky: “That’s good to know! Thanks, Scott! I feel you have been more like my dad than my dad himself. I look up to you!”

Scott: “Well, thank you! I consider you as one of my sons as well.”

After traveling three days on the road, they made it to their destination in Tucson, Arizona. They entered the Air Force base, which then they went to the office. Then they were greeted by a gentleman named Sidney Rodrigues.

Sydney: “What may I do for you gentlemen today?”

Scott: “We’re looking for some really mangled-up airplane wreckage that’s not too large in pieces. Do you think you could help us out?”

Sydney: “That’s quite an unusual request. Matter-of-fact, I’ve never had anyone ask me about mangled wreckage to buy. May I ask you what would you need mangled wreckage for?”

Scott: “Well, you see, we’re starting a museum on airplanes and wreckage in Cedar Rapids, Iowa. We’re looking to show some of the worst disasters in history of airplane wreckage.”

Sydney: “Interesting! Sounds like a neat adventure! Well, you came to the right spot, we have some of the worst wreckages in history here.”

Scott: “Preferably the latest technology would be great for the wreckage.”

Sydney: “Well, I can’t give you the latest in technology because they’re still classified, which is not to be released to the public. But we do have some F-16s from the Air Force that have crashed, and they just recently declassified them. Would that be of interest to you?”

Scott: “That may be perfect! What about some civilian airliners? Could I look at them too?”

Sydney: “Sure. I’ll take you out to where these locations are in the yard. You make the decision on what you want.”

Scott and Ricky followed Sydney around in the yard with the truck. They came upon some wreckage from several wrecked F-16s. They stopped and scoured the wreckage. They found some wreckage that was perfect with wires hanging out from it and you couldn’t tell what it was, whether it was an airliner or military plane.

Sydney: “What do you think? Is this pretty good?”

Scott: “It’s perfect! Could you help us lift a few of these pieces into the truck?”

Sydney: “Sure, or we can get a forklift.”

Scott: “I’d rather just have pieces that you can manhandle instead.”

Sydney: “Okay, how much do you want?”

Scott: “I’ll need enough to fill up the truck if we could please.”

Sydney: “You know it’s like three dollars per pound for wreckage or any plane you buy here, some arrange even higher in price. Is that okay?”

Scott: “That’ll be fine!”

Sydney, Scott, and Ricky finished loading the truck up with the wreckage ,and then Scott and Ricky continued on their journey back to Cedar Rapids.

Scott: “Well, Ricky, looks like we’re one step closer to our mission. Let’s just hope everything else goes fine.”

Ricky: “Well, at least we got a good start. I think Jimmy’s plan will work. And I have belief in him. What’s the next step we have to do?”

Scott: “Well, I know for me, I have to do a safety course on guns to have a permit to carry a gun. And as far as registering a security service through the government, I’m just waiting on the paperwork to come through.”

Ricky: “So anybody can just start up a security service?”

Scott: “Yup! Just about anybody! They will do a background check. As long as you have no felonies on

your record, you are fine.”

Ricky: “But you’re considered disabled with bipolar.”

Scott: “Only through the Veterans Administration. It isn’t considered a threat unless I’m disabled through the state or government that places me as a high risk to carry arms.”

Ricky: “That’s good to know! Weren’t you talking about getting another pickup truck?”

Scott: “Yes, a matter-of-fact, I’ve got it scheduled to be picked up next Friday, a brand-new white Ford F250 4 x 4 Quad cab with a brush guard in the front. A bed liner and cover with safety net between the front and the backseats of the truck, running boards, and an Amber security light on top.”

Ricky: “Nice. That had to cost you quite a bit.”

Scott: “Yeah, they raped me for it, it’s like \$65,000 and some change.”

Ricky: “Wow, that’s a lot of money. Actually I need to find a vehicle for us, me, Molly, and Courtney, to carry the kids, preferably a seven- or eight-passenger vehicle that’s spacious.”

Scott: “You might be looking into getting maybe a Ford Expedition. They’re spacious and I think they’re seven or eight passenger.”

Ricky: “You know, you’re right, I know what they look like. That would be perfect for us. Do you mind if I go with you to pick up the truck?”

Scott: “That would be great, sure!”

Ricky: “Okay, thanks! We will count on it next Friday.”

Scott: “Consider it a date then!”

Ricky: “Hey, I got a question for you. So you say you’re the Messiah or the chosen one for the world. How will you ever get noticed or take charge if you say? You don’t have any special powers, do you? At least you told me before you didn’t.”

Scott: “Good question! You can just say if I play my cards right and I have the belief of God, he’ll make sure that I get noticed.”

Ricky: “I cannot see, nor can I imagine how it is even possible to become the chosen one for the world to be seen. It’s just completely impossible! You can show the people facts of situations like with the lightning in the one video you showed us recently. People just assume and figure it’s just coincidental. And the songs though, they will just figure out a way to deny it.”

Scott: “Yes, you’re correct, people just don’t believe it’s possible, nor that there is a chosen one to change the world. But I have a wildcard! I predict an asteroid strike that is recorded in my medical files and in the book that I mentioned I had written.”

Ricky: “That’s impossible. No one can predict an asteroid strike.”

Scott: “Yes, you’re correct, but it’s decoded in the Bible. Which I had figured out the code and I assume the first code meant for the asteroid to hit. But I was off by seven years. No one listened to me at the time

when I had mentioned there was going to be an asteroid strike that will hit. The first code was when I thought the day was November 9, 2012, or 9/11, but don't forget about the seven years how it plays a major role in life. I had a vision a while back where I looked at my time on the watch and it was 1:11:11 PM exactly. I happened to glance down at a brick on the ground just before seeing that time. The brick said 300 or three o'clock and then I had a vision after seeing the time on my watch which was an asteroid strike. I looked back down at the rock or brick and it said, 'Boo.' That let me know at precisely 1:11 PM that the people will be notified of an asteroid coming. All the people from the location where the asteroid is going to hit will be evacuated. It will hit at 2:24 PM. Then at three o'clock in the afternoon on November 9 or 9/11 of 2019, it will be known to all the people."

Ricky: "That makes me quiver just thinking about it. What size is it, and how will nobody be affected or killed?"

Scott: "You see, in the Bible, it speaks of a city of 70,000 people and it also says an earthquake will kill 10 percent of the city or 7,000 people. But you see back on January 8, 2006, I redirected the asteroid from hitting the city to a place that's approximately thirty to forty miles south of Iowa City with the special stone that was sealed by the King or God."

Ricky: "That sounds really fictional! How would you know at the time what to do?"

Scott: "Visions were telling me what to do. I had major visions through the whole situation directed me on the path that I took. It was meant to be seen at a later date. I didn't know when at the time but recently I figured it out."

Ricky: "So you say the date is November 9, 2019, at 2:24 PM that an asteroid will hit south of Iowa City thirty to forty miles. Not only did you predict an asteroid hit, but you picked the day, the time, and the location. I say that's impossible."

Scott: "Well, we'll just have to see, won't we?"

Ricky: "How big of a crater will it leave?"

Scott: "As far as my vision tells me, it'll be about a half-mile across."

Ricky: "Wow, that's huge and you say no one will get killed."

Scott: "That's correct. That's what I asked from God that no one shall die. But remember if I can't influence the people that I'm the chosen one. Then by the year 2027, January 24, you may see three waves of asteroids hitting the Earth to eliminate two thirds of the population. And you don't want that, so let's hope it does work, my prediction."

Ricky: "I'm rooting for you! I'm hoping you're correct!"

Scott: "Same here!"

Scott and Ricky made it back to Cedar Rapids to the shop after spending three days on the road. Jimmy looked at the wreckage and was very pleased to see what they had gathered.

Jimmy threw together a meeting at his house with Melanie, Ricky, Molly, Scott, Sondra, Jason, and then Todd and Justin. They gathered at the house at 6:00 PM. Todd and Justin were unsure why they were there.

Jimmy: "Welcome all, Todd and Justin, thanks for showing up. I threw this meeting because we need to

clarify and verify the upcoming event in May goes smoothly. Todd and Justin, you may not want to participate in this. We or I will give you the basic facts of what needs to come about. I can tell you this, what the event consists of is illegal. I won't say what it is, but you can consider it as being top secret, whether it's smuggling guns, weapons, or carrying drugs like marijuana or cocaine or maybe it could be something stolen like priceless art. Whatever it is we're hauling in May will have to be faultless on doing the mission and kept completely confidential."

Todd: "I'm not sure if I am liking this already. You can't tell us what it is we would be hauling?"

Jimmy: "That's correct. It's to your best interest not to know. But I will tell you this, if you choose to participate, I will pay you Todd and you Justin \$100,000 a piece for your duty and effort in the mission."

Justin: "What is it that we will have to do?"

Jimmy: "You and Todd will be driving a black Ford Crown Victoria, and you two would be marked as top-secret agents for the government."

Justin: "There would have to be credentials that we would have to show. Like badges identification cards and papers, and not only that, the vehicle would have to have government plates. How would you manage to pull that off?"

Jimmy: "First off, we will get a black Crown Victoria and install police lights in the car. Second off, we will get some license plates. We will have Blake from the sign shop in Monticello to re-face the plates with new stickers of government plate that is legit from Secret Service vehicle in Washington."

Scott: "I will buy the Crown Victoria and I will set up for the lights to be installed at a small shop. Which I know of just such a place. As far as the license plate goes, that may take some investigating or have somebody fly out to Washington DC to locate a plate. Maybe you, Sondra, honey!"

Sondra: "Sure!"

Todd: "Okay, you got that covered, but what about identification cards? It's really hard to duplicate them these days."

Jimmy: "Melanie, we will need you to process Todd and Justin at the county license department. Me or Ricky will get on the computer here at home and do some research what Secret Service agents have for a card. We will then design the card on the computer using a program. So then we will save it to a memory card for you can download it to the state database. You will have to tell us when to come in or when it is best time for them to show up to take their pictures and sign the card. I will give you \$50,000 for doing this. How does that sound, Melanie?"

Melanie: "Sounds pretty risky, but are you sure that the memory card will work in my computer so I can just download it to the database?"

Jimmy: "You might have to copy and paste it over the other licensed document or open up a new folder to allow it to be printed with the photo and signature on the card. All other information will be already filled out."

Melanie: "Okay, sounds good, \$50,000 sounds good too! I'm sure I can get it to work. And the best time to do this would be right after lunchtime, let's say, 1:00 PM on a Monday. Usually there are only two of us in the office at that time. If I'm working with Todd and Justin, the other secretary can handle the other customers."

Jason: "Don't forget about me. I will need a phone or phone number to be contacted."

Jimmy: "I haven't forgotten about you, Jason. You have a major role as well. I already ordered a cell phone from the same district of where the governor is located for business. That way it'll be the same area code. It should arrive here in about two weeks. Have you been practicing your Arnold Schwarzenegger impression?"

Jason: "Yes, I have! May, who is this I'm speaking with?"

Jimmy: "Very good! And, Molly, did you write down the lines that you need to say when you answer the phone?"

Molly: "Yes! I've got it covered!"

Jimmy: "Very good! Amerio had given me the custom officer's name that will be handling the Navy pier when we're there that day. I have already filled out the customs form with the officer's name. I have a ten-digit number stamp so we can stamp the customs slip that we have after we leave the gate. Amerio had already set up a second fraudulent decoy of merchandise to be inspected that morning. That'll be the numbers that will be placed on our customs form. It's very critical the timing that we go to load our trucks, we only have a window of an hour or less. And I have the gate inspector's phone number from Amerio. I have talked to him and he said give him a week to make sure he's working that morning to do the inspection getting out the gate. Sondra, you have done excellent finding the forms of top security information and duplicating the papers, they look legit for what we're doing."

Sondra: "Well, thank you, Jimmy. It took some time doing, but I think I got it right."

Jimmy: "Ricky, did you get the freezers today and ordered the dummies that we will need?"

Ricky: "Roger that! I picked the freezers off this morning, and right after that, I ordered the dummies."

Jimmy: "Todd and Justin! Do you guys have a black suit to wear?"

Todd: "I do, but it's looking a little old. It may not fit me as well anymore."

Justin: "I don't have a suit!"

Jimmy: "Well, you will both need to have a very nice suit that fits well and some nice shiny black shoes. Later on this week, I'll give you guys \$1,000 a piece to buy a suit and shoes. That is if you want to do this mission with us. Are you in or out?"

Todd: "What the heck, I suppose the worst I could get is five years in prison. This is worth it for \$100,000 to risk. It sounds like you got a good plan here."

Justin: "I think it's doable, I'm in!"

Jimmy: "There are still some small things that we need to take care of, like getting some dummy handguns, having a waist holster for you to carry a dummy 9 mm Ruger handgun. And get some badges to go in your wallet and maybe a wallet that will hold them."

Ricky: "Didn't you say something about contacting the police for an escort in San Diego?"

Jimmy: "Yes, of course. I'll be contacting the San Diego chief of police two weeks out to set up the

arrangements for them to follow us from county to county until we get to Chicago. It might be sheriffs that'll escort us. They will meet us at the ship dockyard just outside the gate. I will give the police department a call again to remind them the night before."

Justin: "You mean to tell me you're going to have cops escorting us to Chicago?"

Jimmy: "That's right! That's why we got all the official documents to make it happen."

Justin: "This is just getting better and better."

Todd: "How long will it take us to get to San Diego and back to Chicago?"

Jimmy: "We're looking at four days to drive out the San Diego which we'll be staying in hotels at night, and then on the way to Chicago, we will be driving straight through, alternating every eight hours with a fresh driver, we're looking at two drivers per truck. Me and my dad will be in the security vehicle, Todd and Justin will be in the Crown Victoria, and, Ricky, you will lead the way with whoever you want to drive with from the business."

Ricky: "I'll see if I can go with Jermaine, I'll have to ask him."

Justin: "How many vehicles are going then?"

Jimmy: "There will be a police escort in the front and the back of the convoy. Then there will be four trucks, the security vehicle, which are my dad and me, the top-secret agents in the Crown-vic, which are you, Todd and Justin. So there will be a total of eight vehicles in the convoy."

Justin: "Don't you think that's going to bring a lot of attention to us?"

Jimmy: "That's what we want! That way we won't look suspicious."

Justin: "Okay. You know best!"

Jimmy: "That should about do it! Do you have any other questions?"

Nobody spoke up; they all said, "Sure, it's okay," with a room full of excitement, wonder, and a sense of uneasiness.

It's the following Friday. Scott and Ricky drove in Scott's Ford F150 pickup to McLaugh's auto sales in Cedar Rapids. When they got there, they walk into the sales room and were greeted by a sales rep named Dave.

Dave: "Well, hi there, Scott, how's it going? We have your Quad cab Ford F250 4 x 4 truck ready. All you have to do is sign the paperwork and it's yours."

Scott: "Not so fast! I would like to inspect it and take it for a test drive."

Dave: "Sure, that's no problem! Let me have one of the other workers bring it around front."

The vehicle was then out front.

Scott, Ricky, and Dave get in the truck. Dave's in the passenger seat, while Scott was behind the steering wheel.

Scott: "I would like to take it out on the Interstate 380 and see if it's got power like you say it does with the new turbo V6 engine they put in the truck."

Scott drove through town until he got to the Interstate 380 and then rapidly took the truck up to eighty miles an hour.

Dave: "You do realize it's only a fifty-five-mile-per-hour zone here. And they have cameras on the highway."

Scott: "I guess that Mc'laugh may have a ticket to pay."

Dave: "I suppose it's okay! How do you feel about the truck?"

Scott: "It has great power. I'm impressed."

Dave: "Well, all we got to do is go back to the store and sign the paperwork."

Scott: "Okay, I'll head back!"

They got back to the auto store and were parked out front.

Dave: "It's a good truck, isn't it? I told you there would be nothing wrong with it. You will love it at first sight."

While they were sitting there, all of a sudden there was a fly on the dashboard, and then Scott noticed the fly had taken a shit in the truck, which suddenly triggered Scott.

Scott: "That's not cool!"

Dave: "What's not cool?"

Dave was looking at the fly shitting on the dashboard inside the truck.

Scott: "Are you trying to sell me a shitty truck or what?"

Dave: "What are you talking about? I thought you were happy with the truck."

Scott: "I'm not going to buy this truck! You're going to have to get me another one."

Dave: "No! This is the truck you wanted, and we ordered it for you special, and there's nothing wrong with it."

Scott: "You can't see the shit on the dashboard."

Dave: "Well, I do, but that isn't anything."

Scott: "Well, it is to me! How would you like me to take a running shit on your front seat of your vehicle? Would you like that?"

Dave: "Well no, I wouldn't!"

Scott: "Well, I consider this to be a used vehicle, with shit in it."

Dave: "Oh, come on now, you can't be serious?"

Scott: "Well, I'm as serious as a heart attack. You're going to have to do something about it or get me another truck."

Dave: "What if I dropped the price \$500 on the truck? Would that make you happy?"

Scott: "I'm thinking like \$1,000, then I'll accept the truck with the shit in it. But I want it cleaned, and if I find some more shit in the truck, it'll be another thousand dollars I want off."

Dave: "I don't know if I can give you \$1,000 off on the truck, I'll have to check with my manager."

Scott: "You better hope he says yes, or you will be getting me another truck."

Dave went inside the store and talked to his manager. The manager seemed to be very shocked of the idea that Scott was complaining about fly shit in the vehicle, so the manager came over to Scott as he had stepped outside the vehicle with Ricky.

Manager: "Sir, we can't give you \$1,000 off on the vehicle because of fly shit."

Scott: "That's fine! Either I'll take my business elsewhere or you will have to give me another truck just like this one without the fly shit."

The manager looked distraught and realized it would cost the dealership more than \$1,000 to reorder the truck.

Manager: "Sir, you're unreasonable, but if it makes you happy, we will give you \$1,000 off the truck if you sign the paperwork right now with your trade-in."

Scott: "Will you clean the fly shit out of the truck?"

Manager: "Yes, we will, sir!"

Scott: "Then you have a deal! Give me the paperwork with the new price."

The manager then left to go back inside with Dave, Scott, and Ricky. Dave had the new paperwork made up.

Dave: "Scott, if you could sign right here on the X."

Scott signed the paperwork, then Ricky spoke up.

Ricky: "You know, Dave, if you would have given Scott ten or fifteen minutes to think about it, his mind would have changed. You see, he's got bipolar disorder. Different things affect him differently! Then they pass after he thinks about them."

Dave then felt swindled.

Dave: "Hmmm. May I help you with a vehicle there, sir?"

Ricky: "A matter of fact, you can. I'm looking to buy a new Ford Expedition."

Dave: "I can help you with that. Is there a color in mind that you would like? And would you like extras on it?"

Ricky: "A black Expedition would be great. Extras would be nice if the price is right."

Dave went to show Ricky the black Expeditions that they had on the lot. Ricky picked one out. They did the paperwork and the price was okay with Ricky. Scott and Ricky had left Mc'laugh's auto sales in Cedar Rapids with two new vehicles.

Sondra couldn't find a security service vehicle online, so then she flew out to Washington DC by the capital. She spent a couple days scoping for a Crown Victoria security vehicle with government plates. She found the perfect one and took pictures of what the vehicle looked like with license plate number.

Ricky had gone to the sign shop in Monticello. He talked to Blake about making up some duplicate plates of US official government numbers. He had given him two other plates that Melanie had grabbed from the license office where she worked.

Ricky: "Hi, Blake. I was wondering if you could do a favor for us. I know you've been great doing the decals on the trucks and we really appreciate it. They look great!"

Blake: "What is it you want me to do?"

Ricky: "Well, we're doing something coming up for a display. We need some license plates converted to US official plates. I have a picture of what I want the plates to look like."

Blake looked at a picture of the Crown Victoria with license plates.

Blake: "You know I can't duplicate those plates. It's against the law, and I could go to jail if I did."

Ricky: "Well, I can assure you nobody will find out who did them. Plus, I'll pay you \$5,000 for doing it."

Blake looked at Ricky and looked back down at the picture. He thought for a moment and realized it would be an easy \$5,000 to make.

Blake: "Well, you know, you and Jimmy have been really good to me as far as giving me business. I suppose I could do this for you guys. When would you need them done by?"

Ricky: "As soon as possible. When you get them done, give me a call and I'll bring over the \$5,000 cash."

Blake: "Okay, Ricky. Thanks!"

Ricky: "No, thank you!"

Tony Percheatty had given Jimmy a call about two weeks out when the shipment date was to come in.

Tony: "Is this Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "Yes, this is Jimmy! Is this Tony Percheatty?"

Tony: "Yes, this is Tony! I'm calling to let you know the shipment is going to be here May 17 at Pier 13 with the ship called the USS *Montana*. It'll come in early that morning or during the night, it's a cargo ship for

the Navy. The officer in charge of the cargo will meet you at 5:00 AM, his name is Alexander Wentworth. You will have to enter the Navy dock yard about 5:00 AM on that day. Now customs will show up approximately 6:00 to 6:30 AM, and you will have to be loaded and on your way. Do you have everything in order on how you're going to do the delivery to Chicago?"

Jimmy: "Yes, everything's set up! You should be receiving your shipment in Chicago at the lab on May 19 in the morning if everything goes well as planned."

Tony: "Very good. I'm counting on you to pull this off. I will owe you one, and this will be the last favor I ask from you."

Jimmy: "Very well. I may take you up on that offer someday. I will give you a call when we're about two hours out from the lab. If you would like to meet us there, that's your option. You have my account number, correct?"

Tony: "Yes, I do, and the \$15 million will be in your account once the delivery is completed."

Jimmy: "You might see police cars with us, but don't worry about that. That's part of the plan."

Tony: "That's fine! I just don't want any problems."

Jimmy: "There won't be! Hopefully, if I have it planned right, it should go as smooth as silk."

Tony: "That'll work! I'll be seeing you on the nineteenth then. Good luck!"

Jimmy: "Till then, bye!"

Jimmy threw a meeting at the house on May 11 at 6:00 PM with all the members that were to go on the run and participate in the plan for May 13. The members were Scott, Jimmy, Ricky, Todd, Justin, Jermaine, Kenny, Curt, Chester, Freddie, Marty, and Dan. Molly and Jason were staying back at the house to answer calls during the time of the delivery. Sondra and Melanie were at the meeting as well. There were sixteen of them involved.

Jimmy: "I gathered you all here tonight because of the major top-secret delivery we will be performing starting in two days. We will be heading out from the shop in Cedar Rapids at 8:00 AM with the four box trucks, the security vehicle, and the Crown Victoria car. So I would like to have everybody there half-hour prior. Far as I can see, we got everything in order. There may be questions that some of you may have what we're hauling. But trust me, you don't need to know no more than what we tell you. To lead the convoy coming from a Navy shipyard in San Diego to Chicago will be you, Ricky and Jermaine. We will have Kenny and Curt in the next truck after that, there will be Dan and Freddie, and finally Marty and Chester for the last box truck. Following the four trucks will be the security vehicle which will be me and my dad, Scott. After the security truck will be Todd and Justin in the Crown Victoria. Ricky, I will need you to pick up from the supermarket some fish, big fish, maybe eight to ten pounds. You may have to go to a meat locker that butchers cows and pick up eight cow eyes that are in excellent shape."

Ricky: "Got it!"

Jimmy: "As far as I can see, the Crown Victoria is set and ready to go. Todd and Justin, do you have your suits, and do they look super spiffy with shoes and belt?"

Todd: "Yes!"

Justin: “Yes, I do! We still need our wallets, badges, side-arm waist holsters, and dummy 9 mm weapons.”

Jimmy: “I have them right here!”

Jimmy handed Todd and Justin the badges in the wallets, holsters, and 9 mm’s.

Jimmy: “Now, I need you to put your identification cards and necessary information that you may need, for instance, your credit cards, ID cards. Only two trucks will be carrying the contents of what we’re picking up at the pier. Ricky and Jermaine, you will be holding one of the contents, which will be sixteen 750-pound crates plus the two crates that are in the truck. Chester and Marty, you will be holding or hauling the other sixteen crates plus two extras that are already in the truck. When you get to the dock and unload the two crates, make sure they’re loaded last. Two other trucks will have contents in it as well, but they’re used as a decoy. Any questions so far?”

Chester: “I would like to know what we’re hauling and why we aren’t using all four trucks to carry the merchandise? Something sounds fishy.”

Jimmy: “It’s a need-to-know basis. If you don’t like it, I’ll get somebody else to take your spot. You’re talking this is good money you’ll be making. Plus, I will make sure you all get \$20 in regular time for now on. It will be \$40 an hour for double time for over forty hours during the run. I’ll pay you from eight o’clock in the morning on May 13 to the time we come back to the shop on the nineteenth. That’s a total of over \$6,500 each to go on this run for one week of work. Plus, the business is paying for all the hotels. The paperwork looks great, and everything is looking really good. I contacted the San Diego police chief a week ago and told him we need to have an escort of two cars in a connecting chain from San Diego to Chicago with this delivery. He only authorized it after I faxed him the top-secret confidential paperwork that we have. I will give him a call again the night before the delivery to verify the escort will be with us at 6:00 AM on May 17. Does anybody wish to step away from doing this mission? Speak now if you do not wish to go.”

Nobody spoke up; they all agreed. The meeting came to an end.

It’s now May 12 around 9:00 PM. Ricky was spending some quality time with Molly and Courtney sitting around in the living room.

Ricky: “Well, you two fine women of mine, are we ready for playtime in the bedroom yet before I head off tomorrow?”

Molly: “I want you to rock my world, Ricky.”

Courtney: “No, Molly! I’m going to rock Ricky’s world.”

Molly: “Well, Courtney, we both can rock Ricky’s world.”

Ricky: “Well, I’ll give you both something to make me unforgettable over the next week.”

Ricky, Molly, and Courtney headed to the bedroom. They got undressed and all crawled under the covers. A little foreplay went on under the covers.

Courtney: “I want Ricky first, Molly, Is that okay?”

Molly: “I suppose that’s okay, sweetie, I’ll give you first dibs.”

Ricky mounted Courtney in the masonry position, while Molly was fondling Courtney's breast.

Ricky: "Oh, oh, oh, yes, you two are great. Pregnant women make me so excited."

Courtney: "Emm, amm, oooh, ouch, ouch, that hurts. Pull him out please, I can't take it. It hurts!"

Ricky: "What's wrong, am I too deep!"

Courtney: "I'm not sure, but please stop."

Ricky stopped from having sex with Courtney. Molly kind of wondered since Courtney was two weeks past her due date that she was possibly having labor pains.

Courtney: "There it is again, ouch, ahhh, ouch. I think I'm going into labor."

Ricky: "Are you sure? If you are, you should have another pain within a couple minutes."

Ricky looked at his watch, noticing the time. Then about five minutes later, Courtney had another pain.

Molly: "Courtney, you're going to have the babies. You're in labor!"

Courtney: "Oh no, I'm not ready yet!"

Ricky, Molly, and Courtney got dressed, and Courtney gathered a change of clothes and a premade baby bag that was set up. Ricky grabbed the two car seats. They called Dr. Chase and let him know Courtney was going into labor. Dr. Chase headed to the hospital, while Ricky, Courtney, and Molly had gotten in the Ford Expedition and also headed to the hospital. Once they got to the children's birthing center at the hospital, they had gotten checked in and given a room. The doctor came and checked on Courtney and realized her contractions were about two minutes apart.

Dr. Chase: "Ma'am, you're coming pretty quickly with these labor pains. Let me check and see how far you're dilated."

After she took her clothes off and got into a hospital gown, she got on the bed, then the doctor put a little lube on two of his fingers and then inserted them into her canal.

Dr. Chase: "Ma'am, you're like 7 cm dilated, you're going to have a baby within the hour or babies, I should say."

Ricky: "Wow, is there anything I can do?"

Dr. Chase: "I'll let you cut the cord on the babies when they come out. For the meantime you can comfort your woman at the side of the bed, and you too, Molly."

And he looked at Molly.

Molly (holding Courtney's hand): "Courtney, I'm here for you, honey."

Ricky: "Okay, Courtney, take deep breaths and push, foofff, foofff, foofff."

Courtney: "I can't take it. It hurts too bad. Can you give me something for the pain please?"

Dr. Chase: “Sorry, ma’am, it’s too late to give you an epidural. You’ll have to push through the pain.”

Courtney: “Aahhhhhh, oh my god. It hurts, it hurts so bad!”

Ricky: “It’s okay, honey.”

Courtney: “How can you say it’s okay when it hurts, it’s your entire fault.”

Molly: “Honey, baby, it will be all over soon, just keep pushing, concentrate on the birth.”

Courtney: “Aaaaahhhhhhhh.”

Dr. Chase had just delivered the first baby from Courtney as Courtney had pushed it out.

Dr. Chase: “Okay, Ricky, are you ready to do the honor? And cut the cord!”

Ricky cut the cord. Then Dr. Chase delivered the second baby about a minute and a half to two minutes later.

Dr. Chase: “Looks like your first baby is a boy born at twelve o’clock and the second baby is a girl born at 12:03 AM on May 13.”

After the nurses had cleaned the babies up and wrapped them in a towel, they brought the babies to Courtney. The doctor was done with the birth, and Courtney was sitting upright with two babies, one on each side while she was holding them.

Ricky: “They’re beautiful, healthy babies, Courtney. You did a great job!”

Courtney: “You had something to do with it too, Ricky, I love you. This is wonderful, now we need to come up with a name for both. I was thinking of Christian for the boy and Christine for the girl.”

Ricky: “I was thinking Lucky for the boy and Venus for the girl.”

Courtney: “Are you kidding me, Ricky? Are you serious? Lucky is a dog’s name! We’re not calling our children Lucky and Venus.”

Molly: “Courtney, I like the names that you came up with. Christian and Christine is a great set of names for twins.”

Ricky: “What about Bruno and Lacey?”

Courtney and Molly: “No Ricky!”

They both said it at the same time.

Ricky: “Okay, Courtney, they’re good names, we will call them Christian and Christine.”

Ricky then called Jimmy at two o’clock in the morning to tell him about the good news of the babies being born.

Ricky: “Hi, Jimmy, guess what? I’m a proud daddy now! Courtney just had the babies!”

Jimmy: "Well, congratulations, Ricky! One boy and one girl, right? What are their names?"

Ricky: "Christian and Christine!"

Jimmy: "Are you going to be ready to go in the morning?"

Ricky: "Well, actually, Courtney would like me to stick around for couple days."

Jimmy: "That kind of brings up a dilemma, Ricky, we need you."

Ricky: "Well, I was thinking, I could fly out to San Diego on the evening of May 16, and then you could pick me up at the airport that night for the next morning which I'll be ready."

Jimmy: "Yeah, I suppose that'll work! Okay, good luck with the babies and say hi to your women for me."

Ricky: "Thanks! See you then!"

The next morning at the shop, everybody showed up and was ready to go at 7:30 AM except for Ricky. Jimmy threw in a speech before leaving.

Jimmy: "Okay, everyone, this is the plan. We will be driving about eight hours a day for the next four days. I have reserved hotel rooms for us to stay at along the way to San Diego. If anyone needs to use the restroom along the way, just give me a call. I will try to pull off at the nearest rest stop or gas station. We will also be filling the gas in the trucks twice a day. If your vehicle gets to a quarter of a tank, please give me a call. On the way back, we will be escorted by police. We will also be driving straight through to Chicago. Alternating drivers every eight hours, so it's very important if you're not driving on the way back to try and get sleep so you will be fresh to drive. When we get gas, that's the time to buy your lunch and drinks, it wouldn't hurt to buy extra to eat along the way. I have six cases of water, one per truck or vehicle to be used. Any questions?"

Jermaine: "I don't see Ricky here, he's my alternate partner."

Jimmy: "Ricky had a set of twins this morning. We will be meeting up with him at the airport on the night of the sixteenth. He will be with us on the way back, so don't worry."

Jermaine: "Roger that!"

Jimmy: "Any other questions?"

No other questions were addressed.

Jimmy: "Everyone bring it close and let's do a prayer. Dear God, we take off on this journey today and hope that we will be successful in our mission. Please look out for us and allow everybody to get back safely and sound on the May 19 and let no trouble come to us. Amen! Okay, let's roll and hope for a safe journey."

For the next four days, everything went as planned. The night of the sixteenth, after everyone was situated in the hotel, Jimmy and his dad went to the airport and picked up Ricky. The next morning at 4:00 AM, everyone got in their vehicles and headed to the Navy shipyard. Jimmy had called the security guard for the Navy shipyard security gate that morning to inform him that they will be there by 5:00 AM. The gate guard assured him everything will go as planned.

Jimmy had also called the San Diego Police Department to remind them that they will need an escort starting at 6:00 AM from the shipyard gate. They arrived at the gate at 4:45 AM, which they all entered and then went to Pier 13 where the USS *Montana* was sitting. The four trucks backed up to the dock. Jimmy had walked toward the ship and was addressed by Alexander Wentworth, the commander in charge of the shipment.

Alexander: "Hi, my name is Alexander Wentworth. Glad you showed up! I was starting to wonder if this was a good situation that I got into."

Jimmy: "No need to worry! Once we get the crates loaded up and out by six, you then will be successful on your mission. There should be thirty-two, correct?"

Alexander: "Yes, I will have my guys load them in your trucks. Is there anything I need to do prior to loading the trucks?"

Jimmy: "Just unload the four crates that we have in back of the two trucks and then place them in the back of the trucks after loading the contents."

Alexander: "That'll work, thanks! We should have it loaded up within a half hour."

The trucks were then loaded without incident. Jimmy closed up the back of the trucks. He then placed a security sticker on each rollup door of the trucks that had said, "Do not break this seal." He then placed paddle locks and security bands to the door's locking hinge. They got in their trucks and headed to the security gate. Jimmy handed the officer that he had talked to on the phone the customs form. The officer then stamped it, showing that it left the yard. They were met just outside the gate with two police cars. Jimmy had gotten out of the vehicle. He walked up to the lead police car, which the officer had gotten out of the car to talk with Jimmy.

Jimmy: "How's it going today, sir?"

Lead San Diego Police Car Officer: "Good, I'm here to give you an escort to the next county. Is there anything you'd like me to know before we leave?"

Jimmy: "Yes, we're leaving from here to go to Chicago. This is a top-secret mission, which you are part of, so I ask of your full participation. It's very important as we go from county to county. I need you to contact the next county prior to you taking off to let them know approximately when we'll need replacement officers to escort this convoy. We will only be taking the main routes on the interstates. I will give you my phone number so you can pass it on to the next replacements. We will only stop to fill up fuel and restroom breaks. How does that sound? If there's any questions or problems, please call or have the following replacements call. I will always keep in contact with the lead vehicle when we need to pull over. Got that?"

Lead San Diego Police Car Officer: "You can count on us! We will make it happen! You shouldn't have any problems! Does it matter who escorts you, can it be state, local, or county?"

Jimmy: "It doesn't matter as long as we have two police cars. One in the front and one in the back at all time to secure this load on this journey."

Lead San Diego Police Car Officer: "Roger that! Ready when you are!"

The convoy then took off with the police cars, one in front and one in back leading the way. By now it is 6:00 AM, they had no longer left with the convoy when Jimmy noticed a customs vehicle passing them. They had traveled a couple hundred miles with the police escort switching every twenty-five to fifty miles.

You could say it's working like a charm.

Scott and Jimmy were in the Ace Services' security truck just talking about different things.

Jimmy: "Dad, you say that you're the Messiah and God can do just about anything or anything. Why is it that the people of the world are so focused on evolution and trying to take out religion? Don't they know God has given us everything that we have today? There are so many miracles that have happened over the years. Why won't the people accept the miracles, and why doesn't God put a stop to it?"

Scott: "Those are some good questions, Jimmy. God is our father, and he lets us people make our own decisions. It's like a father raising a child. The father will sometimes let the child make the mistake and then correct the child from doing wrong or to guide them in the right path to take. I am the Savior of the world through God's eyes to make everything righteous again. I am to convince the people that God with the spirits exists and he's in our surroundings each and every day. What they teach in school about evolution is a laugh. People did not come from monkeys or apes. If that were to be the case, that means we would still be able to breed monkeys and/or apes in the human chain, which is impossible. I know just thinking about it is sick but it's true. Science just can't quite figure out and accept that God had placed Adam and Eve on this earth six thousand years ago to start the human race. The Bible speaks of it and you got to accept the truth of it, but with the know-it-all science professors and revolutionaries, they are to believe and convince people into their wrongdoing. Which God laughs and the people who know also laugh about what they come up with, as far as evolution goes."

Jimmy: "You know I see it each and every day where they're trying to take out God and religion. Why doesn't God put a stop to it?"

Scott: "He's letting the people who don't believe in God fall flat on their faces. It's meant to be changed by the chosen one to make believers of all people and to face the actual facts that God is king and ruler of us."

Jimmy: "You know, back in 2015, the American Library Association or the government tried to ban the Bible. How preposterous is that? That is really messed up of people's rights, especially when there are over 2 billion Christians in the world."

Scott: "If they do ban the Bible, it will only be for a short time. The Bible's been active for over two thousand years. What is written in the Bible is true. Some of the writing may be extending the truth of realization, for instance, when Jesus walked on water. His way of preaching to extend God's belief to the people is to believe he walked on water. No other person could match up to Jesus, but if the people can't see that, they're blind. Maybe some of the facts seem to be a little excessive. We will never know for sure if all the facts of the Bible stand as they say. We can only accept what is said and maybe Jesus did actually walk on water with the spirits and God allowing this to happen."

Jimmy: "Now, I remember you saying when you went to school every morning you had to do the Pledge of Allegiance. They took the Pledge of Allegiance out of the schools due to the fact it says 'One nation under God' and that they're trying to change the currency because it says 'In God we trust.' What do you think about that?"

Scott: "You see, if all the people removed God from their society, they're just making their death wish, which they don't see. In the year 2027, from what my visions have showed me, also stated in the Bible, there will be three waves of asteroid strikes on this earth to eliminate over 4 billion people. This is God's way of handling things—to make believers again and start over. But if I am able to prove to the world that I am the Savior to bring a new world policy to go into effect, to combine all nations as one and eliminate war, then the elimination of people in 2027 will not happen. You see, if I choose not to push forward as a believer in God to be the Savior, I would then be considered the Antichrist to bring doom to the world. We don't want that."

Jimmy: "You're starting to scare me! It seems impossible for you to become the Savior. Let's hope destruction doesn't happen."

Scott: "I'm doing everything within my power to save the world, and I do believe I will do so. Someday I will prove it to the people."

Jimmy: "What do you think about Lugo House taking religion out of their questions to be asked?"

Scott: "They think they can control the people of what they believe is right. It's like karma; you do wrong, wrong will come to you. So I see that company falling flat on its face and lose sales in the future. What they ended up doing there were a few people, which asked the question why Lugo House could not answer the question of who is Jesus. So what Lugo House had done within a week later, they ended up taking out all religious questions from their system when all they had to do is just answer the question of who Jesus was or is. I had Lugo House, but I returned it and told the store that it was broken. I then purchased Hamazon Sound, which speaks of religions if you ask it the question."

Jimmy: "You know they have found human skulls that date twelve to thirteen years old."

Scott: "Why aren't there older skulls that have been found of the human race, and can you really trust the information of technology that they dictated to say that its twelve thousand years old? It's a hypothesis that they're trying to state to the people in believing humans have been around for more than six thousand years."

Jimmy: "Thanks for the discussion, it's really been inspiring. You really seem to know your facts, Dad."

Amerio had given Jimmy a call, after the custom officer approved the thirty-six crates and miscellaneous items which were duplicated as far as what Jimmy had for a top-secret delivery from the ship. There was a moving company hired locally to take the contents from the ship that same morning after the customs officer had inspected it. It was thirty-six crates of sugar and some wreckage of an airplane. The sugar had gone to a warehouse of a local distributor. Amerio had given Jimmy the ten-digit customs number on the paperwork. Jimmy then set his stamp to the numbers and stamped the fraudulent customs paperwork with that number.

A day later, alternating police escorts and stopping only to fill up fuel, switching drivers, eating and taking restroom breaks by driving straight through, at this time in the journey, they made it to Nebraska. Jermaine and Ricky were having a conversation.

Ricky: "How's Laverta doing, Jermaine?"

Jermaine: "She's awesome. I'm so glad that you have introduced her to me. She is so much fun. I look forward to seeing her each and every night when I get off work."

Ricky: "So has she discussed anything about having kids?"

Jermaine: "Matter-of-fact. Good question you asked. Actually we're expecting our first kid in December, almost at the beginning of the year."

Ricky: "Sweet, that is so nice! You got to be happy. Is there any plans of getting married in the near future?"

Jermaine: "Yes, she's so excited! She wants to have the wedding prior to giving birth. She's looking at Saturday, October 20, for the wedding. I will be inviting you, Jimmy, a few other drivers that work for you, and of course, relatives from both sides to the wedding. Since I started working for you, Ricky, my life has been excellent. I enjoy my job, you introduced me to a great woman, and I've really been enjoying my life. Thanks,

Ricky, for being my friend!”

Ricky: “No problem! You’ve done it yourself! You’re a great person and a hard worker.”

Jermaine: “So what about you? You’re a new daddy now. And you have two women so that I hear. How did you manage to do this? Most men would be happy to just having one woman to love. Not only that! You’ve got a set of twins that you had just delivered. And as far as Molly, I hear she’s expecting a set of twins with you too. If you ask me, it’s a miracle to have two women and four babies or kids in the first pregnancy with both of them. But if you keep going like this, you’re going to have a dozen kids before you know it.”

Ricky: “I hear you! It’s been a shock to me as well and also to Courtney and Molly. We’ll just have to see what life brings. I don’t want to have more than eight kids. We will have to use birth control or get fixed, either way, we’ll watch it.”

Jermaine: “So how are you planning on staying together? It’s illegal to marry two women, but I suppose you could just be friends and live together.”

Ricky: “I think we got the love and trust in the relationship that we can stay together, but if someday they ever legalize more than one partner for marriage, we will definitely do it.

Jermaine: “Amen, brother!”

The convoy was now about fifty miles from Chicago. Everything along the way with the convoy, the switching out of the lead police vehicles, was working out really smoothly. Jimmy then was talking to his dad.

Jimmy: “We’re almost there, Dad! Just another fifty miles and we have made it. This is going real smoothly, I think we’ve done it.”

Scott: “We’re not there yet. Never count your chickens until the eggs have hatched. There’s a lot that could go wrong yet. The drivers are getting tired; I’m sure for driving such a long distance. One of the drivers may or could have an accident. That would cause a dilemma or there could be law enforcement when we get to our destination to do the verified check of the delivery.”

Jimmy: “I think I overprepared this mission. We didn’t need Molly or Jason, also we didn’t need Todd, Justin, or the Crown Vic.”

Right after Jimmy had said this, they noticed in the air a helicopter approaching. The helicopter landed in the middle of the eastbound lanes blocking off all traffic.

Jimmy: “Oh crap! I spoke to soon! I believe that helicopter says Homeland Security on the side of it.”

Scott: “Well, Jimmy! This may be the breaking point. Let’s see if our research will pay off for us.”

Three gentlemen got out of the helicopter and then approached the vehicles in the convoy. Scott and Jimmy got out of the vehicle, along with Ricky, Todd, and Justin. Todd put the flashing lights on in the Crown Victoria. They met up with the three gentlemen from the helicopter at the security pickup truck that Scott was driving.

One of the gentlemen, Asian or Chinese looking, spoke up to the crowd of the convoy.

Chan Lee: “My name is Chan Lee and I am the chief officer of the Chicago Department of Homeland Security. I am following up on a report filed about a day and a half ago of a suspicious convoy, possibly

carrying weapons or explosives heading to Chicago. May I ask who's in charge of this convoy?"

Jimmy: "I'm in charge! What may I do for you, sir?"

Chan Lee: "What kind of supporting documents do you have for this convoy, sir?"

Jimmy: "Well, I can tell you this! We're on a top-secret government mission that was directed by the Top-Secret National Security Agency, TSNSA, backed by the governor of California to entitle us to deliver the contents in the trucks. You're interfering with top-secret national security. But if you'd like to see the paperwork, here you have it."

Jimmy handed Chan the top-secret paperwork and customs form.

Chan Lee: "Give us a minute to check out your information."

Chan Lee looked at one of the other agents who was wearing an ear mic that had also approached the vehicles with him. Then he told that agent (Benny) to call headquarters to find out what they can about the top-secret documents. He handed Benny the paperwork.

Chan Lee: "Benny, I want you to contact the office and have them research any top-secret missions for the last couple days."

Benny called in front of them and talked through the mic.

Benny: "Headquarters, can you hear me, over?"

Pause in silence.

Benny: "I need you to research a top-secret document and tell me what you can find out about it. The document says it's from the TSNSA and it's top-secret confidential. It's routed from San Diego to Chicago. It's directing Ace Services in delivering some contents, which is unsure of to Chicago. Do you copy, over?"

Brief silence.

Benny: "It shows a Governor Schwarzenegger authorized the delivery from California. It came off of a Navy ship in San Diego. The document number is 381-669571S, over."

Silence.

Benny: "They say they can't find anything of the document in their database. Also they say there is no such thing as TSNSA for an agency."

Justin: "You do realize we're above you in national security. Our agency we work for is nontraceable."

Chan Lee: "Nonsense. We can find out anything about the government or anybody."

Justin: "We are from Washington, we work in connection with the president and the TSNSA, we're above your clearance."

Chan Lee: "If you say you're from the top-secret agency, show me your credentials, badge and ID card."

Todd and Justin took out their wallets, flashed the badges, and handed them their ID cards.

Chan Lee: “Benny, go ahead and run their cards to see if they’re legit. Also run the license plate on the Crown Victoria.”

Benny spoke through his mic.

Benny: “We have a Todd Johnson and a Justin McCoy with a top-secret identification card. Could you run their identification and then report back to me?”

A few seconds have passed. Benny looked back at Chan and the individuals standing around.

Benny: “They cannot find any identification relating to the special forces or top-secret agencies in the United States. They state you guys are from Cedar Rapids. Their record seems to be clean though, with nothing on it. Not even a speeding ticket.”

Todd: “See, you can’t even tell the legitness of our cards, they’re above your national security.”

Chan Lee: “Run their license plates on the Crown Vic, will you, Benny?”

Benny: “Headquarters, we have a Crown Vic, with the license plate number 812-764, how do you copy, over.”

Silence.

Benny: “They looked up the license plate number and it is a Crown Vic from Washington DC.”

Chan Lee: “I’ve never come across anything like this before. Don’t ask me how you managed to get above our national security level. But something seems awful fishy. Let me give Gov. Schwarzenegger a call and see what he has to say.”

Chan Lee dialed from the paperwork given to him the governor’s number.

Molly: “This is Governor Schwarzenegger’s office, Sally speaking, how may I help you, ma’am or sir?”

Chan Lee: “This is Chan Lee, the chief investigator of the Chicago homeland security office, I would like to speak to Gov. Schwarzenegger please, is he in?”

Molly: “Give me a second. I’ll see if I can get him.”

She put Chan Lee on hold for a moment while office music was playing through the phone. She returned to the phone.

Molly: “Okay, sir, I’ll connect you to his line.”

Jason: “This is Gov. Arnold Schwarzenegger speaking. How may I help you?”

Chan Lee: “I have some paperwork in my hand that states you are authorizing a delivery from San Diego to Chicago. Can you tell me who authorized you to sign off on this paperwork?”

Jason: “That is strictly confidential! All I know is that I’m requested to keep it a secret for the identity sake of the people. This came across my desk about three weeks ago from the TSNSA.”

Chan Lee: “Interesting. So you can’t give me details on the contents of the delivery.”

Jason: "All I know it's confidential and above top secret with the highest priority."

Chan Lee: "Well, since I have you on the phone with me, I've been a big fan of your movies. I was wondering if you could do one of your movie impersonations?"

Jason: "Sure thing. Hasta la vista, baby."

Chan Lee: "Thanks, that was great. Sorry for taking up your time?"

Jason: "No problem, O'll."

Chan Lee then hung up the phone. He was stumped, wondering what was in the cargo being carried. Then he looked at Benny.

Chan Lee: "Benny, I would like you to call headquarters to research the customs paperwork and verify what was picked up at the Navy dock in San Diego shipyard."

Benny: "Headquarters over."

Brief silence.

Benny: "I need you to look into some customs paperwork with the number of 4583032179 that was noted to be picked up yesterday morning in San Diego Navy Yard. Maybe you can contact the customs officer that did the paperwork."

Chan Lee: "Well, sir, we're going to have to open your trucks up to verify that you're not carrying anything illegal or explosives."

Scott then pulled out his revolver and pointed it at Chan's head.

Chan Lee: "Hold on now, easy there, fella! Not so quick!"

Scott: "My orders state nobody is supposed to go near the delivery trucks."

Chan Lee: "If you shoot me, you're going to jail for life and possibly the death sentence."

Justin: "Not necessarily, we outride your authority. If I say you can't go in that truck and I tell him to shoot you, you're dead and it's wiped under the floormat."

Chan Lee: "Well, will you please lower the revolver. We won't leave here until we look at the contents of your vehicles."

Benny looked at Chan.

Benny: "I just got the information that you seek. It does seem legit if there are thirty-six crates with some plane wreckage and some freezers that customs had inspected yesterday morning prior to leaving the shipyard at the Navy dock in San Diego."

Scott held steady with his ground holding the revolver to Chan's head.

Justin: "It's okay, Scott, you can lower the gun now. We will let them look at the trucks."

Scott lowered the revolver and put it away.

Justin: “But remember if you leak any of this information out to anyone what’s in them trucks, you may be possibly eliminated in the future for your actions or end up going to jail. Understand!”

Chan Lee: “I have a top-secret clearance too, you know, I understand!”

Justin: “Okay, Jimmy, go ahead and open up four trucks to show them the contents. Which one would you like to start with?”

He looked at Chan.

Chan Lee: “Let’s start from the front of the convoy and work our way to the back.”

Jimmy went to the front of the convoy trucks and opened the rollup door. Chan looked at the crates that were stacked in the truck.

Chan Lee: “Looks like this truck is full of crates.”

He looked at the other two people that was with him.

Chan Lee: “Open those two crates, will you?”

They took a pry-bar and opened the two crates in the back of the truck.

Chan Lee: “Seems strange that this is top-secret information to be hiding when you’re carrying wreckage in them crates.”

Chan then went to the next truck. He did the exact same thing, two crates to be opened in the back of the truck.

Chan Lee: “Okay, so I count thirty-six crates between the two trucks. Let’s see what the other two trucks have in them.”

Jimmy then opened the next truck. Chan saw some really mangled-up wreckage with some high-tech electrical stripping and wires hanging loose from it. Then last but not least, Jimmy opened the fourth truck. Chan got up into the truck and saw four freezers. There were hazard biological stickers on top of the freezers.

Chan Lee: “Well, I think I will open these freezers to see what’s inside.”

Jimmy: “Is that such a good idea when it says biological hazard? Shouldn’t you have chemical suits to open them? What if it’s a biological hazard that could go airborne to contaminate the people?”

Chan Lee: “I guess we’ll just find out, won’t we?”

Chan Lee opened one of the freezers. He looked down inside. It was a little dark, so he turned the light on his cell phone and then looked to see what’s in the freezer. He was amazed, and a sense of amazement came across him.

Chan Lee: “This is impossible! How could it be? You’re carrying alien wreckage and aliens.”

He reached down inside of the freezer and touched one of the eyes on the alien.

Chan Lee: "Oooh it's a real eye! They're real! Their flesh looks rubbery yet has the consistency of what fish meat looks like."

He saw a large gash in one of the alien legs.

Chan Lee: "I can't believe it yet! You're carrying alien wreckage! Why didn't you speak of it when I addressed you from the beginning?"

Chan opened the other freezers to look inside. He was convinced on what he was looking at.

Jimmy: "You see why I say it's above top secret. That's why you can't find anything on the shipment in your computers or why you can't find or locate the TSNSA. They're above your security clearance."

Chan Lee: "I'm sorry I had to put you through all of this. It's just routine, anything that's possibly a hazard to the United States, I have to check into. Benny, go ahead and have them close up the trucks; we're about ready to leave. Jimmy, I won't say a word to anyone about this. Will consider this case to be locked, sealed, and filed off as a nonthreat."

Jimmy: "Thanks, Chan, sorry you had to go through the problems with us. But we have our security channels that we have to take in the efforts to protect our nation to secure all possible threat as well."

Chan Lee: "I never thought I'd see the day when I would see aliens. You all have a wonderful day and thanks for protecting our national security."

Jimmy: "You too, thanks for your quality of protecting our nation. When you do your job, you get to the bottom of it. There is no leaf that you leave unturned."

Chan Lee then gathered the other two guys that were with him to get back into the helicopter after an hour of holding traffic up on the interstate. The convoy continued on its journey to the bio lab in Chicago.

Jimmy then gave Tony Percheatty a call.

Jimmy: "Is this Tony Percheatty?"

Tony: "Yes, this is Tony! Is this you, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "Yes, I'm just letting you know we're going to be there in less than two hours."

Tony: "Outstanding! I'll see you then! Bye!"

The convoy continued on its way. It took them with the traffic and all approximately an hour and half to get to the bio lab in Chicago. They pulled up outside the lab. The police escorts then left as Jimmy requested them to. Security guards opened the doors and let the convoy in. The trucks backed up to the docks. Tony was there to greet and meet with the Ace Services team.

Tony: "Jimmy, Jimmy, Jimmy, you've done it again. You never can seem to disappoint me. I saw on the news that the Homeland Security had your convoy pulled over about two hours ago. I thought for sure you were not going to make it. How did you manage to get by the Homeland Security?"

Jimmy: "I suppose you can say aliens, fairies, spirits, and God were on our side."

Tony: "What do you mean aliens?"

Jimmy: "Follow me, I'll show you!"

Jimmy then led Tony to the back of the truck with the freezers then opened up the rollup door.

Jimmy: "Look for yourself!"

Tony opened up one of the freezers and saw an alien body.

Tony: "Wow, are you serious? They look real!"

Jimmy: "It was enough to fool Homeland Security."

Tony: "Do you mind if I take one of them freezers with aliens in it as a souvenir or for bragging rights?"

Jimmy: "As far as I'm concerned, you can have everything we got in these trucks as long as we get our money."

Tony: "You bet, and thanks once again for pulling off such an outstanding job. I'll give you an extra million dollars for your outstanding service. If you ever need anything in the future, just let me know, I'll make it happen. I owe you a big one, a big favor."

Jimmy: "I just want to make sure you know. I think I'm done with luck carrying out these missions for you. So I hope we're good that this was the last job."

Tony: "You made me a couple hundred million dollars doing this for me. Like I had said before, this'll be the last job that I had asked you for. You go ahead and enjoy your life. I hope you have success in your business."

Jimmy: "Thanks! Maybe someday I'll ask you for that favor?"

Tony: "You bet!"

They had the contents unloaded from the vehicles. They then headed back to Cedar Rapids to the shop.

Later on that evening, Chan Lee was at home sitting at the dinner table. His wife, Jeannie, had just fixed clam chowder for him to eat.

Chan Lee: "Jeannie, you wouldn't believe what happened to me today. I was checking up on a possible national threat. I had this convoy pulled over just west of Chicago on the interstate. When I had checked the contents of the trucks, it was of alien wreckage."

Jeannie: "You're saying that you saw alien wreckage? Are you losing it? There's no such thing as aliens!"

Chan Lee: "That's what I had thought too. But trust me, there are aliens! I touched an alien's eye today, it was as real as you and me."

Jeannie: "I don't believe you. Maybe you need to take some time off work and rest. You've been working pretty hard lately."

Chan Lee: "I'm telling you that it's true, but you must not tell anyone about this, it's above my clearance, it's the clearance of TSNSA. Top Secret National Security Agency, it cannot be leaked out to the public about

this. I never thought I would see aliens and now I have, they do exist.

Jeannie: "I've never heard of the TSNSA, they don't exist!"

Chan Lee: "Ohhhh, but they do!"

Chapter 6

They made it back to the shop. Jimmy gave everyone that was on the mission the next two days off with paid eight-hour days. They would be paid for their services within the next week. The next day at Scott's house, Jimmy and Ricky were discussing what they need to do with the money.

Scott: "So, Jimmy and Ricky, now you have four extra box trucks, where do you plan on or how do you plan on using them?"

Jimmy: "We need to look into postal mail accounts to deliver mail to the post offices."

Ricky: "That's a good idea! I'll look into it! I think you got to bid on them though when their contracts come up."

Jimmy: "Ricky, can you handle that? Then keep me informed!"

Ricky: "I will, but we have like \$9 million to invest. I was thinking of over-the-road trucking."

Jimmy: "Yes, that's what I was thinking. I was doing some figures and I had contacted the Freightliner dealership. We could get forty semi tractors and trailers for that amount of money. We have the location to operate out of, all we need to do is get some drivers, a dispatcher, and maybe a couple diesel mechanics to keep the trucks serviced."

Scott: "That would be a good investment. You don't have much for overhead costs at this moment and you don't want to go to big just in case you don't have the business, plus, starting out with a fresh fleet, you have little cost in maintenance. You can always undercut your competition to gain contracts with companies and businesses."

Jimmy: "I'll get on it right away! Within a week, I'll get some trucks ordered, and within two to three weeks, we'll be in service for business. Of course, we will need to get them trucks licensed and decals put on them of the business name. They may not have all forty semis at the start, but we'll start with a few."

Ricky: "That sounds great, let's do it."

Jimmy: "Oh, we will, and we will be successful, I can feel it. You figure we have become a multimillion-dollar company within a year."

Scott: "Jimmy, you know how I've wanted to get the new world order out to the people. I was thinking of the book I wrote, if I could just get it made into a movie, that would show the people who I am, plus, it will show the new world order I have planned."

Jimmy: "Yes, Dad, you've been a great help with the business. Maybe I can use my favor from Tony to help you out. I'll give him a call right now and ask."

Tony: "This is Tony Percheatty!"

Jimmy: "Hi, Tony, this is Jimmy Chally. I was wondering if I can cash in on that favor you said you would do for me. It's actually for my dad!"

Tony: "Just name it and I'll see if I can do it. Did you get the money in the account that I sent?"

Jimmy: "Oh yes, thanks! You see, my dad wrote a book a few years ago. He says he's the Messiah of the

world with a new world order. He was asking me if you could possibly give him connections in making a movie out of his book.”

Tony: “I may be able to do one better than that. You see, I own the majority shares in the *Chicago Tribune* paper, which I can probably put a front-page article in of your dad and his book. And as far as making movies, I have a billion-dollar friend that’s a moviemaker that owes me a favor.”

Jimmy: “That sounds great! Here, I’ll let you talk to my dad, he’s standing beside me.”

Scott: “Hi, Tony, this is Scott, Jimmy’s dad!”

Tony: “How you doing today, Mr. Chally? I was thinking about possibly putting you in for a front-page article in the *Chicago Tribune* newspaper. And I have a friend that’s in the moviemaking business that may be able to help you out as well. But first off, I would like you to send me a copy of your book so I can read it. If I feel it is good, I will make this happen for you. How does that sound?”

Scott: “That would be great! I’ll get the book out to you as soon as possible. Not to put pressure on you, but time is of the essence. Could you give me a call when you get done reading the book? I’ll give you my phone number, better yet, I’ll add my phone number and information that I’ll need from you when I send the book.”

Tony: “Sounds good. I like reading books, and this book sounds like it’s very interesting if you say you’re the Messiah. So what is it, an autobiography?”

Scott: “Yes, it’s an autobiography called *Scott Chally Believes*, with a little twist to it about stating I’m the Messiah.”

Tony: “That could explain why you have such a success in achieving the missions that I’ve put you on. You have God on your side! I’ll be looking forward to reading it, thanks.”

Scott: “No, thank you! And have a great day!”

The next day, everyone was away from the house except for Sondra and Scott. Sondra was sitting behind the computer checking their bank account, when all of a sudden, there was excitement in the air.

Sondra: “Wow, I can’t believe it, we’re millionaires. This makes me so happy! Do you think I can quit my job now, honey?”

Scott: “I suppose, if you would like to, honey, that’s fine with me.”

Sondra: “I feel so high, like I’m on cloud nine. And I’m really turned on right now. I’m horny for you, honey, you think you could do me now?”

Scott: “If little Sammy can get it up, I’m game for it! Sure, I’m in the mood, I think.”

Sondra: “You know, one way or another, I’ll get little Sammy up. I am so much in the mood. Take me, honey? Do me like there’s no tomorrow! Let’s go to the bedroom and I’ll let you do me your favorite way, on the side of the bed doggy style.”

Scott: “You’re turning me on just talking about it. I can feel a rise in little Sammy already.”

Scott and Sondra went to the bedroom. The bed was sideways in the bedroom. Sondra had taken off her

clothes and underwear. Her bra was still on; she got on the bed with her legs underneath her and squatted backward toward the wall, then Scott mounted her from behind.

Sondra: "Oh yes, oh yes, oh yes."

Scott went back and forth.

Scott: "Talk to me, baby, talk to me. Let me know how you feel, sugar cube."

Sondra: "Do me. Explode inside of me? HUUU, huuu, huuu, help me, help me, all my God, help me. Help me, help me, please, please."

At that moment in time, Jason opened up the bedroom door wondering what was happening to his mother. Then you could see a sigh of disbelief and wonder crossed his mind. He then exited the room.

Jason: "What are you guys doing? I thought you were in trouble, Mom, you were saying, 'Help me.' Now I have that image of you two in my mind, I can't get rid of it. That's terrible. Who would ever want to see their mother and father doing it? You guys should have locked the door."

Scott: "What do you think; your mother and father don't get it on anymore?"

Jason: "No, you guys are old!"

Sondra: "Jason, your parents love each other, but I am sorry you had to see this."

They were talking through the door.

The next week, Jimmy had thrown another job interview at the house which multiple people had applied for. It was around 6:00 PM and there were six people that had showed up for a job. Jimmy had collected their resumes and sat on a chair in the living room facing the possible candidates. He was calling off their names to see who it was that had applied.

Jimmy: "Hi! My name is Jimmy. This is Ricky and my dad, Scott. I'll be calling off your names one by one and asking you a few questions. Are you Jeanette, Jeanette Thompson?"

Jeanette: "Yes. I am hoping you can employ me as a driver."

Jimmy: "I can see according to your resume you done some hauling for JP Hunt for three years. Have you had any occurrences happen during your driving?"

Jeanette: "No, I haven't! Even though I do have one speeding ticket ten miles over the limit while driving my personal vehicle. I hope that doesn't have an effect on today."

Jimmy: "No, I don't see that being a problem. But if you have three or more violations on your record within three years, you may lose your license to drive semi. Would you like to drive semi or we have another spot opening for part-time postal driver coming up?"

Jeanette: "I would like to drive semi! Could you tell me what the amount would be per year or how you would pay?"

Jimmy: "Okay, great, I'll consider you as a semi driver. The amount per year would depend on the amount of driving time you put in. Basically you're paid per load for driving. I'll tell you this, you should

average between \$55 and \$60,000 a year. Next I have a Sam Gilmore.”

Sam: “I actually go by Big Sammy. I would be looking at driving for the postal part-time if you got it.”

Jimmy: “Your resume looks pretty good here. You’ve worked for multiple different companies. How was your driving record?”

Sam: “Years ago I had some violations on it, but they’re all gone now.”

Jimmy: “Very good. We actually don’t have the postal account at this moment, but their contract is being renewed this month. We put a low bid on it, so we should have it. The earliest we would start hauling for the postal would be July 1. How does that sound? If the postal contract falls short, would you consider in driving semi?”

Sam: “Sure, that would give me some time before I start driving. And yes, I would be interested in driving semi, but I don’t want to be pushing a lot of overtime.”

Jimmy: “Okay, great! Next we have a Walter Sanchez.”

Walter: “That’s me! I would be interested in driving semi. As many loads as you can give me would be fine. I’m looking at the money!”

Jimmy: “Okay, great! Next, we have Janik Homestead, which I can see you just got your CDL license. Is that correct, you don’t have any prior work experience?”

Janik: “Here! That’s correct! I will take anything you have for a job. What would the postal part-time be making an hour?”

Jimmy: “We will start you out at \$18 an hour for the first year. After we see how the account does, we’ll put you on a salary-type basis probably making \$35,000 a year.”

Janik: “I would be interested in the postal account.”

Jimmy: “Okay, I’ll put you down for the postal account. Next we have Roger Bennett.”

Roger: “Here!”

Jimmy: “Your resume looks pretty good, you got over twelve years of experience driving. I’m sure you would be a great asset to driving semi for us. How does that sound?”

Roger: “Roger, Roger that! That’s what I’m here for!”

Jimmy: “Last but not least, we have Trevor Rees. Interesting, I see you have five years of dispatch experience with Walter Trucking. And you’re also a semi driver I see for fourteen years. How would you be interested in making \$65,000 a year dispatching for us?”

Trevor: “I was just looking for over-the-road trucking. But the dispatching job sounds pretty good. Yes, I would be interested!”

Jimmy: “Okay, great. That about does it, I will give you guys and gal a call within the month to let you know when to start. We have refreshments and sandwiches in the kitchen, please get some. If you like, we can sit around and mingle for a little while to get to know each other a little better. You can leave when you like.”

Scott and Sondra then were sitting around when Big Sammy had walked up to them. Scott and Sondra stood up, then Scott introduced Sondra to Big Sammy as his wife.

Sondra: "So, Big Sammy, how did you get your nickname?"

Sam: "Well, you can see I'm very big, 6'5" tall and weigh about 280 pounds. A few of my friends started calling me Big Sammy. I suppose the name just kind of stuck with me."

Sondra: "Well, we know a little Sammy!"

She smirked and laughed toward her husband, Scott.

Sam: "Interesting! Maybe I might know him!"

Sondra: "I doubt it, he's small!"

Sam: "Try me! Tell me what his name is."

Sondra: "Well, his name is little Sammy Cock-er."

Sam: "Really, little Sammy Cocker. I went to school with a little Sammy Cocker. Does he live around here?"

Sondra: "You can say he lives around here, he is closer than you think."

Sam: "Are you good friends with him?"

Sondra: "Yes, you could say I'm very good friends with him."

Sam: "Does he still go by that saying from Muhammad Ali: Float like a butterfly and sting like a bee?"

Sondra: "I don't recall him saying that. He's more like a jackrabbit."

Sam: "Maybe he's the same Sammy I used to know. What does he look like?"

Sondra: "Well, he's gotten kind of thick and he has a fair complexion. I suppose you could say kind of yellowish tan-ish."

Sam: "Yes, that's the Sammy I know, a light-skinned brother."

Scott: "Well, I don't think he's the same Sammy you know."

Sam: "He's got to be! How many little Sammy Cockers are there?"

Scott: "It's a big world, more than you realize."

Sam: "Well, if you see him again, tell him Big Sammy Gilmore wants to see him."

Scott: "Will do!"

Tony Percheatty called Scott.

Tony: "Is this Scott?"

Scott: "Yes, who is this?"

Tony: "This is Tony Percheatty. I have read your book and I think it's an excellent read. Matter-of-fact, I was so astounded by it. Your childhood was rough along with your life. Of the episode that you went through is just mind blowing. I rated it a five-star book! It's amazing how you came up with a new world order. I think it could work. I had passed the book on to Clint Walker a week ago which is a producer of Universal World Studios in Hollywood. He should be giving you a call within the week to let you know what they think."

Scott: "Excellent, that sounds great! What about the advertisement in the paper? Could you make that happen?"

Tony: "Yes, I have a reporter working on this. They're going to write up a half-page ad for the front page of the *Chicago Tribune* over your book next week. I made sure that they should add that you're possibly the Messiah of the world. I've been spending quite a bit of time on your website. The music all points to the new world order that you've listed. And your videos have so much meaning to them. You're a very talented man, and I honestly believe you can change the world for the better."

Scott: "Well, thank you, Tony! It's hard to make people believe in something that they can't see. The world is so fooled by scientists and some liberalist speaking that there is no God."

Tony: "Well, I'm a believer in God. He's given me everything I've got."

Scott: "Thanks a lot, Tony! I'm sure God will make sure you have success in whatever you do for doing this for me."

Tony: "You bet, thank you!"

Scott: "Talk to you later!"

Tony: "Same. Good luck!"

A week later, Scott was contacted by Clint Walker of Universal World Studios.

Clint: "Hi, is this Scott Chally?"

Scott: "This is him! Who is this?"

Clint: "This is Clint Walker. I was contacted a couple weeks ago by Tony Percheatty about your book *Scott Chally Believes*. I have read it and passed it on to my research and editing division of Universal World Studios to make a movie out of it. It is an awesome read, I think it'll make a lot of money and change the world for the better."

Scott: "Well, thank you, Clint! What do you need me to do at this time?"

Clint: "Well, I'll need to meet with you in signing a contract."

Scott: "I do want to star in the movie. I also want to be a codirector of the movie to make sure it flows accordingly as I wrote it and nothing is left out that I feel will jeopardize the outcome."

Clint: "That's good to know, we could probably make that happen. We'll add it into the contract. How

does next Friday sound to meet up?”

Scott: “Sounds good, you can meet at my house at, let’s say, five o’clock. Do you have my address?”

Clint: “Yes, Tony gave me all the information. Consider it a date! Talk to you then!”

Scott: “See you later, bye!”

Friday came, it was 4:30 PM, and Clint had showed up at the door with two other people where Sondra answered to the door.

Sondra: “You’re Clint, right? Well, come on in, Scott is expecting you, he is in the kitchen.”

They had walked in and led by Sondra to the kitchen, where Scott was sitting at the table.

Sondra had some cheese and sausage cut up on a platter.

Sondra: “Could I get you something to drink? I have Coke, iced tea, or Kool-Aid.”

Clint: “I’ll take a glass of Coca-Cola, please. This is Henry and Christopher! Henry is Universal’s lawyer, and Christopher is the legal executive contract person.”

Henry: “I’ll just take a glass of water, please!”

Christopher: “Coke would be fine with me.”

Clint: “Well, Scott, let’s make this official today. We have put together a contract which has great incentives; you can make a lot of money from your book.”

Christopher pulled out a contract that was about fifty pages long.

Christopher: “This is the contract that you’ll need to sign today.”

Scott: “I don’t need to sign a contract with fifty pages in it. I’m looking at my own contract that I made up for you guys to sign.”

Henry: “Our contract will make it official for us to operate and do business with you. We won’t sign your contract!”

Scott: “Well, I think we’re done here, you may leave now.”

Clint: “Hold on there, hold on one second, Scott, we’ll make something work.”

Christopher: “This contract states that we will be giving you \$3 million to star in the movie, \$2 million for your writings of the book, and a 7 percent residual royalty on all sales of the movie, which I think is very fair.”

Clint: “What are you thinking, Scott? That sounds pretty good, doesn’t it?”

Scott: “Not really, it sounds like shit to me. I was thinking for my troubles of writing the book, being a codirector, and starring in the movie would be around \$10 million. And as far as royalties, I was thinking after all expenses of the movie have been taken out, I would receive 50-50 on the sales, all sales and anything in conjunction with making sales from the movie.”

Henry: "We can't do that! That's ridiculous! The movie company is fronting the expense of what the movie cost. You're unreasonable!"

Scott: "Well, I guess we don't have a deal here today. Nor will we if you don't agree to my terms. You may leave and don't let the door hit you in the ass."

Christopher: "Well, let me see what you got written up on your contract you want us to sign."

Scott handed Christopher the contract. The contract was basically what Scott had said, plain and simple.

Scott: "I don't want a fifty-page contract to sign with loopholes in it. You make it between two to five pages long with what I request, I'll consider it."

Clint: "You do realize we may not take you as for making a movie. But we will ponder what you want and contact you within two weeks with the new contract that you may consider."

Scott: "I'm serious with what I state for the contract. We can do this dancing game all day long, but I won't dance for you unless I see something that I like. If you don't want to take me on for a movie, I will go to another movie company to sign."

Christopher: "Give us about two weeks! We will do some calculating and get back to you as soon as we can."

Scott then ended the meeting, then they left the house. They were very disappointed on how the meeting went. Clint was unsure why Scott chose not to accept the contract when his book could be turned into a movie. Most people would just jump on it.

Jimmy and Scott were at the shop in Cedar Rapids organizing the office late one night when Ricky walked in.

Ricky: "I have some good news! We got accepted for the four postal contracts."

Jimmy: "That's great, cool! So they liked our bid!"

Ricky: "Yes!"

Jimmy: "When do we start hauling for them?"

Ricky: "The first business day after the Fourth of July."

Jimmy: "Great, we still need two more drivers though. We need to put another ad in the paper to get more drivers. We're also going to need at least another ten more drivers for semi hauling before August."

Ricky: "I've got it covered! I'll place an ad in the paper tomorrow. Do you want to meet at the house with the drivers or at the office?"

Jimmy: "I think we should start doing business from the office."

Ricky: "Okay!"

It was the Fourth of July. Jimmy had plans with Melanie to go to a family gathering at her uncle's place. Jimmy picked Melanie and Zachary up from her house about 10:00 AM. They're driving in the car.

Jimmy: "Melanie, I'm nervous about meeting your family today."

Melanie: "Don't be nervous, they're a very friendly group of people. I'm sure you'll fit right in."

Jimmy: "What are we going to be doing all day today?"

Melanie: "Well, I brought some steaks and potato salad for us. I also brought a couple hotdogs for Zachary to cook on the barbecue grill."

Jimmy: "That sounds good, but we're going to be there for like twelve hours. I'm going to feel pretty awkward sitting around doing nothing for that long."

Melanie: "Well, during the day we will be playing games, like horseshoes, Polish frisbee golf, and maybe some volleyball. He also has a motorcycle and a golf cart you could ride around. He has like ten acres, which he keeps the grass mowed."

Jimmy: "How many are going to be there?"

Melanie: "There'll probably be between forty to fifty people there, mostly my relatives and some friends of the family."

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary arrived at her uncle Jeff's place. As soon as they arrived, they're greeted by her uncle Jeff and some other cousins. They mingled for a little while with the relatives until it was close to noon. Which Jimmy then went to the grill and placed the meat on it while he was with Melanie. Zachary was having fun riding on the golf cart. Melanie's sister Joanie was also at the grill cooking.

Joanie: "So, Melanie, is this your handsome Prince Charming?"

Melanie: "Yes, he is my knight in shining armor. Jimmy, this is my sister Joanie."

Joanie shook Jimmy's hand and then pulled him in for a hug.

Joanie: "Well nice to meet you, Jimmy. I hope you treat my sister well. She is very special to me. You seem like a really nice guy."

Jimmy: "Well, I believe I am, at least I think I'm nice."

Joanie: "Well, Melanie, is he rich? Or has a good job that pays well?"

Melanie: "We'll just say he's very well-off. Well, he's in partnership with a friend of his doing deliveries."

Joanie: "So you hooked up with a good one, nice! Have you made any other plans for being together? Maybe I'm jumping the gun to quick, how long have you been going together?"

Melanie: "About six to eight months. And I think I'm really fallen for him. A matter-of-fact, Jimmy and I were thinking about taking our relationship to the next level. What do you think about moving in with me, Jimmy?"

Jimmy: "Melanie, I would love to!"

Joanie: "Well, it sounds like you're really serious. Maybe someday you can be my future brother-in-law."

Melanie: "I have a good vibe with Jimmy, so I'm thinking if he would ask me, I would say yes to him, I would be all his."

After Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary ate, Jimmy and Melanie were asked to play a game of Polish frisbee golf by Melanie's brother Dominik.

Dominik: "Melanie, how would you and your boyfriend like to play a game of Polish frisbee?"

Melanie: "Jimmy, this is my brother Dominik, he's in eleventh grade in school."

Jimmy: "Nice to meet you, Dominik! I would be game to play, but you'll have to tell me the rules though."

Dominik: "Sweet! It'll be me and my friend Ryan against you two."

Dominik explained the rules to Jimmy.

They began to play the game.

Dominik hit the bottle off the pole.

Dominik: "That's two points for us."

Melanie: "You're just getting lucky, little brother. Me and Jimmy are going to beat you."

About twenty minutes went by in the game throwing the frisbee back and forth, trying to hit the bottles off the pole.

Jimmy: "Well, it's a close game! You say the first person that makes it to twenty-one wins."

Dominik: "Well, you have to win by two. It's 20 to 20. If you get a bottle shot on us, you can win, but I'm going to catch it, so it won't count."

It was Melanie's turn to throw the frisbee. She hit the bottle off the top of the pole. Dominik tried catching it with one hand but was unsuccessful. She turned and hugged Jimmy as Jimmy lifted her off the ground and spun her around.

Melanie: "Well, looks like we have the game, we're the champions."

They played another game with the next individuals waiting to play.

Later that afternoon, Melanie's cousin Jesse came up to her and Jimmy to ask them if they would like to play volleyball on their team, so they ended up on six-player teams to play volleyball.

Melanie introduced Jimmy to her cousins.

Melanie: "This is my cousin Jesse, Zantz, and that's Cody, Tyler, and Logan. And over there is my uncle Rod and my aunt Lori."

They began playing volleyball; it was a close game. Then there was a lofted volleyball going over the net. Melanie was in the front line in the middle, and Jimmy was in the back line in the middle. Then all of a sudden,

as the ball was coming over the net, Jimmy came up behind Melanie and lifted her off the ground about two feet. Melanie then spiked the ball downward, scoring on the other team. They turned to each other with excitement, squeezing and hugging each other from the outstanding score they just made.

Tyler: "That's not fair, that's cheating, and you can't do that."

Jimmy: "I didn't hear anybody call out the rules which says you couldn't."

Rod: "We will give it to them, they did well. That was a good play!"

They continued on with the game. Jimmy and Melanie's team had won the game. They ended up switching sides, playing again, and won again.

Melanie looked at Jimmy.

Melanie: "We're unstoppable today, Jimmy! I feel so good!"

Jimmy: "We make an awesome team!"

They decided to stop playing games and had a seat around the campfire where her mother and father were sitting. They had a conversation talking about work and how Jimmy had met Melanie. They waited until dark, and then Melanie's cousins, nieces, and nephews gathered in a location in the center of the field to light off fireworks. It made a wonderful day and evening for Melanie, Jimmy, and her family.

Jimmy: "Melanie, you have such a great family, they're all wonderful and nice."

Melanie: "Well, thank you, Jimmy, I'm sure your family's just as nice. I really like your mom, dad, and your brother's cool too."

Jimmy: "I had a wonderful evening with you, Melanie. I'm so much in love with you!"

Melanie: "Well, I love you too, Jimmy!"

And they moved close together and kiss.

They soon left afterward to go home. Jimmy and Melanie then tucked Zachary to bed after a long exhausting day of playing with his cousins, then Jimmy spent the night.

Two weeks had passed when Clint and his team came over to Scott's house again to get a contract signed.

Clint: "Well, Scott, we've been considering what you have said or what you want for the contract to be signed. We have accepted to all your terms. We made a three-page contract highlighting all the points that you requested. We put in some legal information to protect us for instance if you would fall short on completing the movie. And the one thing we choose not to go with is dividing it 50-50 after this movie is made. We want to hold the majority, so we're offering you 40 percent of all earnings from the movie."

Scott (examining the contract): "I accept everything that I see here in the contract, but I hold firm on receiving 50-50 of all profits. If you can't do that, you may leave, and I'll find somebody else to do my movie for me. I think it's very reasonable what I request. You're not going to fall short on the cost of the movie to get repaid. All expenses will be taken out before the 50-50, so you really need to consider it. This manuscript that I wrote is a real moneymaker. If you can't see that, then I think we're done here."

Henry: "As far as a legal concept, you're really pushing our limits! You need to accept this or we're done here."

Christopher: "This is a good deal! We've done hundreds of contracts and we never had a situation arise like this one. I highly doubt that any other movie company will do the same."

Scott: "You see, you don't seem to understand, I'm already a millionaire. I have disability coming in for a lifetime. It's not a loss for me if I choose not to do the movie, that means you can't do it either. It's a win-win situation for me. So I highly consider that you look at my request as serious as possible. If you can't give me the 50-50 here today for what I would get paid after the movie is made, I think we're done then!"

Christopher: "Let me make a call real quick and we'll see about this. It's just that you were only approved for 40 percent of profits."

Christopher made a call.

Henry: "You're willing to risk everything that you've created over a 10-percent difference?"

Scott: "Yup!"

Christopher: "Well, I just got off the phone with the owner of Universal World Studios. He must really like your manuscript. He is willing to accept your offer at 50-50 as long as you can start filming within two weeks."

Scott: "That's not a problem, thank you!"

Christopher: "I will need to change the 60-40 to 50-50 on the contract. Do you have a printer that we could print a contract out on?"

Scott: "Sure!"

Christopher edited the contract from his computer then went to Scott's computer and printed out two copies of the contract. Scott, Clint, Henry, and Christopher all signed the contracts, and Christopher put a notary seal on the bottom right corner to make it official.

It's now around August 1. Scott was contacted by a Dean Lundy who was about to be a codirector with Scott for the *Scott Chally Believes* movie. A couple days later, they started filming Scott's childhood and life experiences.

The first scene was set up of Scott's real first danger in Bernard, Iowa. It was an old farmhouse in 1974 where Scott was four years old in his brother's room, messing around with matches that he had found in the dresser drawer. He had some paper on the bed and lit it with the matches. It had started a fire. Then Scott got scared and hid in the closet, afraid to go and tell his mom that he had done something wrong and that it might go away if he hid. Soon the smoke engulfed the upstairs.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 1, take 1, four-year-old Scott in burning bedroom."

The scene showed Scott lighting matches on the bed, then being scared and hiding in the closet.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 2, take 1, mother and two daughters in bathroom downstairs."

Mother: "Tammy, Robin, do you smell something burning?"

Robin and Tammy were doing their makeup in the mirror.

Robin: "Yes! A matter-of-fact, I do smell that. The house must be on fire."

Tammy looked out into the kitchen and saw smoke coming down from the staircase.

Tammy: "It's coming from upstairs!"

Mother: "You girls call the fire department and then go out of the house to wait for me, I'll get Scott."

Mother went upstairs then opened the door to her oldest son's room and saw it engulfed with flames and smoke. She called for Scott but no answer. She looked around in the other rooms upstairs, but there was no sign of him. She then went back into the burning room and looked in the closet. Scott was scrunched up in a corner in the closet looking scared like he had did something wrong. She grabbed Scott and then rushed out of the house. By this time, the room was completely scorched with fire. The fire department came and put out the fire.

Director Dean: "Cut! We have a wrap, good job, everyone!"

The director cut guy closed the tablet.

Scene 3 took place in Cascade, Iowa, right across the elementary school where Scott was six years old leaving school to go home. Scott's house was right across from the school. There was a fifth-grade crossing guard in a yellow vest and a stop paddle at the street to let the younger children cross when it's safe to cross the street from the traffic. Scott came up to the crossing guard and other children standing around waiting to cross the street. Scott was held up by the crossing guard. The crossing guard said a few words to Scott about staying until it was safe to cross the street.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 3, take 1. Six-year-old Scott crossing the street."

Six-Year-Old Scott: "I don't need to listen to you! I'm just going home!"

Crossing Guard: "You need to stay put until I let you go!"

Scott jetted out away from the crossing guard. As he was crossing the street, a blue Volkswagen beetle made the corner from turning and hit Scott. The beetle had come to a stop just in time. Scott was underneath the front end of the car. The lady was panicking as she got out of the car. Scott crawled out from underneath the car and ran to his house. Scott went in the house and went to his bedroom. About fifteen minutes later, there was a knock on the door. Scott's mom answered the door; it was a Dubuque County sheriff that was checking up on the accident.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 4, take 1. Six-year-old Scott, mother, and sheriff."

Dubuque County Sheriff: "Ma'am, I believe your son was injured in an accident just a few minutes ago. Do you know anything about this?"

Mother: "No, I don't! What happened?"

Dubuque County Sheriff: "There was a lady in a blue Volkswagen beetle that hit your son. She believes

he may be hurt.”

Scott’s mom called for Scott to come downstairs from his room. The sheriff took Scott and lifted him up on the counter. He could see that he had a few bruises and scratches on him from the accident. He then asked Scott questions of anything that had hurt on him. He took Scott’s lower legs and lifted them to see if he had full motion of his joints and then his arms, elbows as well, and had examined him. Scott seemed to be okay; he was just shaken up from the incident. The officer told Scott to listen to the crossing guards.

Director Dean: “Cut! That’s a wrap!”

Scene 7 took place on a farm in Monticello, Iowa. Scott was fed up with the kids at school teasing him and life in general. He had an argument with his father about doing chores and not listening to him. His sister and brother-in-law were back visiting from Minneapolis. Scott felt his life was useless and he should end it.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 7, take one. Thirteen-year-old Scott about to take his life.”

Father: “You don’t need to talk back to me when I speak to you. You need to listen and do what I say. You’re not the ruler of this house.”

Scott: “Don’t I do everything you want? I do chores and help you out on the farm.”

Father: “You’re supposed too! I feed you and give you a home to live in.”

Scott: “You don’t give me allowance! You don’t care how I feel! I’m having a hard time with school. I don’t have any friends which come over. You think I’m just the loser with an attitude, don’t you?”

Father: “Nonsense, I love you, Scott! I’m just trying to do what’s best for you.”

Scott: “I don’t feel that way!”

Scott ran out of the house looking to end his life. The first thing Scott thought of was to jump to his death. There was a silo behind the barn. Scott went to the sixty-foot silo and climbed up the ladder on the outside of it until he got to the platform at the top. Scott was up there for about three minutes debating whether he should jump or not. Then Scott made the decision that he was going to jump. He climbed up on the rail of the platform. All of a sudden, his sister Tammy and brother-in-law John walked around the corner and noticed Scott up on the platform.

Tammy: “What are you doing up there, Scott?”

Scott then stepped back from the rail and then spoke to his sister Tammy.

Scott: “I’m just hanging out up here, I wanted to get away.”

Tammy: “Well, why don’t you come on down?”

John: “I came to ask you if you would like to go with me to the airport to go flying?”

Scott paused for a minute. Then he was thinking there must be an angel looking out for him. It was just coincidence that Tammy and John had come around the corner just in a nick of time to save his life.

Scott: “Sure, I would like that! Give me a second and I’ll be down.”

Tammy: "Great, Scott. John will like that."

Director Dean: "Cut, outstanding job!"

Scene 13 took place two weeks into Scott's eighteenth birthday. Scott was an accessory to burglary for stealing the cash from the high school principal's office in Monticello, Iowa. Scott was driving the getaway car while his friend borrowed his wrestling shoes to scale the outside of the school to get in. It was December 30 or 31. There was a basketball game that evening. The crime went without fault. Two weeks later after the police did an investigation in the school, they went to Scott's friend's grandma's house due to the fact a year earlier Scott's friend did the same thing and got caught. Scott's friend's grandma had pointed out that he was at Scott's house that evening. Then there was an officer Bert that had come to Scott's house late one night in January on the farm. He's in his uniform and drove a squad car and went up to the door and knocked.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 13, take 1. Scott's accessory to burglary!"

Officer Bert knocked on the door and was answered by Scott's father.

Officer Bert: "Hello, my name is Officer Bert. I'm here to investigate the situation that happened at the high school. I believe your son, Scott, is involved. Do you mind if I ask him a few questions in my squad car?"

Dad: "Sure, no problem, let me get him!"

Scott's dad got Scott.

Officer Bert: "Scott, do you mind following me to my car?"

Scott: "Sure, no problem! What's this about?"

Officer Bert: "I'll tell you in a minute when you come to the car."

Scott got in the squad car with Bert.

Officer Bert: "I have belief that you and your friend committed a burglary just before the New Year at the school."

Scott: "Nonsense! What proof do you have?"

Officer Bert: "I've talked to your friend's grandma, and she said that you were with your friend that evening of the burglary. An officer was on patrol that night and recognized your car twice with you in it outside the school. I have photos here of some footprints left in the tar on the roof of the school. You're a wrestler, and I do believe I have seen your shoes inside the house in the entryway. And if I take them shoes as evidence, that will place you for doing the crime. You will take the whole wrap and your friend will go free. You're looking at two years in jail or the minimum of two years on probation, where if you mess up again, you will do jail time. That also means community service for two years. So what can you tell me?"

Scott paused for a minute; he was thinking how everything went so wrong. He also remembered what his friend had told him about never saying anything to the police matter what it was they said. They will not be able to prove nothing.

Scott: "Well, what if I did say I was there but I didn't do the crime? I was just outside in the car. What would I get?"

Officer Bert: “The least you will get is two years of probation doing community service, unless I strike a deal with the judge. If you write a statement stating your friend did the crime, I may be able to get you off, but under one condition. You must join the service and be gone for at least three years from the community. If I so much as see you around here, I will have the judge reinstate the charges. And it will be on your permanent record as a felony.”

Scott: “Well, I need to graduate high school to join the service. I just dropped out last semester.”

Officer Bert: “I can get you back in school, but you will have to pass, and if you fail, you will have a felony on your record plus time.”

Scott: “Okay, I’ll try and do it! I’ll sign a statement stating my friend did the crime.”

Director Dean: “Cut! It’s a wrap!”

Scene 15 took place in the Monticello High School boys’ locker room. It was just after badminton in the gym. It was time to shower and get dressed just before class. Scott was coming out of the shower and had a towel that he was drying himself off with. There were about ten boys in the locker room. Then out of the blue, this kid named Steve had walked up to Scott and spat on his chest.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 15, take 1. Scott in locker room at the high school.”

Steve spat on Scott’s chest.

Scott: “You asshole! What did you do that for?”

Steve: “Because I don’t like you! I think you’re a chump!”

Scott: “I ought to kick your ass!”

Steve pushed Scott backward with his arms in a quick sudden fashion.

Steve: “Come on, what are you going to do about it?”

Scott flinched his fist but held steady not to hit him.

Scott: “You’re just lucky I can’t get in trouble, you’re not worth it.”

Steve: “Come on, pussy, do something!”

Scott: “You asshole!”

Steve: “Are you going to go crying to your mommy?”

Scott: “Just leave me alone!”

Steve turned around, bragging to the other ones in the room like Scott was a piece of shit.

Scott got dressed then left.

Director Dean: “Cut! Nice going!”

Scene 17 took place at the Monticello High School. Scott had just finished taking a test from a Grantwood tutor for English. It was three days before graduation. Scott only had one test left to take for English then his class would be finished. Scott had a full load of classes for the semester, plus three extra classes to take in order to graduate. Scott had passed all the required classes in order to graduate minus the one test to be taken for English. Scott and the tutor left the classroom and met by the principal in the hallway.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 17, take 1. Scott's not to walk across stage."

Principal: "Scott, so are you finished with your English class?"

Tutor: "Scott has one more test to take on Monday, and then he will be finished."

Principal: "Well, graduation is on Sunday, and since you're not completed with your classes, I will not allow you to go across the stage with your classmates."

Scott: "Are you kidding me? I passed all my classes, and even if I fail this test, I have passed the English course."

Principal: "If I had my say about it, I don't feel you should graduate at all. It's final! You will not be able to walk across the stage."

Scott: "I had passed everything at the MEPS station in Des Moines to make it into the army, all I need is that diploma and then I can enter the military. Plus, I have my gown for graduation."

Principal: "I'm sorry! That's the way it is and it's final."

Tutor: "Can't you make an exception, sir?"

Principal: "He'll get his diploma when he finishes the class."

Scott: "It's May 26, and on June 2, I'm supposed to enter the army."

Scott was disappointed.

Director Dean: "Cut! Good job!"

Scene 23 took place in Germany in the military barracks around December 1991. Scott had been in the military for about a year and a half now. The war of Desert Shield, Desert Storm had been going on for about three to four months by now. Scott was in his room in the barracks with four other friends. They were sitting around listening to music, smoking hashish, and snorting cocaine late one night.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 23, take 1. Scott's military barracks during Desert Storm."

Ty: "I have about a gram of cocaine left, you guys, who's up for a line?"

Carl: "I'll take a line! Thanks, Ty."

Ty cut up a line of cocaine on an old CD, then Carl snorted it.

Samuel: "I'm just going to stick with the hashish tonight."

And he took a puff from a makeshift bent-up soda can.

Johnny: "I sure hope we don't get called to fight in Iraq. I hear that the Iraqis have a lot of chemical agents to use on the American soldiers."

Scott: "Yeah, I hear you. I heard Saddam tested the chemical weapons out on his own people and killed like thousands."

Johnny: "Iraq is sure getting bombed though by the Americans. They're estimating over 100,000 Iraqis have been killed so far."

Ty: "Good thing we're a nuclear unit. They don't want us down there yet."

Scott: "Yeah! But you and I are survey; they could pull us from the unit any time and send us."

Ty: "You do have a point! Samuel and Johnny, you guys are lucky you're 13 Mikes as an MOS."

Scott: "That's why I'm doing drugs, which I've never done before until I got to this unit. Because of war to release and ease of wonder if I'm going to be around in the next year or two. If they drop chemical agents on the troops, there would be mass destruction to the troops. So I'm trying to enjoy every minute of my life while I can."

Carl: "Amen to that!"

He passed Scott a can with hashish on it to smoke.

Samuel: "I thought about going into the military as a tanker, I would've been down there for sure."

Scott: "I just hope they don't catch us on a drug test with our hands down."

Carl: "Good thing we have Specialist Wyatt at the battalion to let us know when a drug test is coming down. They suspect us of doing drugs but never seems like they can ever catch us. We're always one step ahead of them, drinking our green tea and pissing until wee hours of the morning."

Johnny: "Boy did I think I was caught last time. When the military police came to our barracks at four o'clock in the morning and escorted us one by one up to the day room, we were locked in there until we had to piss. Good thing there were empty bottles behind the bar to piss in."

Scott: "That was a surprise on us. I don't know how they were able to throw a piss test without letting the battalion know. I was behind the bar a few times relieving myself until I felt my piss was clear. I must've stayed up there for four hours drinking coffee before they pissed me."

Director Dean: "Cut! Good scene!"

Scene 33 happened in Paris, France, on August 1996, which was seven and a half years after Scott entered the military. Scott had been married now for six years and had his two kids with them. It was an accident that happened near the tunnel where Princess Diana had died the year after. Scott was pulled off to the side of the road while his wife, Sondra, was looking at the map.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 33, take 1. Scott's accident in Paris."

Scott: "Honey, can you tell where we are at on the map? I think we got to go north from here to get to

our hotel.”

Sondra: “I believe we’ve got to turn around and go back to the tunnel then we can head north. We’re only about a mile away from the hotel.”

Scott: “Okay, I’m turning around then!”

Scott looked over his left shoulder then to the right to see if there’s any traffic coming. He noticed at the stoplight six hundred feet down the road on the left had a red light, and traffic was clear on the right. He went to pull out, and then he noticed two cars speeding toward him. He tried to turn back to the right to avoid an accident. But it was already too late. They had hit Scott’s driver’s door. Scott noticed in slow motion the lady in the passenger’s seat of the oncoming car hit the windshield. Scott’s door on the Toyota Corolla he was driving had steel reinforcement bars going through it, which prevented the door from collapsing in on his legs. Scott then crawled out the driver’s window and got the kids and his wife out of the car.

Scott: “Are you okay, honey?”

Sondra: “Yeah, I’m fine, just a little shaken up. How are the kids?”

Scott: “Are you okay, Jimmy?”

Jimmy: “I’m okay, Dad! Are we still going to Disney World tomorrow?”

Sondra checked on little Jason.

Sondra: “Jason seems to be okay, honey.”

Scott: “I’m not sure, we will try though, Jimmy!”

Jimmy: “That’s good.”

In a matter of five minutes, there were four police cars. None of the officers spoke English but one. This one officer that spoke English tried to help Scott in contacting some support. He had the number to the American ambassador for France, so he called him up and talked to the American ambassador for France on how to report an accident. Scott was told he needed to get to a hotel and a place to rent another car. He assured him that the French police and French Red Cross would assist him in whatever he needed to have done. Scott did not receive a ticket from the accident. The American Red Cross then drove him to a car rental place in Paris.

Director Dean: “Cut! That’s a wrap!”

It’s Jermaine and Laverta’s wedding day. Around 1:00 PM, they had their wedding in a Lutheran church. Ricky, Jimmy, and their girlfriends were invited to the wedding. After the ceremony, Ricky, Jimmy, and their girlfriends, along with some other people, were outside the church throwing rice as Jermaine and Laverta left the church to go into their limousine.

About 5:00 PM, everyone that was invited to the wedding then met at a reception hall to celebrate, eat, and dance. Jermaine and his newlywed wife, Laverta, entered the reception hall as the guest cheered and clapped for them. After a little while, Jermaine and Laverta came to Ricky and Jimmy’s table.

Jermaine: “Well, hi there, Ricky and Jimmy. Glad you came to the wedding. Ricky, which two are your girlfriends, and are those your children in the car seats?”

Ricky: "Yes! The babies are ours. This is Molly, and that's Courtney."

Molly and Courtney stood up and reached across the table to give Jermaine and Laverta a handshake.

Molly: "Nice to meet you too, congratulations on your wedding!"

Courtney: "Yes! It was a wonderful wedding and looks like you have a great turnout here at the reception hall."

Laverta: "All the babies are so cute. What are their names, and how old are they?"

As Ricky pointed to the babies, he called out their names.

Ricky: "These two are about five months old. They're Courtney's, and their names are Christian and Christina. And then over there are Molly's, they're only a month and a half old, and their names are Nickolas and Nicole. But we just call them Nick and Nikki."

Laverta: "As you can see, we have one in the oven. I'm so excited to have our baby. We had checked with the doctor and he says it's a boy."

Molly: "Have you picked out a name yet?"

Laverta: "We're not 100 percent sure of what name we want, but Jermaine wants to call him Clay and I want to call him Daryl. We will just have to see."

Courtney: "When is the baby due?"

Laverta: "About mid-December according to the ultrasound."

Jimmy: "This is my girlfriend Melanie!"

Jermaine: "Hi!"

Laverta: "Hi there! So you're the special one that Jimmy's been talking about."

Melanie: "Well, hi there, and thanks! Yes, he is very special to me."

And she leaned over to give Jimmy a kiss.

Jermaine: "Well, we have some more mingling to do with the other guests. You guys enjoy yourself here and don't forget to dance!"

Jermaine and Laverta moved on as Jimmy, Ricky, Melanie, and Courtney said they would see them later and waved goodbye. They ate and drank their wine that was provided. Then about an hour later, the dance floor opened up with music.

Jimmy: "Melanie, how would you like to go out on the dance floor and dance with me to a slow song?"

Melanie: "Sure, I would love that, Jimmy!"

Two songs later, a slow dance came on.

Jimmy: “Melanie, you’re the most beautiful one here. I would choose no other woman in the world besides you.”

Melanie: “Jimmy, you’re so sweet! I love you! Seeing the babies makes me want to have another.”

Jimmy: “It will happen in due time. By the way, I’m wondering how Zachary is doing at your parents’ house.”

Melanie: “He’s a good kid, I’m sure he’s fine.”

Scott received a call from Tony Percheatty.

Scott: “Hello!”

Tony: “Scott, this is Tony Percheatty!”

Scott: “Hi, Tony! How’s it going? I wasn’t expecting you to call. I appreciate what you’ve done for me. I’m in the process of making the movie of the book.”

Tony: “I’m doing great! How is the movie going? I wanted to let you know, I took your book one step further. I had some famous, world-renowned people in economics look at your idea of the new world policy for the world.”

Scott: “The movie is going great! I had to work with the movie company a little on the contract though. What did they think of the new world policy?”

Tony: “Well, I had one guy contact me back. He is willing to contact you sometime to discuss more about the new world order. He has connections with the White House and lobbyists. He thinks it’s a good idea and it’ll work. He was so amazed on how you strategize the policy to where you have a fair amount of money coming in but unlimited amount of money going out as needed, where the world can still function as a prospering society.”

Scott: “Sweet! That’s good to hear! Do you have his name and phone number so I can give him a call?”

Tony: “I have his name and phone number, but he said he wants to call you. His name is Jerry Matthews. So you should expect a call within a week from him.”

Scott: “Thanks, Tony, very much for all you’ve done!”

Tony: “I should be thanking you! You may just be the Messiah doing God’s work for the people. It’s an honor of mine to help you out to bring salvation and peace to the world.”

Scott: “This movie I’m working on will show the people of the world what’s about to come!”

Tony: “I can’t wait to see it! I know the book is really good. The movie has got to be even greater. Well, that’s all I have and I’m glad to have met you!”

Scott: “Thanks once again, Tony. Have a good day, bye!”

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary went to a cross-country meet in Cedar Rapids at Prairie High School. Monticello was one of the lead contenders of the meet. It’s one of the last meets in early November. Monticello was ranked in the top five schools for 2-A cross-country in the state. They got to the meet about

8:00 AM on Saturday. The varsity boys' race had just begun.

Jimmy: "Melanie, I hope you find this to be okay going to this meet today?"

Melanie: "This seems like a good thing to do to support your school and take pride in the runners. I know you try to follow them whenever you can through the school meets and in the newspaper."

Jimmy: "Seven years ago I used to participate in cross-country. It's like it's in my blood to cheer on something that I believe in."

Melanie: "How did you do in cross-country? What were your times?"

Jimmy: "I was never really that good, but I was okay. I placed in the top ten of a bunch of junior varsity races. I've never made it to varsity because my times were never as good as the other runners, but my times were in the high 18s and a low 19 minutes for 3 miles."

Melanie: "That seems good for times. This is like a good family event to watch. Plus, this might inspire Zachary to work at his running. Who knows, he might go out for cross-country someday and you can coach him."

Jimmy: "That would be great, I would enjoy this. Well, here they come. I see a Monticello runner leading the way. It's Michael. Way to go, Michael, good work!"

And the runners passed Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary.

Melanie: "Go, Monticello, go!"

Jimmy: "Sweet, another Monticello runner! It's Benny, he's in fifth place right now. Nice job, Benny!"

Melanie: "Way to go, Benny! Go, Monticello!"

Jimmy: "I see Jasper and Connor there in the top twenty. Excellent. Go, Monticello!"

Zachary: "Go, Monticello!"

Melanie: "Go, Monticello! How many runners are in a race?"

Jimmy: "There's as many as twenty-four schools in a meet. Each school will have seven runners for a total of about 168 runners. Just to let you know a little bit about Monticello's history in cross-country, the boys have made it for the past twenty-one years in a row to qualify to go to state. The girls have made it for the past five to seven years to qualify for state. And they've won the title a few times at state. For some reason, Monticello has been really good at cross-country. That keeps me pumped up for wanting to watch them."

Melanie: "Wow, that's really good! Go, go, go, Monticello!"

Jimmy, Melanie, and Zachary finished watching the four separate races of cross-country for the day. Then they headed home in the car.

Zachary: "Mom! I think I want to go out for cross-country when I get older. I think I can run well."

Jimmy: "That's my boy!"

Melanie smiled at Jimmy.

Scott was on a set directing a scene when he received a phone call. It was at a bowling alley. It was Jerry Matthews. Scott held up the filming while he's speaking on the phone.

Scott: "Hello! This is Scott?"

Jerry: "Hi, Scott! This is Jerry Matthews of the Washington political society, I major in economics for the economy. I was informed by Tony Percheatty about you and your new world order you have come up with. I've read your book, and I think it's very good. The new world order you speak of in the book is mind-boggling to me. At first when I looked at it, I was saying it wouldn't work giving everyone money due to the fact that the dollar would lose its value and cause inflation. But after studying it and watching a few of your videos on your website, I have come to the conclusion that it's a very good amazing idea you have come up with."

Scott: "Thanks, Jerry! I've been expecting your call! I've been thinking about it long time to make a better economic policy for the world."

Jerry: "Scott, do you have time to talk now? You mind if I ask you a few questions about your policy and your new world order plan? That is to make up and give out an unlimited amount of money for the US government and the rest of the world to be as one identity."

Scott: "Not really, I'm filming for a movie right at the moment. But I suppose I could stop everything for a few minutes to talk."

Scott told everyone on the set to take a thirty-minute break.

Jerry: "The first thing I would like to clear up is how would you control the fluctuation of the dollar in the economy?"

Scott: "There would be a tariff placed on all food products, rental of homes, apartments, utilities, insurance, and new cars to where they can't increase more than 10% a year. For instance, if there's a loaf of bread that sells for \$2 during the year from calendar date of January 1 to the December 31, no more than \$0.20 can be added to the loaf to equal \$2.20 for that calendar year. Only after the following year the cost-of-living allowance fluctuation is figured in for each district or county. The housing, new autos, utilities, insurances, and food then again may fluctuate only 10% for the following fiscal year. Some items may be decreased or increased on price depending on demand or shortages. Businesses and companies will be fined greatly if they're not within compliance, which is dictated by the district, county, or government. After time, the economy will be at a steady common rate."

Jerry: "How much will each person get per month or year, and how is it broken down? I found it to sound complicate understanding all the details when I watched your video."

Scott: "See, I used an example of Monticello, Iowa, as being a small community. I based the costs of living to be approximately \$20,000 a year for a single person to live off of. If there is a couple, each person will get \$20,000 to equal \$40,000 a year! For a single person, that would be about \$1,666 a month. You would take the cost of average living expenses per district or county that is set up for the world policy. I'll use Monticello to explain for an example of the breakdown. For instance, if you were to rent or make payments on a cheap one-bedroom house, it would cost \$500 on average. With insurance, \$75; natural gas, \$50; electric, \$75; water and sewer, \$66; used or new car payment, \$250; miscellaneous, \$50; and food, \$600, this is without having a job. If you choose to work, your benefits will stay the same for entitlement. Each person is entitled to claim one kid to receive an extra \$500 a month until they're eighteen years old to spend as they wish. So a couple with two kids would receive \$51,984 a year. No extra money is given beyond one child per person. But let's

say one of the couples in the relationship that has two kids chooses not to take custody and leaves the child with mother or the father to care for, \$500 for the one kid would be received, and if the other spouse chooses not to take care of the child, the one with the two children would receive \$1,000 for the kids. There will be no more alimony for the children from the opposite parent to collect of two kids. If the opposite parent decides to work and that parent is making extra money, the government will allow the courts to demand the alimony up to 25% of the parents' working wages, if he or she chooses not to care for the child or children. Usually it'll work in cases with parents that have more than three kids together to receive the full 25% of the wages working."

Jerry: "That sounds pretty good. Sounds like you got it figured out, but what about state government aid for the people, like food stamps, unemployment, money for assisted housing, WIC, and other government programs?"

Scott: "There will be no other government programs assisting the people, besides what would be of the cost-of-living allowance that is given for the new world policy. Food stamps would be done away with. Unemployment will be done away with also. But Social Security, if you paid into it through a job, you will still have that as a backup for retirement or disability on top of the cost-of-living allowance. It'll be determined on the amount that you pay in for the amount you receive for retirement or disability from the day when the new world policy takes effect. If you never work, you'll never get Social Security, and if you choose to work part-time or very little, very little will come back to you from Social Security. Other pensions from the government that the people have worked over the years will only be authorized to the individuals prior to the new world policy date. They will be discontinued in the future. If they got ten or more years working for the government's policy, it will be prorated for the time they served, for the ten years or more, but will not continue any further in the future for said policy. This will only be paid out as dictated by the old standing policy of country or government. If they are disabled and received a policy, they will receive it until they are in the grave."

Jerry: "That's all good to know! You have made it very clear to me. Thanks, Scott, for your time."

Scott: "No problem, Jerry! You can call me any time if you have more questions."

Scene 47 took place in Bamberg, Germany, while Scott was in the military at a bowling alley. Scott was the captain of the bowling team but was running late one night to bowl. Scott walked in to the bowling alley when his teammates were shadow bowling. There were six members to the team, and the low member that bowled from the week prior would sit out. It just happened to be the officer that was on Scott's team that was supposed to sit out.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 47, take 5. Problem while at bowling alley."

Scott: "Hey, guys, sorry about running late. I was caught up at the officer's club talking to my section chief. Could you put me in the computer? I'll be ready to bowl in a couple minutes. Let me grab a beer!"

Scott ordered a beer and took a few sips out of it, then returned to the lane where his team was at.

Captain Armstrong: "You are late! They already put my name in the computer, so you're going to have to sit out."

Scott: "Nonsense! You haven't bowled any frames yet."

Captain Armstrong: "If I say you're going to sit out, you're going to sit out, I outrank you."

Scott: "I'm the captain of this team. If you're the low man, you sit out like you're supposed to."

Captain Armstrong: "Don't tell me what to do. Don't raise your voice at me."

Scott: "That's not right, and don't use your rank in here. It's after-hours!"

Captain Armstrong: "You need to recognize my rank and that's final. You're going to sit out!"

Scott: "You're becoming a prick! If I have to, I'll remove you from the team."

Specialist Sellers: "Come on, Scott! Just leave it alone and sit out. You don't need any trouble!"

Scott: "What are you talking about? He's the one making trouble when he should sit out."

Captain Armstrong: "If you say one more thing to me, I'll have the bowling alley call the military police on you."

Scott: "Do what you want to do, but I'm going to bowl tonight."

Scott attempted to change the officer's name to his on the display, so Captain Armstrong told the individual at the desk from the lane to call the military police.

Captain Armstrong: "You're not bowling tonight!"

Scott: "Sure I am!"

A couple minutes later, the military police showed up at the bowling alley. They came up to Scott and Captain Armstrong to find out what the problem was. Captain Armstrong told the military police that Sergeant Chally was disobeying him as an officer, that he would like Sergeant Chally to leave the bowling alley.

Military Police Specialist Robertson: "Sergeant Chally, you're going to have to leave the bowling alley, or we will be forced to take you into the military police station."

Scott: "I'm the captain of the bowling team, and he is supposed to sit out. He was the lowest one on the team that bowled last week."

Military Police Specialist Smothers: "Sir, we will use force on you to remove you from this establishment if you don't leave now."

Scott: "Why don't you tell Captain Armstrong to leave?"

Military Police Specialist Robertson: "Sir, this is the last time we'll tell you, you'll need to leave."

Scott: "That's bullshit!"

The military police then wrestled Scott to the ground. Scott wasn't trying to resist. They placed the handcuffs on Scott and took him to the police station and processed him in for the night to spend in jail.

Director Dean: "Cut! That's a wrap!"

Scene 48 took place a couple two to three weeks later at the battalion headquarters. Scott was about to receive UCMJ action or a field grade article 15 punishment for the incident at the bowling alley. Scott was waiting outside the battalion commander's office until the sergeant major requested for Scott to report to Lieutenant Colonel Clark.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 48, take 1. Scott receives article 15 for incident at bowling alley."

Scott walked into the colonel's office in front of his desk while the colonel was sitting down. Scott did a salute to the colonel, which he returned the salute. Scott then dropped his salute after the colonel had dropped his salute.

Colonel Clark: "Sergeant Chally, it has been brought to my attention to where I have to act on this situation that you've gotten into. You have showed up for the community as a blotter report drinking alcohol while off-duty at the bowling establishment. Your charges are disrespecting an officer and being insubordinate. Now, Sergeant Chally, I've known you to be a good soldier. I really hate to enforce punishment on the situation, but I have no choice but to. This is your second article 15 that you had in six months. According to military law and order, you have to listen to your superiors. How do you plead on this charge?"

Scott: "Colonel Clark, I don't feel it's just for this action of discipline due to the fact that I was the captain of the bowling team and Captain Armstrong was supposed to sit out that night and not bowl."

Colonel Clark: "I am disappointed at Captain Armstrong's actions on how he handled the situation. But trust me, it will reflect on his officer's evaluation report when I write it up. What would you like me to do for discipline, Sergeant Chally?"

Scott: "Well, my military career doesn't look very good anymore receiving two article 15s within six months of each other. The first article 15 stopped me from going to BNOC, a department of the army-selected school for my staff sergeant. If you could, I would appreciate if you take me down one rank to specialist and give me forty-five days' extra duty, suspend the pay without taking it from my check, and give me no restrictions."

Colonel Clark: "Okay, Sergeant Chally, that's what I'll do. Is there anything else you'd like?"

Sergeant Chally: "No, that's all, thanks, sir!"

Sergeant Chally gave a salute to Colonel Clark then returned the salute and dropped his salute. Scott then dropped his salute. Sergeant Chally did a right face then walked out of the office.

Director Dean: "Cut! Good job!"

Scene 52 took place when Scott and his family exited the military with an honorable discharge five months later after his last disciplinary action.

It was now March 1997, and Scott just returned from Bernard's with supplies for remodeling the upstairs of their newly purchased house. Scott got out of his vehicle and opened up the back hatch of his Dodge Caravan. He took a couple small plastic bags with items in them, along with some 2' x 2' light fixtures in a box to be carried in the house. Sondra opened the window from the kitchen and began to speak to Scott.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 52, take 1. Out in front of house after coming from Bernard's."

Sondra: "Hi, honey! I see you made it back from Bernard's. Do you need any help carrying stuff in the house?"

Scott: "No, honey! I think I've got it!"

Sondra: "I've got lunch ready whenever you're ready to eat."

Scott: "That'll work, I'm hungry, thanks!"

Scott carried the items in the house.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 53 took place in a large open space of the upstairs with slanted ceilings that has been de-gutted. Scott was working at putting light fixtures in the ceiling and doing electrical wiring. Sondra brought Scott a beer to drink. It's an early afternoon in March.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 53, take 1. Remodeling upstairs of house."

Sondra: "Hi, sweetie! How's it going?"

Scott: "It's going good! I'm almost done with the wiring here."

Sondra: "Would you like to take a break for a minute or two? I brought you a beer!"

Scott: "That sounds good! Thanks! Give me a minute! Go ahead and have a seat."

A minute later, Scott was finished with wiring one of the lights in the ceiling. He went over where Sondra was sitting on a five-gallon bucket. Then he pulled up a five-gallon bucket to sit on. He opened the beer and then took a sip. Sondra had a glass of water she was drinking from.

Scott: "Another three weeks and I should be done remodeling the upstairs, honey. Then all we need to do is order up someone to lay the carpet."

Sondra: "I can't wait until it's finished. This will be nice and spacious room for the kids."

Scott: "Yeah, it should be nice!"

Sondra: "I think we have a cute little house here. I'm so happy we found it within thirty days of you getting out of the military. Tomorrow will be thirty days that we have lived here. Since then you've remodeled the bathroom, relocated the washer and dryer down the basement. You've done quite a bit, and you're good at doing it."

Scott: "Well, thank you, honey! I want to make the house nice for us to live in."

Sondra: "Now only if you can find a job in like a month or two, that would be sweet."

Scott: "Well, I have up to six months to find a job according to the unemployment office. That'll put me in July of this year. It shouldn't be too long for me to find a job since I got an honorable discharge from the military. We should be looking pretty good for 1998 to be finished with all the remodeling of the house too. The basement will take me a little while though."

Sondra: "I'm so happy you left the military. We have such a great life, and we're in a good community for our kids to go to school."

Director Dean: "Cut! Good job, you two!"

Seeing 61 took place at the factory called Hydraulic Energy in Monticello. Scott had been working there

roughly two years at this time. He was an automatic welder for the company. He had a selection of orders to be run in his booth from a staging area. Scott grabbed the next order of the same size cylinders he was currently running. Scott went to park the forklift. As he's walking back to his booth, he passed another booth with the same setup as his. Then he was intercepted by the other automatic welder for the factory named Rusty.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 61, take 1. Problem occurred in factory as welder."

Rusty: "I see that you took the same size order that I'm working on."

Scott: "Well, I've been on two-inch all night. You always told me if you're on that size, you stay on that size until they're all gone."

Rusty: "Nonsense, I could've sworn you were on three-inch earlier tonight."

Scott: "You were on six-inch earlier, and I can see you put two inch in your booth."

Rusty: "You need to switch to one at a half inch or something else to run."

Scott: "Why should I have to switch up and give you the gravy jobs?"

Rusty got up in Scott's face, chest to chest.

Rusty: "I ought to kick your ass!"

Scott: "I don't know why you want to cause a problem. Why can't you just get along with me? I don't try to irritate you."

Rusty: "Because I don't like you!"

Scott left Rusty and went back to his booth. Scott then began to run the two-inch cylinders. Less than a minute later, Rusty had whipped a pair of needle-nose pliers at Scott's booth. The pliers broke in half from hitting a metal tub and almost hit Scott. Scott walked back to the other booth and confronted Rusty.

Scott: "Why did you whip the pliers for? They almost hit me!"

Rusty: "Like I said, I don't like you!"

Scott: "Don't have me get the foreman."

Rusty: "The foreman already knows you're an asshole. He'll listen to me before you."

Scott then walked back to his booth and continued to run his order.

Director Dean: "Cut! Good job!"

Scene 62 took place in the meeting room of the factory, Hydraulic Energy. This day Scott went to the plant manager's office about 3:30 PM with some papers that he had typed up about harassment in the factory that he's receiving from a worker. The plant manager talked to him for a brief couple minutes and said he wanted to have a meeting with the two of them that were involved the next day at 6:30 AM. Scott and Rusty worked third shift and got off at 7:00 AM. The plant manager and human resource personnel had read Scott's paperwork the day prior. Then Scott, Rusty, plant manager Carl, and human resource person named Craig met in the meeting room at 6:30 AM.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 62, take 1. Meeting with Rusty, Carl, and Craig at Hydraulic Energy."

Carl: "Scott, I have reviewed the paperwork that you've written, and I feel it's a pretty serious statement about harassment. Today we hope we get to the bottom of it and stop the harassment that's going on. Rusty, according to Scott's statement, he says that you're having problems working with him. Scott also says that you complain to him about doing some of the orders that need to be run. He says on multiple occasions you threatened to kick his ass. And a couple days ago, you had thrown a pair of pliers at his booth. What do you have to say about this?"

Rusty: "He's leaving me to do all the small orders where it's hard to make rate. If you don't make rate, your talked to by the foreman, or possibly written up."

Carl: "Did you threaten to kick his ass, and did you whip some pliers the other day?"

Rusty: "Yes! I did that, because I was upset."

Carl: "Well, I'm glad you addressed this, Scott. I see the rates are causing problems of stress among you. I will have a talk with the foremen and let them know to be a little more lenient on trying to make rates."

Scott: "Yeah. The rates are really hard to make. They're really fast and the dayshift foreman is taking away setup times on all the orders. Sometimes it takes you twenty to thirty minutes to do a setup, and the order only gives you fifteen minutes to do. They're of small jobs with just a couple pieces to run."

Carl: "Scott, have you talked to your foreman about the rates and the problems you've been having with Rusty?"

Scott: "I have talked to my foreman numerous occasions, and I believe he feels the whole problem is me. He tells me to stay away from Rusty and come to him instead if I have a problem."

Rusty: "The foreman says he's going to do something but usually never does."

Carl: "Scott, what would you like to see done?"

Scott: "For one, don't hold us accountable on the rates, and as far as Rusty goes, I believe he should just have a warning to where he doesn't mess with me anymore. But I don't want to see him fired."

Craig: "Rusty, since you've been an outstanding worker for the last fifteen years you've been here. we're not going to fire you today, but you will get a three-day suspension off of work without pay. And if an occurrence happens again, you may be fired."

Carl: "How do you feel about that, Rusty? Do you have anything else to say?"

Rusty: "Well, I'm not happy, but I understand. But the rates should be looked at."

Carl: "I'll look into it. Scott, thanks for bringing this to my attention. You two have a good rest of your day."

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 74 took place at Scott's house down at his den or office. There had been a lot of stress on Scott's chest over the years. Scott was struggling to make the bills and was bombarded by owing the IRS money. Scott was sitting down, and he was upset with the IRS. He's looking to write them a hardship letter to try and relieve

the debt. Scott had the computer on with a Word program up. Scott was so distraught with all the problems he'd had prior to starting the letter. Then he saw his son's Bible on his desk. He thought for a moment, maybe he could figure his problems out by asking God what to do or if he could ask for God's help, so he had opened the Bible randomly after asking for help to see what it would say to him. He was astounded by the messages he was receiving from the Bible. All the times he opened the Bible and randomly looked at whatever quote that stuck out to him at first glance. He would receive in the writings of how God will help him out in his journey of life. One for example was from.

2 Samuel 22:7 (NIRV): "When I was in trouble, I called out to the Lord. I called to my God. From his temple, he heard my voice. My cry for help reached his ears."

Also from Deuteronomy 18:15 (NIRV): "The Lord your God will rise up for you a prophet like me. He will be one of your own people. You must listen to him."

Scott's wife had come down to the den for a second, then Scott told her to listen to what he's figured out and heard from the Bible.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 74, take 1. Scott has hardships and turns to Bible for help."

Scott: "Honey, you wouldn't believe what is happening with me. I had asked the Bible for help and advice. I took our son's Bible, opened it up randomly to a page. This is what it told me. This is from New International Reader's Version of the Bible: Deuteronomy 18:15: "The Lord your God will rise up for you a prophet like me. He will be one of your own people. You must listen to him.""

Scott: "What do you think?"

Sondra: "That doesn't necessarily mean anything. That could've been coincidence, and it's talking about a prophet."

Scott: "I've done this a couple times so far and it's only speaking about helping me. Look, I'll do it again to show you what it says from the Bible."

Sondra: "Okay, show me!"

Scott opened the Bible randomly and read the first verse that stuck out to him in a matter of a few seconds.

Isaiah 41:13 (NIRV): "I am the Lord your God. I take hold of your right hand. I say to you: 'Do not be afraid. I will help you.'"

Scott: "See what I tell you! The Bible is speaking to me!"

Sondra: "That is strange, but that could be just coincidence. I wouldn't look too far into it. There are probably a lot of quotes in the Bible like that."

Scott: "I was going to write a hardship letter to the IRS. But something tells me or I feel I've got more important things to do like write up a new world order. What needs to be changed in the world? Then send it off to the president and important people to look at it to change the laws, to make a better economy and life for the people. I need to remember this day. I feel it's very important. Today is March 5, 2006, isn't it, honey?"

Sondra: "It is, but I don't know why you need the date, it doesn't mean anything."

Director Dean: “Cut! Good job!”

Scene 75 took place in Scott’s den. Scott had just spent two weeks after work and the weekends writing up a new world policy. Scott called for Sondra to come downstairs. He wanted to read the new world policy to her to see what she thought.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 75, take 3. The first pages of Scott’s new world policy.”

Scott (yelling): “Sondra, can you come downstairs for a few minutes?”

Sondra: “Yeah! I can come down!”

She had returned the response with a loud voice from upstairs. She came down and sat on the futon.

Scott: “Well, honey, I think I’m finished with the first draft of the new world policy. It took me two weeks to write, but I think you will like it. I would like you to listen and tell me what you think. Is that okay?”

Sondra: “Yeah, I’m looking forward to hearing it.”

Scott: “Okay, here it goes! I named it Ace Services with three branches: Ace of Hearts, Ace of Spades, and Ace of Diamonds. It stands for American Constitution of Economics.”

Sondra: “Interesting! What do the ACES stand for?”

Scott: “The Ace of Hearts stands for love and represents the people for healthcare and anything related. The A, standing for America and the definition for America, is relating to the United States or to the continents of America. The Ace of Spades stands for power and represents the leadership, justice for all the people alike. The C, standing for Constitution and the definition for Constitution is a body of fundamental principles or establish precedence according to which a state or organization is governed. The Ace of Diamonds stands for wealth and represents the money to be used for the government funding of buildings, projects such as roads, schools, and wages of people who work for the government and for all people. As for money that is needed for the people or projects, the E, standing for Economics and the definition for Economic, is relating to economics or the economy. Justified in terms of profitability!”

Sondra: “Nice! Very interesting! Sounds like you put a lot of thought into this!”

Scott: “Yeah! But it only gets better. I’ll read to you and just stop me when you want to break or when you have a question.”

Sondra: “Okay! I’m ready!”

Scott: “Ace Services is a constitution governing the people’s protection. . . . It will establish a better well-liked society, for which we the people live. . . . By bringing balance to the system in how we operate. . . . I, Scott LeRoy Chally . . . see a vision of three different branches that will be known as ACE SERVICES. . . . As we . . . I . . . read along . . . I will explain on how Ace Services will benefit this nation. . . . I will go over and explain three of the four powers that will represent our society . . . how in relationship we the people will be helped and why we need to uphold these powers. . . . You will then see new laws come into effect . . . as well as some old laws be removed from the books. . . . You will see a medical system for the people . . . not for the unjust good of profits. . . . You will see a well-balanced lending system . . . which will be fair for all. . . . You will see how we the people will not be afraid to invest in our economy . . . Which we will have secured markets balanced and backed by the government. . . . All leadership will be looked at, and some ethics of leadership will be changed to meet for the Commonwealth of the people. . . . There will be a double check system in all

parts of the government. . . . Civilian offices need to assure no wrongdoing is being done to mankind. . . . You may be asking how this can happen. . . . Well, for the most part, information will be gathered and obtained from the people by sealed collection boxes in every post office. . . . As a sealed collection box is removed, another sealed collection box will take its place. Only the facility to where the collection boxes go would have the access codes and the necessary keys needed to open them. . . . All the facilities that receive the collection boxes will take the necessary steps to safeguard the information obtained in the collection boxes. . . . By keeping security of the information obtained at their utmost responsibility. . . . Failure to do differently could lead to immediate dismissal and be prosecuted to the fullest of the law. These boxes will be assessable for all people no matter how young or old, for the good or for the bad. . . . The people will have the right to voice their opinions to be heard or at least suggest something that they would like to see changed. . . . This will include if it's a sensitive situation, like a minor being sexually assaulted, rape cases, or spouse abuse cases, where they may be afraid to take to the police. Small businesses, big businesses, companies, factories, and all alike should now worry on the way they operate. . . . Now the common-day worker will have more rights and have the backing of the law on their side. . . . All concerns will be addressed and carried out whether for the good or for the bad of the applying parties. . . . Laws will be proposed due to the effect on multiple complaints of the same nature. . . . Or be considered for new operating procedures that best fits the common public. . . . Tallies will be keep on how we can achieve a greater society. . . . The state representatives would then work the suggestions into bills and laws that would best suit the people... If negligence or wrongdoing should come to an official in any of the Ace Services offices. . . . That individual will be immediately put on suspension until the matter is solved. . . . He or she will be upheld at the fullest of the law. . . . If the one who puts the complaint forward is falsifying or is found at fault without reasonable doubt, he or she will or could face criminal charges. . . . The employer at that time will have full right to fire that individual. . . . There will be what you call a scorecard or sheet with the rating scale from 1 to 10 made up for each person or for each complaint submitted. . . . They'll have to write a brief statement explaining the situation and appropriate action that were taken. . . . All actions will be kept on file at the appropriate state office for minimum of three years."

Scott: "Do you follow so far, Sondra?"

Sondra: "That last part, with the scorecard. You're saying there'll be a card that the people will be able to fill out at every post office. To concern a problem of any sort, that will be followed up on by the Ace of Spades department."

Scott: "That's correct. And the Ace of Spades department will also do a rating of how important it is and a written portion of how it will be handled."

Sondra: "Cool! Okay, continuel!"

Scott: "So let's be keen about this, I say . . . If we are not looking out for one another, we could close down our own employment due to the neglect of our own doing. . . . In no way shape or form should blackmail be used against the company or an individual working for company for-profit or too better oneself. . . . I suggest that businesses may want to look into profit-sharing for their workers to keep a more stable workflow being produced. All Ace Services offices will have the necessary information and updated policies and procedures for businesses to conform by federal, state, or local laws. . . . All a business has to do is make the call to the appropriate office for the information they seek. . . . At any time there will be a number for anyone to call for help or information. . . . But actions have to be added to the proper slips for official actions to be carried out. . . . Here is a more defined list of Ace Services' powers. Ace of Hearts shall stand for love and represent Americans. . . . It's the most important of all the aces. . . . Ace of hearts would be the branch that covers the people's protection to ensure all have assistance on medical needs . . . to include government health and welfare . . . fair prescription acts, certain aspects of housing of urban development, family assistance programs, emergency relief efforts, and any other agencies that are similar in nature. . . . No one should be deprived of these services or be left behind. . . . Ace of Spades shall stand for power. . . . This will include political members, lawyers, business owners, any executive officers, to the everyday worker, from the highest-

ranking general to the lowest enlisted private and all leaders alike. . . . This branch will govern fair treatment for all and ensure all have a voice to be heard as equals. . . . No undue justice should come to any one person. . . . Ace Services will allow all people to seek assistance throughout the land of any situation that may arise. . . . All leaders no matter how big or small will have to abide by the rules set forth. Ace of Diamonds will stand for wealth These offices will handle all the nations' budget and distribution of the money to the agencies of need. . . . Banking, federal aid will be handled at this office. Anything from financial needs to the people and the emergency relief act along with investment agencies, that would be for the people. Ace of Clubs represents entertainment. . . . My best way to explain this is if you look at how kings would use jesters for entertainment or how the Romans would use their coliseums, it indicates fault bearings and misuse of powers.”

Sondra: “So the Ace of Clubs would be like bars, sports events, bowling alleys, and clubs?”

Scott: “Yes, that’s correct! Do you understand everything so far?”

Sondra: “Yes, I think so. It’s sounding pretty good.”

Scott: “As you can see, we the people can prosper and feel freedom at its fullest. . . . As we share in the duties of our everyday life, we will know that we are free and equal to one another. . . . Fairness shall be carried out across the land with the backing of the justice system on our side. . . . We will do away with the heart-stricken problems that affect each of us. . . . When leadership or leaders drift from the respective duties, it becomes a burden, and burdens we don’t need. . . . Some leaders may prejudge people without knowing all the facts by simply having a bias approach toward work ethics. . . . Which they may not worry about the health and farewell of the workers. . . . We need to seek out those leaders and try to train them to be good leaders, but if untrainable, we must replace. . . . We, the leaders . . . need to listen to the people’s wants, needs, desires, along with keeping their safety and their health top priority. . . . Leaders need to make sound decisions. . . . They need to be fair and just for all parties alike . . . without bringing shame to one’s workplace or to one’s values. . . . For leaders to place immoral acts . . . or beliefs in front of the people’s common values, such as unjust and abusive power or for profits, prejudice in front of their own values . . . or emphasizing hardships on others for their own good . . . all of this shall not be tolerated as a leader. . . . Everyone will have to uphold the duties for which they operate for the common farewell of the people. . . . No one shall use unfair judgment toward one another. . . . Common interest shows that we are all the same and make it better for all people. . . . If the people get into unlikable situations where there is no help of the needs for the people that fall between the guidelines . . . of what we can say is considered as fair or just plain hardship from such businesses and companies. . . . Zero tolerance for harassment in the workplace should be upheld at all times. . . . It is a leader’s responsibility to uphold and provide a healthy work environment. . . . Leaders must not mix up social activity as a source of a problem . . . but keep what’s fair for one and the same for all. . . . Also keep a keen eye and ear of possible problems that may arise. . . . If one should see something strange occurring, they should contact the one or parties that are involved before it progresses. . . . We might want to consider a ‘don’t ask or don’t tell’ policy. . . . We should consider it for general living standards of what the people want. . . . There also should be no harassment for the general population. Keep in mind. . . . In other words, what a neighbor or someone we come in contact with should not pose judgment on one another for what he or she does on their personal time. . . . But also saying thy neighbor you shall respect as long as there is no harm to come to thy neighbor. . . . To include what may occur because of carelessness or misbehavior. . . . There’ll be a justice system inside of a justice system to see that all justice is to be carried out fairly. . . . New bills and rights for the people will be either adopted or proposed along with some of the funds being granted or be suggested to a higher court for approval within the government. . . . The Ace of Spades office, when they act on a dispute, they should evaluate carefully and have a bipartisan opinion to adopt on the situation of each matter . . . which can send individuals to a number of agencies to solve the situation so it doesn’t occur again. . . . This policy would use a three-strike method for the first-line supervisor position. . . . The points will add up for everybody in the immediate chain of command for such said company, government, or business that it is applied to. . . . If there were to be one person under the next level of leadership, the second level of leadership would have a total of six points. . . . The third line of leadership would have nine points, and the fourth line of leadership

would have twelve points. . . . But if the first-line leadership had a total of four, that would mean the second line of leadership would have a total of fifteen points. . . . Three points per leader would be granted in a direct chain to equal the total for the level of points for leadership position. . . . The highest-level supervisor would have to set up a point schematic scheme as soon as possible within ninety days of starting such a business or expansion of such a business. . . . If a company has little as ten people, you may have six points but no more than sixty-six points for a company that has a thousand-plus people. . . . A line of leadership can branch off as much or for as many leaders as you have. . . . I'll give you a few examples on how the point system will work. . . . Let's say the first-line supervisor gets turned in to Ace Services due to a racial statement that he or she had made to an employee . . . which the Ace Services office decided for employee. . . . The first-line supervisor will now go down to two points instead of having a three-point value. . . . Also the same supervisor will have to join some classes on racial harassment acts. . . . If he or she chooses not to attend the class in the time that was allowed, they would lose another point along with the chain of command. . . . unless that leader was removed from his or her duty. . . . The whole chain of command all the way up to the president of the company would also lose a point, and it would stay on their record for three full years. . . . For each point that is taken away at said time . . . which only when the three years are up from the time of the said point was deemed to have happen. . . . They will receive the point back to the three points where they had started with for the first-line leader. . . . No other first-line leader would lose a point, only the ones that are in the direct line of the one that got turned in. . . . From the lowest to highest, it will always be accounted for any situation or incident that may come about. . . . In rare cases there may be more than one point taken. . . . Or a business or company may be closed down for a short time until the problem is solved. . . . From the first-line leader to the top of the command that has a complaint against him or her, there could be as many as three points, or half of the total points taken away from what they would have been entitled to. . . . So they should be careful what they do and make good judgment calls. . . . The party that is not at fault could sue for money and/or push for criminal actions. . . . Ace Services will do their best to make all complaints fair as possible when carried out. . . . The point system on the businesses will be looked at as a record of how they perform. . . . Workers may check on the record of the points of said business or company before seeking employment with them, or when the businesses has insurance or is looking for insurance, it may cost them extra.”

Sondra: “So if there are six first-line leaders, the second-line leader would have a total of twenty-one points. Is that correct? And let's say there's only a third-line leader or CEO of the company, he would have twenty-four points.”

Scott: “That's correct. I believe you've got it!”

Director Dean: “Cut! Good job, you two!”

Scene 77 took place in Scott's den. It was about ten o'clock at night on April 5, 2006. Scott was sitting on his futon reading from the Bible. He was reading passages of the holy city. From his mind reading, you can see what was read. After reading a few of the lines or verses, Scott had his eyes closed. He heard a fast rumbling trumpet sound in his ears. He was carried away in a dream or vision of what the holy city looked like. He was amazed by what he saw. He considered it to be the most beautiful sight that he ever saw. When he first saw the image in his head, there was a white fog in the center of the image. Then it went away. He saw thousands upon thousands of gems intricately laced around in the inner circle.

Director's Cut Guy: “Scene 77, take 1. Scott's reading Bible and then sees vision of holy city.”

The scene showed Scott glancing at his watch showing the date and time. Then with very little light, he was reading in his mind from the Bible.

Scott's mind:

(NIRV) John 3:13: “No one has ever gone into heaven except the one who came from heaven. He is the

Son of Man.”

(NIRV) Daniel 7:13: “In my vision I saw one who looked like a son of man. He was coming with clouds of heaven. He approached the Eternal God. He was led right up to him.”

(NIRV) John 1:18: “No one has ever seen God. But God, the one and only son, is at the father’s side. He has shown us what God is like.”

(NIRV) 1 John 4:9: “How did God show his love for us? He sent his one and only son into the world. He sent him so we could receive life through him.”

(NIRV) 1 John 4:14: “The father has sent his son to be the Savior of the world. We have seen it. We give witness to it.”

(NIRV) Revelation 21:10: “Then he carried me away in a vision. The spirit took me to a huge high mountain. He showed me Jerusalem, the holy city. It was coming down out of heaven from God.”

(NIRV) Revelation 4:1: “After this I looked, and there in front of me was a door standing open in heaven. I heard the voice I heard before. It sounded like a trumpet. The voice said, ‘Come up here. I will show you what must happen after this.’”

(NIRV) Revelation 4:2: “At once the Holy Spirit took complete control of me. There in front of me was a throne in heaven with someone sitting on it.”

(NIRV) Revelation 4:3: “The one who sat there shone like Jewels. Around the throne was a rainbow that look like an emerald.”

(NIRV) Revelation 4:4: “Twenty-four other thrones surrounded that throne. Twenty-four elders were sitting on them. The elders were dressed in white. They had gold crowns on their heads.”

Scott paused for a moment with his eyes closed after reading from the Bible. He heard like a fast rumbling trumpet sound in his ears. In the distance in his mind, he saw an image where it’s moving closer to him. At first he saw the image of evenly proportioned intricate crystals in a circle, which had white fog in the center. As the intricate display of crystals got closer in his mind, the fog disappeared, and he saw the image of thousands of gems in the center.

This went on for seven to ten seconds. He then had a thought that he had in his mind of how this must be what was talked about in the Bible of God’s one and only holy city. The image disappeared, and the vision was over. Scott’s wife, Sondra, was upstairs watching TV in the bedroom. Scott then yelled for Sondra to come downstairs.

Scott: “Sondra, honey! Could you come down here please?”

As Scott yelled, Scott moved to the office chair, and Sondra came down and sat on the futon.

Sondra: “What’s up, honey? I was watching a movie! What do you need?”

Scott: “You wouldn’t believe what just happened to me! I was reading in the Bible some Bible verses of the holy city. I was sitting on the futon when a vision came across me and I saw God’s holy city. It was beautiful, the most beautiful thing I’ve ever seen!”

Sondra: “You did? What did the holy city look like?”

Scott: "I was moving closer and closer to this wonderful object. I was amazed of how beautiful it was. When I first saw the object, there was a fog in the center. But as I got closer, the fog disappeared. Then I realized what I was looking at was God's holy city. I will try to explain the best way I can what the city looked like. First of all, everything I was looking at looked like precious gems or crystals all arranged in a specific pattern. There were thousands upon thousands of gems of all colors and varieties in the inner circle. It's like each one of the gems shone brightly as if it was lit up, not blinding, but very clear. What I would say you would call as far as the highway or the inner circle was smooth concave appearing laced with thousands of gems."

Sondra: "So it was like a city with highways and roads?"

Scott: "No, not like a city you imagine, but with thousands of gems. Imagine what a rubber tire would look like. If you stretch the two side walls as far as you could, that would leave you a half moon inner circle. As far as the color goes for the inner circle, I remember it being a mixture of hundreds maybe even thousands of different colored gems, with a clearness of a rainbow and shiny bright colored glass. As far as the outside of the city, the width was one quarter the size compared to how tall it was. There were six towering points evenly spaced around the outside of the circle. Each one of the points that protruded from the city was identically the same in the displacement. The base of the points was wider. They stepped in tiers as they came to a point. Each one of the points step four times and the fourth tier was the tallest that came to a spear-like point. All the steps going to the top of the peak were on a downward slant. Each one of the points gone up to the peak wasn't extremely wide. Nothing like a mountain, from what I could see, it looked like each one of the protruding peaks were facing north-south, east-west. Of the six points that go around the circle, each group would have thirteen crystals."

Sondra: "How wide was each of the thirteen crystals in each group?"

Scott: "I couldn't actually tell you dimensional size on what I saw, but each tier of the six groups was exactly the same size to each other in proportion."

Sondra: "Okay, continue!"

Scott: "From the side view looking at the holy city, it looked like there was a gate between each one of the peaks. Not as a gate you would imagine in construction or fences, but of crystal indentations. Now looking at all six of the points or groups, they all appeared to have a clear gold crystal look to them. The timeframe when I saw all of this was between seven to ten seconds. I couldn't believe what I was seeing. It was the most amazing site I've ever seen. I had a thought in my mind that this was the holy city then the vision left me."

Sondra: "That sounds amazing what you had a vision of, honey. It sounds like you really remembered the details what you say is the holy city."

Scott: "There is no way I can forget! It was just so beautiful."

Director Dean: "Cut! That'll work, Scott and Sondra!"

Scene 80 took place in Scott's bedroom while he was reading the Bible on the bed and watching TV. Scott was thinking of how the holy city looked like. Then he wondered while reading the Bible and looking at multiple different numbers that stuck out to him, within the Bible, if there was any meaning behind them, other than what the numbers dictated. Scott found most of the numbers from the books of Revelation and Daniel.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 80, take 1. Scott in thought while reading the Bible."

Scott in thought (looking at the Bible): "I wonder if these numbers in the Bible have any other value

other than what they're speaking of. I know what the holy city looks like. There are three crystals of different size in four different directions, plus the center one per the six protruding crystal group points coming up on the outer side of the city. If you took the three different size protruding crystals from each side in the four directions, this would equal twelve crystals total. Plus one crystal in the middle to make thirteen total crystals for the six groups going around the circle of the holy city. Each one of the six crystals groups are shaped like a plus sign while looking from the top view. There is a total of seventy-eight individual crystals that are grouped together of the six groups protruding outward from the city. But they seem to be grouped together in four pairs of threes per group. What I can't figure out in the Bible is that it speaks of if you're wise, if you can figure out what the beat's number means. It's man's number! His number is 666! This one really stumps me, but while looking at the city, I see it looks like the distance per tier of crystals going upward to the middle of the fourth crystal at the top is evenly divided into thirds. So that would tell me maybe if you're starting from the top in the middle of the thirteenth crystal the starting value would be .000, then the next tier down would be .333, the following tier down would be .666, and the last tier or the bottom would be .999. This would be a crystal group to count as a whole number of one. That means the beast number or man's number of 666 is actually .666 of a whole number used in the equation to figure out something important for mankind from God's holy city. But interesting enough, we have seven days in a week and the Bible speaks of seven years to be the Sabbath year. If you would look at each one of these pyramid mounts protruding upward for a total of six around the outer side of the city, you could count seven crystals twice in two different directions per group of crystals. Or if you don't count the center one twice in the two directions, there would be six crystals going from one side to the other and vice versa. So the Bible speaks of twelve foundations, this is where this would stand for the six crystal groups to have two different directions to be of equal to twelve, or if your count each of the four sides of the protruding crystal groups coming out from the city, there would be twenty-four. Without counting the center crystal on a crystal group, there's also twelve tiers, which are three on each of the four sides. Each crystal group protruding out from the city has four sides with three crystals each. They would probably represent the four powers that are spoken of in the Bible. Now for the twelve gates of the city that is spoken of, where there are six protruding crystal groups that are in a circle around the city, on each side of the city, there are six crystal indentations from both sides to where they meet each other from each crystal group. These would be considered the gates six on one side six on the other side. There are also thousands of gems inside the inner circle of the city which I'm unsure of how many there is. I can only guess that there are 12,000 gems in the inner circle. Which I would like to say each gem has six or twelve intricate cuts. This is where I'm guessing our souls come from. As the holy city rotates, it casts the souls to earth at the time prior to birth to each person. It's also celestial timing depending on what soul you get. Our souls grow here on earth in us. Then return to heaven when we die. Which waits for another venture here on earth when opportune time comes about to be casted back out. But you will not have any recollection of your previous life. Only in heaven you will. In heaven, you will obtain all knowledge of anything and everything. So I believe."

Director Dean: "Cut! Okay, that should do it!"

Scene 81 took place at Scott and Sondra's house. Scott had just come up from the office excited because he believed he figured out what some numbers meant from in the Bible. Scott went to the kitchen where Sondra was reading a newspaper at the table. Scott had a calculator in hand and the Bible.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 81, take 1. Scott figures out the 144,000 to be sealed."

Scott: "Sondra, honey! I've been at these numbers for over a week now trying all kinds of combinations to see what I can figure out and what will work with the Bible. I think I figured out the quote or two quotes in the Bible, with man's number of 666."

Sondra: "Cool! I have a minute, show me!"

Scott: "From NIRV, Revelations 21:12: 'The city had a huge, high wall with 12 gates. 12 Angels were at the gates, one at each of them. On the gates were written the names of the 12 tribes of Israel.' So I took 666, times it

by the 12 gates which this then equals 7,992, then I took from NIRV, Revelations 21:14: 'The wall of the city had 12 foundations. Written on them were the names of the 12 apostles of the Lamb.' I took the 7,992 and multiplied that by the 12 foundations, this equaled to 95,904. I tried to imagine how the 666 is mathematically connected to the city. There are six points that extrude from the city, and each one of the group of crystal points has three tiers and a fourth counting the point, but I assume the way it was tiered it would have an equal value of a whole number. So starting from the top will say .000, the first tier would be .333, then the second tier .666, and finishing up with the third tier that would equal .999, this covers the top to the base of one of the six-pointed groups of crystals extruding from the city. So I took the .666 also relating that it's man's number, which I visualize the correlation with what I've seen of the city. I took 95,904 and divided by .666. This gave me a number of 144,000. This number also correlates with the Bible. NIRV, Revelation 7:4: 'Then there were 144,000 from all the tribes of Israel.' NIRV, Revelation 14:1: 'I looked, and there in front of me was the Lamb. He was standing on Mount Zion. With him were 144,000 people. Written on their foreheads were his name and his father's name.' What do you think, sweetie?"

Sondra: "That's pretty neat, but what does 144,000 supposed to mean actually?"

Scott: "Well, I think the 144,000 actually stands for how many different types of souls there are in the world. That is casted out from the holy city."

Sondra: "So you're saying I have more than one soul of mine here on earth?"

Scott: "Yes! It's kind of like having a gem. If it's a sapphire, ruby, or diamond and there is multiples of the same kind of gem, it would be like that! You get it!"

Sondra: "Interesting! I think I got it!"

Director Dean: "Cut! Okay, good!"

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 83, take 1. Scott's thinking and doing calculator combinations."

Scene 83 took place at work. Scott was thinking and doing calculator combinations at his desk. He couldn't seem to get off his mind the numbers that were in the Bible.

Scott's (thinking): "I know that the Bible speaks of the 3 ½ years, the numbers 1,260 days, 42 months, 1,290 days, and also 1,335 days are written. I also know it speaks of 12 tribes, 12 gates, 12 apostles, 12 angels, and 12 foundations. It also speaks of the 4 powers. The 24 elders along with the beast number of 666 or .666. It speaks many places within the Bible of 7 years, also 7 times 7 years to equal 49 years for the Sabbath."

Scott was computing different numbers in his head with multiple combinations to figure the mystery of the Bible with the number of 666. Scott was determined because he felt pressured by some force greater than he had ever seen. He knew if he would keep trying, he might just figure it out. Using a calculator that he had borrowed after making several attempts and combinations, he then believed he had figured it out.

Scott took 1,260 days, multiplied it by the 4 living creatures, then multiplied the 24 elders, and used man's number, but the way he saw it for the holy city of .666. It had calculated BOSS9.36. When he turned the calculator off or to clear the screen on the calculator, the digital display was all scrambled. Scott then went to return the calculator to Eddie to whom he had borrowed from.

Scott: "Sorry, Eddie, I was using your calculator. It just quit and the screen had scrambled on me."

Eddie: "The calculator is less than a month old. You tell me it quit working?"

Scott: "Do you need me to get you another one?"

Eddie: “No, that’s okay! It was only a five-dollar calculator.”

Scott: “Well, thanks anyhow!”

Eddie: “No problem!”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 84 took place in Scott’s den in front of his desk. Sondra was standing by him at the desk. He began to explain to Sondra the calculations that he figured out at work on a piece of paper the formula that he wrote up.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 84, take 1. Scott figures formula for boss date from Bible.”

Scott: “Honey! You wouldn’t believe this! These numbers I’ve got written down on the paper, I did it on a calculator at work today, and the memory froze up on the calculator.”

Sondra “That’s strange! Have you calculated it any other ways or on any other calculators today?”

Scott: “No! I haven’t! I’m about to do it here in a second to show you what it says for the numbers.”

Sondra: “Well, I’m curious what you have come up with, honey!”

Scott: “Well, I’ll show you different passages from the Bible of what they speak, and then I’ll do the calculations. One of the first ones that stuck out to me was from Daniel. NIRV, Daniel 7:25: ‘He’ll speak against the Most High God. He’ll treat God’s people badly. He will try to change the times and laws that were given by God. God’s people will be handed over to him for 3 ½ years.’ We will use the biblical month the Bible describes as a month of 30 days. So from Daniel 7:25, it talks about 3 ½ years. Which would be 1,260 days. Also you’ll see from, NIRV, Revelation 11:3: ‘I will give power to my two witnesses. They will prophesy for 1,260 days. They will be dressed in black close to show how sad they are.’ Again it talks about 1,260 days. Then I used what I would consider the four powers of the city are, but are listed as the four living creatures. NIRV, Revelation 5:8: ‘Then the four living creatures and the 24 elders fell down in front of the Lamb. Each one had a harp. They were holding golden bowls full of incense, which stand for the prayers of God’s people.’ I will also be using the 24 elders in the equation. NIRV, Revelation 11:16: ‘The 24 elders were sitting on their thrones in front of God. They fell on their faces and worshiped God.’ Also from Revelations. NIRV, Revelation 19:4: ‘The 24 elders and the four living creatures bowed down. They worshiped God, who was sitting on the throne. They cried out, “Amen! Hallelujah!”’ Now, I will show you what I did with the calculator. I took 1,260 days and multiplied it by the 4 living creatures. This equals 5,040, which then I multiplied it to the 24 elders, which equals 120,960 and multiplied it to or by .666. This came up with 80,559.36. As you can see on the calculator, it looks like BOSS9.36. Now at work I did this and it scrambled the memory. The calculator would turn on, but you couldn’t calculate. The display screen showed partial segments of the numbers, which you couldn’t make out. Would you like to see it again?”

Sondra: “Yes, that would be great. That’s pretty neat, it does look like BOSS. But what does that 9.36 mean?”

Scott: “I’m getting to that in a second. But let’s try to recalculate the numbers to make sure they’re correct.”

Scott then turned the calculator off and then back on.

Scott: "That's strange! The calculator memory seems to be scrambled. It did the same thing that happened at work. Do we have another calculator?"

Sondra: "That's given me chills, you tell me that happened twice when you calculated these numbers?"

Scott: "Yes! This makes the second time!"

Sondra: "I'll be back in a second. I believe there's another calculator in the kitchen."

Sondra got another calculator.

Scott: "Let me do the calculations one more time and see if it scrambles the calculator. The formula was 1,260 days, times the 4 powers, times the 24 elders, and then times the .666 from the holy city or of man's number."

Scott had done the calculations on the calculator. He then turned off the calculator off and then back on.

Scott: "Okay, this time it didn't scramble the calculator."

Sondra: "Now you said there's more to the number to figure out of the 9.36?"

Scott: "Yes. So you see it says BOSS, then the number beside it I figured it had to be the year. That would make it 2009. But we also have to carry the decimal place out. By taking a 30-day calendar of 360 days in a biblical year and multiplying it by .36, you then can see it would be 129.6 days. Now you have to convert the 129.6 days to months. So we will take 30 days as a month and divide it into 129.6 which equals 4.32 months. Then we will take a 30-day month and times it by .32 which equals 9.6 days. Next we will find out the hours, if you take 24 hours in a day then times that by .6, this equals 14.4 hours. Then we will figure out the minutes. Take 60 minutes in an hour then times it by .4 which will equal 24 minutes. Now you can see it says BOSS 2009 fourth month, ninth day, fourteenth hour, and twenty-fourth minute. The boss is supposed to come on 2009 April 9 at 2:24 PM. Did you see what I did?"

Sondra: "Wow! So you figured out 666, man's number from the Bible, is supposed to mean with time and date."

Scott: "Yes, I believe so! But there's more!"

Sondra: "There is?"

Scott: "From what I can see in the Bible in knowing what the holy city looks like, there is a time of alignment for different events to occur. For instance, the Bible speaks of different events and time frames of 3 1/2 years. But in actuality, that is only half of the cycle. From what I saw, seven years complete a cycle. I'll give you an example from the Bible. NIRV, Leviticus 25:4: 'But the seventh year must be a Sabbath for the land. The land must rest during it. It is a Sabbath year in my honor. Do not plant your fields. Do not trim the branches in your vineyard.' Even though the calculator pointed out the Boss in 2009 we still have to add approximately 3 1/2 years to the equation. Here's another passage from Daniel that I figured out. NIRV, Daniel 12:11: 'The daily sacrifices will be stopped. And the hated thing that destroys will be set up. After that, there will be 1,290 days.' I believe with one of the timelines that I mentioned to you here today with figuring the code from the Bible is to set up a possible asteroid to hit the Earth. So I took 1,290 days equivalent to three years, seven months according to a biblical 30-day calendar. I added that to the 2009 April 9 day. This then gives a day for the Boss to be 2012 November 9. This could mean time frames in passing judgments in the Bible to complete this journey I'm on. The new date and time would read 2012 November 9 2:24 PM. It also could mean of a distress

date.”

Sondra: “So you’re figuring this all out by reading the Bible and calculating?”

Scott: “Yes! But there’s even more. You still got to figure in the seven years. I’ll show you in the Bible what passage it was. NIRV, Judges 6:1: ‘Once again the people of Israel did what was evil in the sight of the Lord. So for seven years he handed them over to the people of Midian.’ So I took the date of 2012 November 9 and added 7 years to it. That date and time for the asteroid to hit is now on 2019 November 9 2:24 PM. You could also rearrange the day with the month for it to look like 9 November or 911.”

Sondra: “You figured all that out by reading the Bible, you say? It’s hard to believe that is going to happen on that day.”

Scott: “But yet there is one more date to figure out. The passages from Daniel. NIRV, Daniel 12:12: ‘Blessed are those who wait for the 1,335 days and reach the end of them. The 1,335 days are to be added to the 2019 November 9 day. Which will equal to the date of 2023 July 24. I believe this date will be the beginning of a new way of life we live here on Earth or when the new world policy will go into effect.’”

Sondra: “Wow! That would be amazing if that happened. You would be the Messiah then if that comes true.”

Scott: “I’m curious about the numbers used in calculating the boss. Maybe there’s more to them. Let me try to divide them out.”

Scott spent multiple times computing the numbers in many different fashions. Then he believed he had solved it again, with the outcome.

Scott: “Hey, honey! I got it! I think I figured out the numbers in reverse. It comes up with my birth year during the time when I was in my mother’s belly.”

Sondra: “You did! Show me how you did it. Let me see!”

Scott: “I took 1,260 days and then divide the 4 living creatures. Which equals 315! Then I divided that by .24 of the elders. This then equals 1312.5 which I divide it into .666 man’s number to equal 1970.720721. I then took the .720721 to figure out month, day, and time. The date comes out to be 1970 August 19, 11:17 AM. But it’s a little strange because I was born on December 13, 1970, at 6:30 PM. The calculation is 3 months, 24 days short of my birthday. But it would be within the time of me being in my mother’s belly. Maybe that’s when my soul entered my body.”

Sondra: “That is truly interesting! I’ve never seen nothing like what you figured out and showed me here today.”

Director Dean: “Cut! We have a wrap!”

Scene 86 took place in Scott’s living room on April 12, 2006. Scott was admiring the newspaper how he noticed the family showing up in for three months in a row. Sondra then just got off work and walked in the house.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 86, take 1. Signs that Scott notices from the spirits or God.”

Sondra: “Hi, honey! How was your day?”

Scott: “Good, and you, sweetie? How was your day?”

Sondra: “I had a bunch of financial complications I had to figure out on some loan paperwork today, but besides that, it was a pretty good day.”

Scott: “You know what I noticed. I see in the front page of the newspaper you’re getting a message from the fundraiser at the school that you went to last week.”

Sondra: “Yeah! I saw that at work today. I’m kind of embarrassed about the picture.”

Scott: “Nonsense, you look fine, honey. That makes the third time our family has shown up in the paper in the last three months. The first time was when Jimmy was snowboarding down suicide hill at the school. The second time was when Jason was petting a snake at preschool. Now you’re getting a body massage. If you ask me, God or the spirits are showing us signs. See that! If I say I’m the chosen one for the world, God has given us clues in our everyday life to let us know we are special. Just the other day, the phone rang three times, a half hour apart each time. I went to answer it. There was no one on the other end of the line. Then it rang one more time about a half hour later. I had answered it, and there was a guy at the other end of it that had preapproved us for \$10,000 credit line on a debit card. If you ask me, this was pretty strange. Now with the paper!”

Sondra: “That does seem strange, doesn’t it? Maybe it’s just coincidence.”

Scott: “Yes, it does! But I don’t think it’s coincidence.”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 87 took place at Scott’s father’s farm. It was a grain offering meant for the Lord which he felt he should do. Scott gathered the necessary items from home to take to the farm. He got out to the farm just before 6:30 PM on April 18.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 87, take 1. Scott does grain offering at his father’s farm on top of the hill.”

Narration of Scott’s grain offering: “From Leviticus, I felt that I should do grain offering to the Lord. I prepared the items I needed. I went out to my dad’s farm up on the hill where there was a fire pit. On the hill at the farm was a clearing for the family to use for storage or entertainment. It was April 18 around 6:30 PM right before dark when I did the offering. From Leviticus it says, NIRV, Leviticus 2:1: ‘Suppose someone brings a grain offering to the Lord. Then his offering must be made out of fine flour. He must pour olive oil on it. He must also put incense on it.’ The ingredients I brought to the farm were fine flour without yeast, olive oil, cinnamon, and salt. NIRV, Leviticus 2:2: ‘He must take it to the priests who are in Aaron’s family line. A priest must take a handful of the fine flour and oil. He must mix it with all of the incense. Then he must burn that part on the altar. It will be a reminder that all good things come from the Lord. It is an offering that is made with fire. It gives a smell that is pleasant to the Lord.’ I looked at it as if I was a descendant of Aaron’s family line. NIRV, Leviticus 2:9: ‘He must take out the part of the grain offering that reminds you that all good things come from the Lord. He must burn it on the altar. It is an offering that is made with fire. It gives a smell that is pleasant to the Lord.’ NIRV, Leviticus 2:13: ‘Put salt on all of your grain offerings. Salt stands for the lasting covenant between you and your God. So do not leave it out of your grain offerings. Add it to all of your offerings.’ I took the flour, poured a little in my hand, and then added a little olive oil and cinnamon. Then I had mixed it up into a paddy. I took a small stick with a V-shape and placed the paddy on it. It was springtime, and for the fire, I took a whole bunch of dead grass that was dry and piled it up. I had extra to keep the fire going. I lit the fire, took the stick with the paddy on it, put it over the fire, and watched it bake. While it was baking, I said a few words. ‘Father, I offer to you this grain offering in lasting covenant.’ When I thought it was done, I took what appeared to look like the good part of the paddy and burnt it on the fire. Then what was left I salted and ate.”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 88 took place in the den after work on Friday the twenty-first.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 88, take 1. Scott in his den and he hears a trumpet in his ear.”

Narration of Scott in the den: “After work on Friday the twenty-first, I started studying the Bible. Later on this evening, I felt like a spirit or strong force had come in to me. So I spent all night reading the Bible. It was early in the morning just before daylight this time when I heard the same trumpet sound, prior to seeing the holy city.”

Scott felt he had to do another grain offering and left the house to go out to the farm.

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 89 took place on the farm where Scott was attempting another grain offering to the Lord. It was now the next morning just before six on Saturday, April 22.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 89, take 1. Scott’s second grain offering at the farm.”

Narration of Scott: “Sometime during the night before morning, I felt as if I had to do another grain offering to the Lord. And the trumpet I heard was when I was supposed to leave. I was out at the farm on top of the hill sitting there in my Expedition. I had some horrible thoughts about what was happening. I didn’t know for sure if I was worthy to hold and do such a duty for the Lord. I was in tears wondering if I was doing the right thing. I remember it was just before light out.”

Scott: “O God, help me please! Can I really be the one? Give me the strength and abilities to do the task that is placed upon my shoulders so I can bring peace and prosperity to the world. If I’m to be the Messiah, show me the light and help me guide the way. O God! I will do my best for you and the world, I love you, Amen.”

Narration of Scott: “It was a clear cool morning. It must’ve been around 6:30 AM. I went out and gathered some grass, and once again, I was sitting on a chair next to the fire pit. There was a log that stood on end where I placed the Bible. I had a small ammo box for which I kept my ingredients to do the grain offering. I mixed up the paddy to be cooked, but this time I had added one extra ingredient. It was my blood! I felt as if I would sacrifice my life to the Lord and for the world if he chooses to take it. I used the razor blade and put a small quarter-inch cut on my wrist. It wasn’t very deep, but I had cut enough to where it dripped. I burnt the grain offering with the blood in it, salted, and then gave what looked like the choice or best part of the offering to be burnt in the fire. I felt as if I was in one or of one with the Lord. My wrist dripped for few minutes which it felt like all impurities had left my body and I was made pure.”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 90 took place down in the den while Scott was sitting on the futon just after midnight of the twenty-third early morning of the twenty-fourth. Scott believed there was an asteroid going to strike in a matter of a few days after the vision he saw.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 90, take 1. Scott sees first vision of an asteroid strike.”

Narration of Scott: “It was after midnight when I saw this vision of an asteroid strike. The elevated feeling made me believe there was an asteroid going to strike within a couple days. All I knew was that God

was telling me to let the people know what was about to come. So at that time I was placed in some sort of test between Satan and God to see how far I was willing to go in order to save mankind. All I knew from what I read was it's telling me if I shall fail this test, the world will come to an end. I knew if I would follow my heart and show that I believe in the Lord that nothing bad would come about. You see, because of what I felt was the state of mind I was in. When the test is close to where I may fail, spiritual spirits would travel or go through my body with immense control. I remember myself trying to explain to my wife how it could be crucial if I don't tell someone that the second coming is upon us. Now it's Monday, April 24, I must've skipped work or called in for vacation day. I was working early that morning on the way or a strategy how to contact an institution. Someone that will help me in the world or tell the people how the second coming is upon us. My wife would listen to me to an extent. But sometimes it would be hard to convince her of some things that seems impossible to understand."

Scott: "Honey! You need to listen to me what's going to happen, the spirits are immense in my body. There's going to be an asteroid to hit soon. I can feel it!"

Sondra: "How can you say this? The news would let us know if there was going to be an asteroid strike."

Scott: "Well, I've seen the vision! It's massive! It's going to happen and very soon!"

Sondra: "If you continue like this, I'm going to have to get you some help!"

Scott: "Can you at least do one thing for me and look up the pope's e-mail address? I need to send him a message of what's going to happen soon."

Narration of Scott: "At 7:00 AM and at 9:05 AM on April 24, I sent an urgent message to the Vatican site. I used John 6:8 from the Bible to explain. NIRV, John 6:8: 'Another of his disciples spoke up. It was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother.' Even though this passage speaks of feeding 5,000 people with only five loaves of bread and two fish with having leftovers, this passage is when I drew the picture which I call the winepress. Andrew was the name and to me this meant I was supposed to draw. It also reads from John. NIRV, John 6:14: 'The people saw the miraculous sign that Jesus did. Then they began to say.' This must be the prophet who is supposed to come into the world. I see the Bible as if it were speaking to me in today's terms, not thousands of years ago. What was written thousands of years ago I'm sure is true. But it correlates with the current time when I read. I had also called the White House for the president and left a message along with the National Security Agency. I never heard from them!"

Director Dean: "Cut! That'll work!"

Scene 91 took place at Scott's parents' house. It's approximately 9:45 AM on April 24, and Sondra just left the house with the two kids. Sondra was very nervous about how her husband was acting. She felt she needed to go to someone to get help for Scott.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 91, take 1. Sondra seeks help for Scott."

Sondra knocked on the door of Scott's parents' house. Scott's mother, Vivian, answered the door.

Vivian: "Hi, Sondra, how's it going? It's pretty early in the morning for you to be coming over, is something wrong?"

Sondra: "Actually, yes. I don't know what to do about Scott. For about the last month, he's been acting really strange. He says he's the Messiah or the chosen one to come into the world."

Donald: "What's he doing?"

Sondra: "Well, for instance, this morning he said he had a vision that there is an asteroid strike going to hit someplace in the United States. He had me look up the e-mail address to the pope and he called the White House."

Vivian: "That's not good. He must have a lot of pressure on his chest."

Sondra: "It all started when he began writing up a new world policy that he said he had to do in order to change the world. And he's been reading the Bible nonstop. Supposedly he figured out different dates for the boss to come. He says he will be considered to be the Messiah. He states that the Bible speaks of stuff that will have to happen soon in the world."

Donald: "That's not good! I'll tell you what! We will call his brother Darrell and have him come over to the house, then we'll come over."

Sondra: "I'm scared right now for him. The other day he came in the house, coming from the farm with blood on his clothes. I asked him what happened. He said nothing really that he just spilled a little blood on himself."

Vivian: "Would you like me to watch the kids until later?"

Sondra: "That would be great, thanks!"

Sondra then headed out the door to go back to her house.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 92 took place back at Scott and Sondra's house. Scott was pacing frantically around the house. Sondra returned to the house without the kids. Scott's trying to figure out who he could contact to inform them about the asteroid strike. It was around 10:30 AM, April 24. His dad and brother entered house.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 92, take 1. Father and brother came to help Scott."

Donald: "We're here to help you, Scott!"

Donald and Darrell entered the kitchen.

Donald: "We're here to take you to the hospital!"

Scott: "I don't need to go! I need to get the word out to someone important because what I saw. The world may be coming to an end soon!"

Darrell: "What are you talking about?"

Donald: "I don't need to hear this! I've seen this before with my sister! I know what I'm talking about! It's not right to have thoughts like you do!"

Scott: "Just hear me out and listen to what I have to say."

Donald: "No! We need to get going now!"

Darrell: "Just let him speak for a minute!"

Scott looked at his wife.

Scott: "Why did you bring them over here, honey? Do you realize how important this is to get the word out to the people?"

Sondra teared up a little bit.

Sondra: "I was worried for you! Scared something bad might happen with you talking the way you are!"

Scott: "Have a seat around the table, you two!"

Scott showed them a picture that he drew up of the holy city.

Scott: "I had a vision that showed me what God's holy city looks like. No one has seen what God's holy city looks like, but the one who came from God. The chosen one! Also known as God's only son. It has to be me because I feel the spirits going through me. The Bible is showing me all kinds of things and what I have to do."

Donald: "That's not right! Come on! Let's go!"

Scott: "I know when the boss is coming according to my figures! The boss is coming in 2009, fourth month, ninth day.

Darrell: "How would you know that?"

Scott: "I used what is written in the Bible along with different numbers from the Bible and from what I know of how the holy city looks like, because I've seen it! I use the four powers."

Then Scott pointed to the drawing of the holy city where it's at.

Scott: "I used the 24 elders!"

Scott then pointed to the drawing again.

Scott: "I got the 1,260 days from the Bible. And then 666 which is man's number, which is also in the Bible."

Scott calculated it in front of them to show how he came up with it.

Scott: "You see, when you look at the calculator how it says BOSS9.360, which figures out to be 2009 April 9, 2:24 PM."

Darrell: "That doesn't necessarily mean anything!"

Scott: "It seems strange when I calculated the figures two different times that it scrambled the calculator memory. The calculator was then broken!"

There was a moment of silence.

Darrell: "That's strange."

Scott: "There is more! For instance, there was 1,290 days I added to that date of 2009 April 9, this equals to 2012 November 9. Or also known as 911! If you put the day before the month!"

Darrell: "What's that supposed to mean? 911 already happened."

Scott: "Well, according to the Mayan calendar, December 21, 2012, is considered the doomsday, our ending date of the world. That 2012 November 9 must be a distress date or stating something can change the ending of the world. I just haven't figured it out yet what I have to do. But I do know if we make it past 2012 November 9, there is a day set in the future with the calendar of calculations of 1,335 days to be figured in along with the seven years which is repeated many times in the Bible. I think that the seven years comes first. Which will give a date of 2019 November 9, at 2:24 PM. Maybe it's another test to be passed or maybe even an asteroid strike. And yet again if that that date holds true, maybe the last calculation will be the 1,335 days to say we will have peace on earth as one world with the date of 2023 July 24."

Darrell: "You and your numbers are all fictional. Just stuff that you make up! There's no proof behind them!"

Scott: "But there are so many things that add up for me to be the chosen one!"

Darrell: "Like what?"

Scott: "When Mom gave birth to me, she had a seizure that she experienced that caused her heart to stop for short time. You know my birthday is December 13! That's only 12 days before Christmas, 12 is a number seen multiple times in the Bible. You have 12 disciples for the Last Supper. You have 12 days of Christmas."

They have heard all they wanted to.

Darrell: "We should get going now!"

Scott grabbed his papers. Then he put them in a folder and also grabbed the Bible. He leaned over to his wife and gave her a hug and kiss.

Scott: "Honey, I'm sorry for having to do this. This must happen! Someone must know so they can do something about it."

Then his dad and brother with Scott walked out the door to get in his father's car.

Director Dean: "Cut! That's a wrap!"

Scene 93 took place driving to Mercy Hospital in Cedar Rapids. His father and brother thought Scott was delusional or losing it. Conversation continued.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 93, take 1. Family takes Scott to hospital in car."

Darrell: "So, Scott how long has this been occurring for? Or when did you start?"

Scott: "Forty days before Easter. Now, Dad, you can't say that there weren't miraculous signs in your life that can make you believe that this could be possible. For instance, what about the time when you had polio and you weren't supposed to walk again? Yet you did walk as if you were never affected by it."

Donald: "That's different! I do thank the Lord and my mom for how I got over polio. She wrapped hot towels on my whole body and legs three times a day for months on end."

Scott: "But it must've been destined for you to walk again. Otherwise you would've never have met Mom. Yet again, what about the time when you were in the army during the Korean War? You were going through basic training and ended up with food poisoning while marching in ranks on the last few days of your basic training. You spent a few days in the hospital, and when you came out, you had to start basic training all over again. You said if that would not have happened to you like it did, you might have died. You told me the whole unit you were in training with finished their basic training and then were sent to Korea. The unit was ambushed or something like that, and you said there were only a handful of survivors. You were touched again by being saved from not having to go with them. You are destined to live. God has a purpose for you here on earth."

Donald: "Not necessarily true, Scott. But the Lord was looking out for me, I feel."

Scott: "If the path is broken leading to me, for instance, if you would not have met Mom and had me, then this point in time would not occur. There would be no savior for the world to exist!"

Darrell: "Who is the savior you're talking about?"

Scott: "Me! I am what you call the second coming! Son of Man! Son of God! Chosen one! The Messiah! Jesus Christ and even the Antichrist, you could say!"

Darrell: "The Antichrist? That can't be good!"

Scott: "It's like this! If I don't do what the spirits are telling me to, I could fail God's test for mankind. In turn, that would make me the Antichrist. So do you see why now I have to do what I'm doing! To try and contact someone that the second coming is upon us!"

Donald: "Nonsense! It's all in your head! We have to get you help!"

Darrell: "You can't see that this is all in your head? You don't have any special powers, do you?"

Scott: "Not what I know of, but my powers may still be coming! I'm not sure if I'm meant to have powers! All I know is the spirits work through me and help guide me along the way! Along with the visions I see!"

Darrell: "Explain to me the visions that you see and how do you know if they're visions?"

Scott: "Well, it's like last night. I was reading revelations of the Bible when I saw this vision of an asteroid strike! As far as I know, it'll probably happen within the next four days. That's why I have to act fast to let someone know. This feeling inside of me tells me it's coming soon!"

Donald: "You need to let go of that. It's just in your head!"

Scott: "This wouldn't be happening to me if there wasn't a purpose behind it. I have been chosen! Probably before birth! Destined to be tried in front of the Lord! To see how my faith is to the Lord for mankind to continue or not to continue!"

Darrell: "I don't think God would place the whole world in jeopardy or the extinction of it just over one person."

Scott: "Well, I hope I don't have to be the one to do the final extinction of the people here on earth."

Donald: "You're still talking nonsense! We will have you taken care of shortly. We're almost at the

hospital. You need to be put on medicine.”

Scott: “I think you’re making a mistake by taking me to the hospital. I really need to get what I know to someone that can help us! Like the president!”

Darrell: “Maybe someone at the hospital can help you.”

Scott: “Look! There are signs all around me! We’re going to a hospital named Mercy! I’m at the mercy of the people for my actions! You could say I am crying mercy for help! But no one wants to help me!”

They pulled into the hospital parking lot, parked the car, and then went in.

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 94 took place in the emergency room of Mercy Hospital.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 94, take 1. First time Scott is in emergency room from episode.”

Emergency Room Doctor: “What are we being seen for here today?”

Donald: “I believe my son is having a mental breakdown.”

He looked at Scott.

Emergency Room Doctor: “What’s your name?”

Scott: “My name is Scott!”

Emergency Room Doctor: “Scott, can you tell me why your family is bringing you here today for?”

Scott: “They think I’m crazy! I had a vision last night where I saw an asteroid strike someplace here on earth. I believe it’s going to hit in the next four days and I need to get it out to someone important like the president or someone that can do something about it or listen to what I have to say.”

The emergency room doctor examined the pupils of Scott’s eyes with a light and took his hand and felt for lumps around the neck and armpits. The doctor also checked the skin for rash and any other abnormal tease.

Emergency Room Doctor: “Could you tell me, Scott, how long this has been occurring?”

Scott: “It started forty days before Easter.”

Doctor looked at Scott’s father then asked a question.

Emergency Room Doctor: “What are his symptoms why your son is here for today?”

Donald: “He says he’s Jesus Christ or the Messiah of the world, and the other day he cut himself to do a sacrifice to the Lord in some sort of grain offering.”

Emergency Room Doctor: “Has he had any prior episodes of this before that you know of?”

Donald: “No, this is the first of them as far as I know.”

Emergency Room Doctor: "Scott, have you drunk any alcohol recently?"

Scott: "Yes, last night I had three to four beers."

Emergency Room Doctor: "Do you smoke cigarettes?"

Scott: "Yes!"

Emergency Room Doctor: "How many cigarettes do you smoke?"

Scott: "About two packs a day!"

Emergency Room Doctor: "Have you taken any drugs recently?"

Scott: "I have smoked a little marijuana recently for about the last three weeks."

Emergency Room Doctor: "So you haven't taken any crystal meth, prescription pills, cocaine, or any other drugs?"

Scott: "No, about two years ago, I used cocaine though."

Emergency Room Doctor: "Do you feel any pressure in your head, or does anything bother you that you can think of or feel?"

Scott: "No! I'm telling you I feel fine, but I do need to get the information that I know of to somebody important! I'm telling you, I'm the Messiah! I have seen God's one and only holy city!"

Donald: "Can you tell me if he's okay and what needs to happen from here?"

Emergency Room Doctor: "I believe he'll be okay! He needs to be put on some medicine. I'll have to admit him for a few days. I believe he's suffering from bipolar symptoms at the moment and he's in a manic state."

Darrell: "So you say he'll be fine after he's put on medicine?"

Emergency Room Doctor: "Yes, that should be correct!"

He looked at Scott.

Emergency Room Doctor: "I'll need you to pee in a cup for a drug test, Scott!"

Scott: "Okay!"

Scott took the cup to the bathroom. Then he returned to the doctor with the sample. Scott's father and brother then left the hospital after the examination was complete. Another nurse escorted Scott to the psychiatry ward in the hospital.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 95 took place in the psychiatry ward at Mercy Hospital. After a couple hours being in the ward, it was time to eat. Scott grabbed his tray from the cart and sat down at a table where there was a guy in a

wheelchair sitting. Scott began a conversation with the gentleman.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 95, take 1. Scott talks to Angel Gabriel."

Scott: "Hi there, my name is Scott. Boy, have I had a rough day today. During the night last night, I had a vision of asteroid strikes to hit here on earth. I believe I've been put on this earth to save the people. I've been trying to contact somebody with the information that I have of the asteroid strikes, but nobody believes me. They think I'm crazy! I think I'm the chosen one to come forward with a new world order."

Gabriel: "Well, my name is Gabriel. I'm one of God's angels sent here to assist you and to help you on your journey! I'm just in this body temporarily to communicate with you. You have been selected before the earth was made to come forward and save the people."

Scott: "I just don't understand! I don't know all the facts! I read the Bible, and I have spirits coming in to me making me believe different things in my mind and also through the Bible that I read."

Gabriel: "You really don't need to understand at this moment. You have to stay true to God and follow everything that you believe is right. That's how you'll save the people!"

Scott: "But I'm locked up in the hospital! How can I save the people?"

Gabriel: "Your will and will be strong enough which there's no need for you to worry in the hospital, you're in God's hands!"

Scott: "When will the people have salvation? How am I supposed to do this to save the world?"

Gabriel: "In all due time, you'll do it! It may take a few years! You're doing it right now by addressing what you saw to the people. Well, you should go and get some rest now!"

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 96 took place in a room in the psychiatry ward of a legal court hearing in the alleged mental state of Scott.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 96, take 1. Legal court hearing for Scott in hospital."

Jones County Court-Appointed Representative: "We are brought here this twenty-eighth day of April 2006 at Mercy Hospital in Cedar Rapids, Iowa; 229.13 The Code in the Iowa District Court. In the matter of the seriousness of the mental state of Scott Leroy Chally. To decide whether he is seriously mentally ill, to pose judgment through the court for him to be contained in a mental facility, until he is released by the psychiatry evaluation team from Mercy Hospital for the state of Iowa deeming him to be safe for the public. Not to pose harm on himself or to the public that he may inflict. How does Scott plea?"

Scott's Attorney: "Scott pleads innocent, that he's not mentally ill."

County Attorney: "It states in his records that he has done bodily harm to himself by taking a razor blade and cutting his wrist. There is also evidence that Scott is not in his right frame of mind speaking that he is the Messiah of the world, stating that there are asteroids to hit the earth."

Scott: "I'm telling you, I have visions that point out asteroid strikes to hit the earth. And I saw God's one and only holy city which only the one that comes from God can see."

Representative for Scott: "If Scott is to be found guilty here today of being seriously mentally ill, since he's a veteran of the US army, and states he had hardships while in the military and he saw a psychiatrist, I feel he should be ordered to take custody by the Veterans Administration in Iowa City."

Jones County Court-Appointed Representative: "Scott, did you or did you not cut your wrist? You also state that you're the Messiah or Antichrist."

Scott: "That is correct. I need to get the information to somebody to look into the asteroid strike that's about to happen."

Jones County Court-Appointed Representative: "Does your lawyer or anyone else for the defendant have anything else to say that may help to prove Scott's innocence that he is not seriously mentally impaired?"

Scott's Attorney: "No! Not at this time!"

Jones County Court-Appointed Representative: "We have no other choice but to in-state Scott Leroy Chally for being seriously mentally ill to a psychiatry ward in Iowa City, Iowa, at the Veterans Hospital until he is found stable by the state."

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 99 took place in Scott's den at the house. It has been roughly one week from five months since Scott had his last vision of the asteroid strike. Scott was listening to music on the radio while reading out of the Bible. His wife had gone to Cedar Rapids shopping while Scott was home watching the kids. The kids were upstairs being entertained.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 99, take 1. Scott has vision of meteor strike to hit his house."

Scott (reading from Bible): "NIRV, Revelation 9:1: 'The fifth angel blew his trumpet. Then I saw a star that had fallen from the sky to the earth. The star was given the key to the tunnel leading down into the Abyss.'"

Scott saw a vision of a meteorite soon to hit his house. While sitting on the futon in his den down in the basement, Scott had a very strong vibe that came across him that he had to get his family to safety as soon as possible.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 100 took place upstairs from the basement. Scott went to gather his two kids.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 100, take 1. Scott gathers kids in a quickness to bring them to safety."

Scott was upstairs in the kitchen and then shouted out to the kids.

Scott: "Jimmy and Jason, we need to leave the house in a hurry! Come on, let's get going! Get your shoes on now! Come on!"

Jimmy: "What's going on, Dad? Why do we have to leave! I'm in the middle of playing a videogame."

Scott: "I'll explain later! We just need to get going now!"

Jason: "Is everything okay, Dad?"

Scott: "I hope it will be!"

Scott, Jimmy, and Jason headed out of the house and into the car within a minute. Scott then drove sporadically westward from the house. The first place he could think of to drop the kids off was a friend's house about five blocks from theirs. Scott got to the house but stayed in the vehicle and told the kids to go on in. The kids knocked on the door and the friend of the family answered. The kids went in the house. Scott then returned to his house.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 101 took place at Scott's house after Scott brought his kids to safety.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 101, take 1. The first judgment is complete."

Scott was out in the driveway looking up at the sky. The strong spiritual feeling that he had went away. He went into the house and got a glass of water from the sink. He went to go downstairs to his den. On the wall, there was a calendar. He looked at the calendar for a moment. He noticed the days on the calendar changing right in front of him. It was Saturday the nineteenth which had changed to Saturday, sixteenth of September. He was shocked to see this and amazed.

Then he looked down at his watch; it now read one o'clock when it was supposed to be three o'clock. He went downstairs and sat in his chair behind the desk listening to the radio. The radio announcer said it's at the top of the three o'clock hour. At that moment in time, Scott knew he had passed his first judgment from the Bible.

It spoke from Revelation 9:12 (NIRV): "The first terrible judgment is past. Two others are still coming."

A few more minutes had passed while sitting in the den when he heard a car pull up. Scott answered the door. It was two of his nephews, Otis and Otto.

Otis: "How's it going, Uncle Scott?"

Scott: "Not bad, now! But about fifteen minutes ago, I was pretty stressed. There was an asteroid that I saw in my vision or meteor heading for my house. I had to get the kids as soon as possible to safety. So I dropped them off at a friend's house. I returned to the house and I was looking at a calendar when the days had changed on it. I looked down at my watch. It was three o'clock and now it's one o'clock. What time do you have, Otis?"

Otis: "It's about fifteen minutes after one on my watch. You must be losing it, Uncle Scott. There's no way the time and date changed. We would know it for one! You feel okay?"

Scott: "I'm telling you it's true, it happened!"

Otto: "So what did the day change to?"

Scott: "It used to be nineteenth of September, but now it's the sixteenth. I even heard it on the radio where it just said a few minutes ago that we're at the top of the three o'clock hour."

Otis and Otto were laughing over what their uncle was talking about the date and time change. About a half hour later, Scott's wife, Sondra, came home from shopping. She went down to the den.

Sondra: "Honey, where are the kids?"

Scott: "I took them up the street to Tamera's place about an hour ago."

Sondra: "Why did you do that for?"

Scott: "I passed the first judgment in the Bible for the world from God! I saved our kids and our family will be saved for the future. I had a vision again! There was an asteroid headed toward the house, but I stopped it."

Sondra: "Please tell me you're not becoming manic again, are you? Well, are you going to get them?"

Scott: "No, I'm good now and I actually forgot about them since Otto and Otis came. I could if you like me to get the kids. But trust me, it was important for me to take and drop them off. I experienced the time and date changed in front of my eyes."

Sondra: "Do I have to contact the psychiatry doctor to let them know about this? Are you okay now? You probably scared the kids!"

Scott: "I didn't mean to scare them! I just had to react!"

Sondra: "Don't worry about picking them up, I'll get them."

Director Dean: "Cut! Good job."

Scene 104 took place at night of September 21 and before noon. Scott was sleeping in his bed.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 104, take 1. Scott hears boulders falling and syegh swinging at the ground."

Scott was sleeping in his bed. Then at 12:30 AM sharp on September 21, Scott woke up hearing a sound of heavy boulders hit the ground from his sleep. Scott went back to sleep, then again at 1:00 AM sharp, he heard a syegh swinging at the ground from his sleep. The next morning, Scott got up and went to work. While Scott was at work, Scott felt an immense tremendous feeling come across him that he may be tested again by God. Or the universal test for us to receive salvation here on earth. Scott was unsure of what to do.

He did remember Gabriel telling him, "If you're worried for something that you have no control over, place yourself in God's hand." So he went home after being at work for an hour. Later on that morning, he figured that the best way to handle this situation upon him with the immense spirits flowing through him was to turn himself into the hospital. Scott made it to the hospital just before 1:00 PM on September 21. Then the immense feeling that he had upon him had left.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 105 took place at the hospital. Scott was with God's angel Michael.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 105, take 1. Scott meets up with Michael at hospital."

Scott was in the waiting room at the psychiatry ward talking to Michael. Scott was addressing that he was the Messiah of the world to the individuals that were standing around in the room.

Michael: "Scott, so you believe that you're the Messiah or the chosen one? I've been tasked by God to talk to you. He let me know you would show up sometime here. If you want to ask me some questions, please do so. I may be able to answer them."

Scott: "So you're Michael the Archangel. I believe I'm the chosen one because I have seen God's one and only holy city."

Michael: "That may be very possibly true! You will know what you are by what it's written in the book for you. If this is the case, you need to hold true to God. You have to pass all the tests that are placed upon you. Do you understand?"

Scott: "I believe so! As far as I'm concerned, I'm unsure if I'm the Antichrist or the Christ. Sometimes I wonder with what I read in the Bible."

Michael: "Well, the Antichrist brings damnation to this world. And the Christ brings hope and salvation."

Scott: "But the Bible reads two different ways. Both good and bad are found in the writings."

Michael: "You will know, just like it's written in the Bible."

Scott: "So I'm both the Antichrist and the chosen one depending on how I passed the test of God to be true for the people? If I fail God's test, I will be considered the Antichrist bringing doom to over 4 billion people?"

Michael: "That sounds to be correct!"

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 110 took place at Scott's house. Scott noticed three newspapers from the last four weeks his family's been showing up again. He's sitting at the table with his wife, Sondra, discussing what he saw from the paper.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 110, take 1. Scott's family is in the paper every two weeks out of four weeks in a row."

Scott: "Honey, can you believe it? It's happening again!"

Sondra: "What's happening again, honey?"

Scott: "I'm looking at today's paper and one of the kids' pictures is in there again. That makes three times in the last month that the kids have been in the paper."

Sondra: "Interesting! Who is it this time? Let me see!"

Scott: "It's Jason at school."

Scott leaned over with the paper to show Sondra.

Sondra: "Wow! I'll be darned! It is!"

Scott: "It's a picture of Jason in his class."

Sondra: "I believe it was Jimmy the first week of October. He showed up in science class having a photo taken. And Jimmy was also in the middle of the month for pep rally that he was in."

Scott: "If you ask me, I must be passing the tests for the world when our kids are showing up in the

paper.”

Sondra: “That doesn’t really mean anything, honey. You just happened to believe out of six and a half billion people in the world that you’re the Messiah! I highly doubt it! It’s just coincidence.”

Scott: “Someday you’ll see!”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 113 took place at the hospital waiting room and emergency room after a vision of an asteroid strike came to the mind of Scott for the third time. Scott left the house around eight thirty at night on January 4, and he arrived at Mercy Hospital by 9:30 PM.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 113, take 1. Mercy Hospital, the night of January 4.”

December 29, 2006, Saddam Hussein was put to death by hanging; 3 ½ days later, Scott had immense spirits and vibes going through his body. It wasn’t until January 4 when Scott had seen in his mind an asteroid strike for the third time to hit some place on earth. Scott figured the best thing to do was to be put in God’s hands and go back to the hospital. Scott entered the waiting room at the hospital by 9:30 PM. He went to the receptionist at the counter.

Scott: “Ma’am, I would like to be admitted into the psychiatry ward tonight as soon as possible.”

Mercy Waiting Room Receptionist: “Sir, you have to have a seat. It may take a few minutes.”

Scott: “Ma’am, you don’t realize how important this is for me to get checked in right away. So if you could please hurry, I have to be checked in before ten o’clock.”

Mercy Waiting Room Receptionist: “Sir, there are about five people in front of you, and it may take a few minutes. You just have to be patient and wait!”

Scott: “Ma’am, it’s going to be hard to believe, but I’m the chosen one or the Messiah! The world counts on me to pass all the tests! I feel I have to be put into the hospital right away and be signed in by 10:00 PM. Can you do this?”

Scott was pacing around the waiting room, with the immense feeling getting stronger and stronger as it’s getting closer and closer to ten o’clock. Then Scott saw and heard the receptionist speaking to another receptionist then pointed at Scott with a little chuckle and laugh.

Scott raised his voice in the waiting room.

Scott: “Do you think this is funny? I’m telling you the world is at stake right now. Do you want to be responsible for ending the world and 4 billion people?”

Mercy Waiting Room Receptionist: “Sir, you need to keep your voice down! You’ll be seen when we have the first available chance!”

They finally brought Scott into the emergency room. It’s 9:58 PM. There was a doctor who was beginning to ask Scott some questions. A nurse was also in the emergency room.

Mercy Emergency Room Doctor: “Sir, you say you want to be admitted to the psychiatry ward tonight far as I can see from the receptionist notes?”

Scott: “Yes, but first off, I’m running out of time! I’ve got less than two minutes to get signed into the hospital or showing that I’m here. Can you at least write down on a piece of paper my name, Scott Chally, the time, and then sign it? Someone please?”

Mercy Nurse: “I will!”

She wrote Scott’s name, the time, date, location, and signed it on a napkin.

Mercy Nurse: “There you go.”

Scott: “That was less than fifteen seconds according to my watch before it would’ve been too late. Thank you!”

Scott looked at the napkin where she wrote her signature and time. The time said ten o’clock.

Scott was then admitted into the hospital after about fifteen to twenty minutes of questioning. He was then escorted up to the psychiatry ward. He was given a room with a bathroom to rest in. Scott noticed there’s a huge digital clock on the wall in front of the bed.

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 114 took place at Mercy Hospital in the psychiatry room just after 10:00 PM. Scott remembered something that he saw from the Bible about the scroll. He found the section in the Bible of the scroll and read it.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 114, take 1. The angel and the little scroll.”

Narration of Scott: “I was finished in the emergency room. I was now in my room with a bathroom. While in my room, I felt there was more I had to do! Then I remember reading from Revelation that stated something about a scroll. This is how it reads. NIRV, Revelation 10:1–11: “Then I saw another mighty angel coming down from heaven. He was wearing a cloud like a robe. There was a rainbow above his head. His face was like the sun. His legs were like pillars of fire. He was holding a little scroll. It was lying open in his hand. The angel put his right foot on the sea and his left foot on the land. Then he gave a loud shout like a roar of a lion. When he shouted, the voices of the seven thunders spoke. When they had spoken, I was getting ready to write. But I heard a voice from heaven say, “Seal of what the seven thunders have said. Do not write it down.” Then the angel I had seen standing on the sea and on the land raised his right hand to heaven. He made a promise in the name of the one who lives forever and ever. He took an oath in the name of the one who created the sky, earth and sea and all that is in them. He said, “there will be no more waiting! But in the days when the seventh Angel is ready to blow his trumpet, the last part of God’s plan will be carried out. God told all this to the prophets who served him long ago.” The voice I had heard from heaven spoke to me again. It said, “Go and take the scroll from the angel standing on the sea and on the land. It is lying open in his hand.” I went to the angel and asked him to give me the little scroll. He said to me, “Take it and eat it. It will become sour in your stomach. But in your mouth it will taste like sweet honey.” I took the little scroll from the angel’s hand and ate it. In my mouth it tasted as sweet as honey. But when I had eaten it, it became sour in my stomach. then I was told, “You must prophesy again about many peoples, nations, languages, and Kings.” After reading this again, I felt the urge that I should eat the napkin to prove I was signed in by the staff of the hospital in the sight of God’s eyes. This was another test placed upon me where I held the seal or scroll. I crumbled the napkin up and placed it in my mouth. It took a few minutes, but then I swallowed it. I felt once again at rest knowing I had completed and received a task for the test of salvation. After that, I had laid down and went to sleep. The next day, I felt calm and relaxed. I felt the night prior if I had failed the test within twelve hours, there would be an asteroid strike. I felt relaxed and the hospital released me a little bit after one o’clock where I went home.”

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 115 took place at home then on the road heading to Cedar Rapids on January 5 just after five o'clock. Scott felt the immense spirits coming through his body again. Scott had mentioned to his wife. He believed he may have made a mistake leaving the hospital early. Scott saw a vision of the asteroid again.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 115, take 1. Scott feels he's made a mistake."

Narration of Scott: "I get in my car and head out to Mercy Hospital in Cedar Rapids. I had seen the vision of an asteroid to strike on this day around 5:00 PM. I felt like I had messed up leaving the hospital earlier in the day. I felt it wasn't time for me to leave the hospital yet. I felt I had limited time to get to the hospital again. But I wasn't going to speed. As I was getting closer about twenty minutes out while listening to the radio, there was one song after another in a row speaking to me about the world and what was happening to me. This was given me subliminal messages that I may have failed the test that was placed upon me for the world. That it may soon be coming to an end because of my mistake. The songs that I heard were from REM, 'It's the End of the World As We Know It'; John Mayer, 'Waiting on the World to Change'; Nickelback, 'If Everyone Cared'; My Chemical Romance, 'The Black Parade'; and Stone Sour, 'I'm Looking at You through the Glass.' There were some other songs that were in relation. While listening to the songs, I was starting to have a serious emotional breakdown. I was crying like I've never cried before, thinking I have failed the test while driving down Mount Vernon road heading toward the hospital. The sun was setting in the evening and was blaring at me through the windshield. I had made it to the hospital prior to 6:00 PM."

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 116 took place at Mercy Hospital in the psychiatry ward at the office just prior to leaving.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 116, take 1. Scott had passed the test in God's eyes."

Narration of Scott: "I was feeling good after the night rest in the hospital. It was around noon on January 6, 2007. I was by the desk or office when I was contacted by a nurse and a doctor."

Inpatient Doctor: "Scott, how are you feeling today?"

Scott: "I'm actually feeling pretty good. I was scared yesterday that I may have failed the test for the world. Prior to coming here in the vision, I had seen and felt like an asteroid was going to hit within twelve hours."

Inpatient Doctor: "Well, you must've passed it! The asteroid didn't hit!"

Scott: "Yes, I know. I feel relieved!"

Inpatient Doctor: "Well, if you're willing to leave, I'll sign off and say you're good to go."

Scott: "That'll work!"

Inpatient Nurse: "Well, Scott, you can come over to me. Your information band on your wrist you won't need. Let me cut it off!"

The nurse then took a scissors and cut the information bracelet off Scott's wrist.

Inpatient Nurse: "Now you're good to go!"

Scott: “Thanks!”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 117 took place at home down in the den. It’s now Sunday, January 7.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 117, take 1. Daniel in the lion’s den.”

Narration of Scott: “It’s now Sunday, January 7. I am sitting down in my den reading passages from the Bible. Like usual, the passages just seem to stick out for me, at least the important ones. It’s getting later at night when I have this feeling that I have to do something. Here is what I read from the Bible. NIRV, Psalms 118:21–25: ‘LORD, I will give thanks to you, because you answer me. You have saved me. The stone the builders didn’t accept has become the most important stone of all. The LORD has done it. It is wonderful in our eyes. The LORD has done it on this day. Let us be joyful and glad in it. LORD, save us. LORD, give us success.’ NIRV, Psalms 95:1: ‘Come, let us sing joy to the LORD. Let us give a loud shout to the rock who saves us.’ NIRV, Isaiah 28:16: ‘So the LORD and King speaks. He says, “look! I am laying a stone in Zion. It is a stone that has been tested. Is the most important stone for a firm foundation. The one who trust in the stone will never be shaken.”’ NIRV, Zachariah 3:9: ‘Look at the stone I have put in front of Joshua! There are seven eyes on that one stone. I will carve a message on it, “says the Lord rules overall. And I will remove the sins of this land in one day.”’ I knew I had to do something with a stone or rock. I remember while growing up on the farm many years earlier, there was this one particular stone. I remember taking it from the field. Then it went to a rock pile on the farm. From the rock pile, it was picked to go around our house to be used as a decoration of an eave spout. Later my sister had taken it to her house to decorate her flower bed. When she moved, she gave the rock to me if I wanted it. I had it for a few years and I was always curious about the strange rock. To me it looked like it had seen a lot of heat. I thought it may be a meteorite. So I chipped off couple pieces of the rock then sent the pieces to a couple of museums to see if it was. The museums had contacted me to say that it was not. I can’t remember what kind of rock it was. But the museums I sent it to thought there was nothing special about it. I had the rock sitting down in my basement in the back room. This rock must’ve weighed about fifty to sixty pounds. I was reading from the Bible. What caught my mind or eye was from Daniel when he was thrown into the lion’s den, it states, NIRV, Daniel 6:17: ‘A stone was brought and placed over the opening of the den. The king sealed it with his own special ring. He also sealed it with the rings of his nobles. Then nothing could be done to help Daniel.’ Something told me I should take a piece of this rock and place it above the door leading to my den. So I had the stone above the door while I was reading different passages from the Bible that night. I believed that the stone would be pointed out by God and his angels. I also believe the stone would have special power from the heavens. I wasn’t sure that night, but I would use the stone to help me in saving the world. I had a great night of sleep and started out the next morning, January 8, for a nine o’clock psychiatry appointment in Iowa City.”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 118 took place at the house in the morning prior to Scott’s psychiatry appointment.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 118, take 1. The special stone.”

The kids got off the school fine. Scott took a shower and got dressed. Scott grabbed his backpack with the papers that he had started with from the beginning of this whole episode he had been dealing with. Scott was just about to go out the door when he felt this feeling he should take the stone that he had placed over the door of den from the night before. They had left by eight o’clock. Sondra was driving the car.

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 119 took place in the car driving to Iowa City.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 119, take 1. The placement of the special stone."

Sondra was driving the car with Scott in the passenger seat. About halfway to the hospital for his appointment, Scott then was fumbling through his backpack. When he came across a survey for the hospital to fill out to show how you felt about your stay or your service you have received there, Scott felt he should fill the survey out. But instead of using Scott's name, he used Jesus Christ's name.

Sondra: "What are you doing, honey?"

Scott: "I found the survey from the hospital in my backpack. I feel something telling me to fill it out."

Sondra: "Well, you have time to fill the survey out. That is if you want!"

Scott: "You know what, I think I will."

Sondra: "So are you going to tell them how you been treated?"

Scott: "Yes, I am, but I think I'll do it in the name of Jesus Christ."

Sondra laughed a little.

Sondra: "You think they'll take you serious if you fill it out in Jesus Christ's name?"

Scott: "Well, they'll have to because that's who I am."

Sondra: "There is no proof that you're Jesus Christ. The doctor's say it's all in your head. That's why you're diagnosed with bipolar."

Scott: "Well, that's what I'm going to do anyhow! They ask what you think about the service you received as a patient on a scale from 1 to 5. I think I'll fill that one out with a 4."

Sondra: "Just because the staff that takes care of you doesn't believe you, don't be giving them a bad rating!"

Scott: "I understand! I'll be fair!"

Scott spent about ten minutes filling the questionnaire out.

Sondra: "Well, we're almost to Iowa City."

Scott: "I'm done filling the questionnaire out. Something tells me we need to send it off in the mail right now."

Sondra: "Does it need a postal stamp?"

Scott: "No, it has prepaid postage on it."

Sondra pulled by the side of the road coming through Iowa City where she saw a mail deposit box.

Sondra: "There is a mailbox over there where you can put it in."

Scott: "No, something tells me we got to mail it in a residential mailbox of a house."

Sondra was going to turn into the hospital entrance.

Scott: "Honey, you won't believe it, but I'm having those visions again. Something telling me we can't go to the hospital yet. Don't turn! Don't turn!"

Sondra: "We have to go now or otherwise you're going to be late."

Sondra continued to drive straight.

Scott: "I'll tell you when to turn and what to do, just trust me on this! It's very important! It's a matter of life and death for the world! I can feel and see these visions! They came on super strong all of sudden!"

Sondra: "So where are we going to go then?"

Scott: "Just go straight a little until we get to Coralville."

They drove about a mile and a half.

Scott: "Take a right now, honey!"

Sondra took right.

Scott: "Go straight about six blocks and then hang a left."

Sondra went as Scott was telling her to do.

Scott: "I can see the subdivision! We have to go in there!"

Sondra: "Are you sure you know where you're going?"

Scott: "Yes, just trust me. Hang a right in here."

Sondra: "This looks like a new housing edition."

Scott: "There is the house! That's where we got to put it, pull up to the mailbox!"

Sondra: "You know it's illegal to mess with somebody else's mail."

Scott: "I'm not messing with their mail. I'm just leaving a letter in their mailbox and going to put up the red flag."

Scott got out of the car and walked up to the mailbox and raised the red flag on the side then put the letter in. Then Scott got back in the car.

Sondra: "Are we done now? Can we go back to the hospital?"

Scott: "Yes, we're done now! We can go back!"

Sondra: "Good! We are going to be about a half hour late now."

Scott and Sondra started heading back to the hospital. Then all of a sudden, Scott felt this really immense power entering him with visions like never before.

Scott: "We can't go back to the hospital yet. We have to go south of Iowa City. I can feel it! I see these visions and they are telling me to go south!"

Sondra: "You're starting to scare me, Scott. Maybe we should just go home."

Scott: "No, we can't! Trust me, we can't! We can't! Just continue south!"

Sondra: "How far south do we have to go?"

Scott: "I'm not sure! All I know is we have to go south. I'll let you know."

Scott and Sondra headed south of Iowa City on a two-lane blacktop county road for about thirty minutes.

Scott: "These visions are really strong! It tells me or I see like a bunch of corn bins in the middle of nowhere. When we get to them, that's where we got to go."

Sondra: "After we find them, then what do we have to do?"

Scott: "I knew there was a reason why I had to bring the stone, but at the time, I didn't know. We have to place the stone by the corn bins."

Sondra: "Why is that? What's that stone going to do?"

Scott: "Well, now it comes to me and it's clear!"

Sondra: "What's clear?"

Scott: "Give me a second, I'll show you! I will read it to you!"

Scott grabbed the Bible and fumbled through the pages.

Scott: "Here it is, let me read it! It's from Revelation. NIRV, Revelation 11:13: 'At that very hour there was a powerful earthquake. A tenth of the city crumbled and fell. In the earthquake, 7,000 people were killed. Those who lived through it were terrified. They gave glory to the God of heaven.' I'm redirecting the asteroid strike from Iowa City to south of Iowa City so no one will get killed, or at least not as many from the asteroid that's about to hit."

Sondra: "What asteroid?"

Scott: "I believe it's called Woodworm, the one that's supposed to tunnel to the abyss! It's supposed to hit a city of 70,000 people and kill 10 percent of all in the city."

Sondra: "Now you're really scaring me! I think you're reading into the Bible too much."

Scott: "Just trust me; I know what I'm talking about. The visions and vibes are coming to me really strong, we must be close. Wait, right there at that intersection are the corn bins. The big corn bins."

Sondra pulled in a gravel parking lot by the corn bins. There were no buildings or houses around. Scott tossed the stone out the window onto the gravel parking lot.

Sondra: "Are we good now?"

Scott: "I just saw a vision of an asteroid coming right now. It's headed our way! I planted the seed and now it's going to hit. We need to get out of here fast! Head west, honey!"

Sondra: "I just want to go home and you're scaring me! I'll head west but I'm not going to speed."

Scott: "It's coming on really strong! I'm not sure how long we got until it's going to hit."

Sondra: "We're out in the middle of nowhere. I haven't seen a car in the last five minutes, plus we're low on fuel!"

Scott: "We'll be okay, trust me! But you need to pick up the pace. Go ahead and do sixty-five miles an hour."

Sondra: "I do sixty-two miles an hour and that's all."

Scott: "I'm telling you, honey, we are cutting it close. We need to speed up!"

Sondra: "I don't even know where we're at. We are nowhere near a gas station and we are on empty. We've been driving for like twenty minutes and there's hardly no houses around."

Scott: "Okay, you see that farmhouse there? Pull in there and turn the car off. Let's go behind that retention wall that's cut out in the dirt, it'll protect us from the strike."

Sondra: "There could be somebody in that house wondering what we're doing out here! We shouldn't be doing this!"

Scott: "Trust me! We will be okay, but we need to stay close to this wall, that'll protect us from the direction of the hit."

Scott and Sondra sat by the wall freezing.

Sondra: "I'm going back to the car!"

Sondra's back in the car, where Scott followed.

Scott: "Honey, I need you to come by the wall! It's not safe yet!"

Sondra: "No, it's cold out there and I am freezing!"

Scott: "Honey, this could be a test from God! If you truly believe and love me, please come out of the car with me now! Please come sit with me by the wall!"

Sondra: "I don't know why I'm doing this, but I'll sit with you!"

Sondra got out of the car and went by the wall with Scott.

About fifteen minutes had passed sitting in the cold again and Scott felt that the pressure that he was experiencing, the visions, vibes, and spirits had left him.

Scott: "They went away, honey! The asteroid must not be coming right now. I don't feel it anymore! It's safe to go home now!"

Sondra: "Thank goodness! You know you're crazy and you make me feel embarrassed sitting in front of some person's house scrunched down along a wall plus I'm very cold."

Scott: "I know what you're talking about, honey. I'm sorry I had to do this to you today, but I thank you. I do feel a little silly, but I have to go with my instincts."

Sondra: "Now we have to worry about the gas. We have been on empty for the last ten miles. I'm not sure how far we have to go until we find a town!"

They got in the car and started to drive west.

Scott: "We shouldn't be too far from Amana."

Sondra: "Well, I hope so, and I hope we don't run out a gas!"

They drove another ten miles then found a gas station.

Scott: "See, I told you would be okay with gas. You have to trust me sometimes."

Sondra: "We just got lucky, is all!"

Scott and Sondra then headed home to Monticello. They had made it back just before four o'clock.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 120 took place back at the house in Monticello in the kitchen. Scott and Sondra had just made it back from a long journey that day with the displacement of the stone.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 120, take 1. Psychiatrist wants to see Scott."

Sondra and Scott were exhausted from the trip that they had during the day. Sondra checked the answering machine and there was a message on the machine from the psychiatrist at the VA asking to call her as soon as possible when they get home. It was in reference to Scott's appointment. So Sondra called the psychiatrist at her number.

Psychiatrist Holly: "Iowa City VA Psychiatry, Holly speaking."

Sondra: "Yes, this is Sondra Chally, Scott Chally's wife, returning your call for today why Scott missed the appointment."

Psychiatrist Holly: "Yes, Mrs. Chally! I'm glad you called! Scott was scheduled for nine o'clock visit this morning and it's important that he doesn't miss his appointments. May I ask why he missed his appointment?"

Sondra: "I can tell you this, we were up in Iowa City at nine o'clock this morning, but Scott had a vision supposedly and we had to run other places to complete what he calls is a mission from God. We just got back to the house about thirty minutes ago. We're exhausted from the travel on the trip that we did today. Can Scott reschedule the appointment for another day?"

Psychiatrist Holly: "I think it's important for him to come up to the VA yet today to be seen. May I ask what he did that caused you to miss his appointment today?"

Sondra: "Well, it started out normal and fine, but Scott was filling out a questionnaire or survey for the hospital. He wrote it in the terms that he was Jesus Christ. Right before we were to pull into the hospital parking lot, Scott stated he had a vision and directed me to continue straight. So I listened to him. We mailed the letter at somebody's residential house in their mailbox. Then once again he stated he saw an asteroid or something that triggered him to tell me to go south of Iowa City. So we drove south of Iowa City about thirty miles, maybe forty-five miles to where he placed a stone by some corn bins out in the middle of nowhere. He stated the stone has special powers. After that, he stated that the vision and the feeling were coming on super strong, which it was going through him. So we had to head west before it strikes. So we drove another half hour going west when we stopped at a farmhouse that had a containment wall. We sat by the wall for about half an hour waiting for the asteroid to hit. So it didn't hit and his manic episode that he had went away. Then we headed back home and I got your message from the answering machine and called."

Psychiatrist Holly: "Well, it sounds like you both had a pretty long day. I definitely would like to see him tonight. Thanks for filling me in with the details. Is he nearby so I can talk to him on the phone?"

Sondra: "Yes, give me a second and I'll get him!"

Sondra called for Scott to come to the phone.

Scott: "This is Scott!"

Psychiatrist Holly: "Scott, this sounds like you had a very long day today. You missed your appointment. You can't be doing that. But I would like you to come back up to Iowa City tonight. I'll stay until you get here!"

Scott: "Can I come up to the appointment another day? Like tomorrow? I'm sorry I missed it today, but I had to do other things."

Psychiatrist Holly: "No, I really need to see you tonight."

Scott: "What time do you get off work? Tomorrow will work better for me."

Psychiatrist Holly: "I get off at five, but I'll stay later to see you."

Scott then suddenly had a vision of a time and something inside him felt he had to get there by five o'clock to the appointment to see Holly.

Scott: "It's already a few minutes after four o'clock. I'll be cutting it close to make it there by five."

Psychiatrist Holly: "It's okay to come a few minutes after five. I just want you to be safe."

Scott: "I'll see you by five, thanks."

Scott hung up the phone.

Sondra: "Now, honey, you don't have to rush, you have time to get there. Are you going to be okay?"

Scott: "I'll just have to make it by five. I'll be fine! Love you, honey!"

Then with quickness, he grabbed the Bible and backpack with information in it. He gave Sondra a hug and kiss on the cheek. Then he headed out the door and took off in the vehicle.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 121 took place going to the psychiatry clinic at the VA in Iowa City.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 121, take 1. Pontius Pilate."

Scott left the house in his vehicle. Scott was in a major hurry because he knew he would be close making the time by five o'clock. He traveled through town doing about fifty miles an hour on the side streets. Scott then made it to the four-lane highway, which was fifty-five miles an hour. Scott traveled on the highway doing over a hundred miles an hour. He then turned off on Highway 1 going to Iowa City, which was a two-lane road, and he sped again doing about eighty-five to ninety miles an hour.

He's passing cars whenever he got a chance to. He's about four miles from Mount Vernon, when he passed a Linn County sheriff from the opposite way. The officer turned his lights on and then turned around. Scott knew he was in trouble at that moment. He wondered if he should continue to speed and drive fast. He decided to pull off to the side of the road. The officer pulled up behind him. The officer then walked up to the driver's door of Scott's vehicle. Scott turned the radio down and opened the window.

Officer Kelly: "Sir, do you know why I pulled you over?"

Scott: "Yes, I was speeding!"

Officer Kelly: "You know how fast you were going?"

Scott: "Yes, I was doing about eighty-five to ninety miles an hour."

Officer Kelly: "May I ask you why you're traveling so fast?"

Scott: "You see, I'm in this universal test in order to save the world that I have to do for God and the people! I have to make it to Iowa City at the Veterans psychiatry clinic by five o'clock. If I don't, the world could be destroyed by three waves of asteroids. I'm sorry, I was speeding, but it's very important what I'm doing."

Officer Kelly: "Well, I need to see your proof of insurance, registration, and driver's license please."

Scott handed the officer the necessary documentation.

"Well, I'll be back in a few moments."

The officer then returned to his vehicle.

Scott was nervously waiting in his vehicle. About ten minutes later, the officer returned to his side window.

Officer Kelly: "Where you going again, sir?"

Scott: "I'm going to the VA psychiatry clinic in Iowa City! It's really important for me to get there on time! It's really crucial for the existence of mankind."

Officer Kelly: “Well, I wrote you for a speeding citation today for twenty miles over the speed limit. I expect you to travel at the speed limit on the rest of your journey there. Do you understand? You need to go straight there.”

Scott: “Yes, I understand! I’ll go straight there traveling the speed limit.”

Officer Kelly: “Well, I need you to sign this.”

Officer Kelly lifted the clipboard through the window and handed Scott an ink pen with the name Pilot on the side of it. At that moment in time, Scott’s mind flashed and then remembered reading in the Bible about Jesus Christ being crucified by Pontius Pilate. Scott then signed the ticket and handed the clipboard and pen back to the officer. The officer gave Scott a copy of the ticket.

Officer Kelly: “Drive safely and have a good day, sir.”

Scott: “I will! Thanks, sir!”

Scott then left from where he was pulled over. He drove the speed limit for the rest of the way. The immense feeling wasn’t on his chest anymore, but he wondered if he was okay in God’s eyes since he received a ticket. He made it to Iowa City about fifteen minutes late.

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 123 took place in the psychiatry ward at the Veterans Hospital.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 123, take 1. The escape.”

Scott arrived at the ward approximately 6:00 PM when he entered. They processed him in and gave him a room. Scott had to change cloths to a hospital shirt and pants. He had to turn over his wallet, watch, cigarettes, lighter, and keys for them to hold. He was able to keep \$20–\$30 on him to buy snacks. Also he was able to keep his Bible and notes from the backpack. About seven o’clock, he had a talk with one of the resident nurses.

Scott: “Trevor, what a day I have had today. You wouldn’t believe what happened to me today. It started out coming up here to Iowa City for an appointment, but you could say I got sidetracked due to the fact my visions telling me what to do to bring peace here on earth with some kind of universal test that I’m going through for becoming the savior of the world.”

Trevor: “So you think you’re the savior of the world?”

Scott: “If I’m not the savior, I’ll be the Antichrist bringing doom to all mankind! That is if I fail the test placed upon me!”

Trevor: “Well, the Antichrist can’t be good! Let’s hope not!”

Scott: “It started out with filling out a survey for the hospital that I mailed. Then I had a vision of an asteroid strike to hit the earth and I placed a stone with a special seal to it so it doesn’t hit Iowa City. Last of all, I was pressured to come up to the hospital tonight when I had another vision that caused me to speed. I received a ticket of twenty miles over the limit. See it?”

Scott took the ticket out and showed Trevor. But at the moment before he handed over to him, Scott happened to look at the location where the ticket was from.

Scott: "Wow! I didn't realize this! The ticket happened on Highway 1 and Butcher Road. Doesn't that seem strange to have a ticket say Butcher Road?"

Trevor: "No, it doesn't seem strange to me."

Scott: "Well, when I signed the ticket, I had a flash in my mind, and when I saw a pen that said Pilot, all I could think of is Pontius Pilate crucified Jesus Christ on the cross."

Trevor: "Now that I can see. You got crucified for a speeding ticket."

Trevor chuckled.

Scott: "All I know is I had a hard long day."

Trevor: "Well, there's no need to worry about it anymore. You're in a safe spot now, you're protected!"

Scott then went to a dayroom and started watching TV to pass the time. About 8:00 PM, he went to the telephone booth in the ward. He had made a call to his wife to let her know he was safe and that everything was going okay.

Sondra: "Hello?"

Scott: "Hi, honey, how are you doing?"

Sondra: "I'm doing fine! Do you feel better now?"

Scott: "Yeah, I feel rested and relaxed from the long day I had or we had."

Sondra: "Did you make it up there okay by five o'clock?"

Scott: "No, I didn't make it by five. I was speeding going up here. I probably would have made it, but I got pulled over by a sheriff. He wrote me a ticket for twenty miles over the speed limit. But I had a flash when I went to sign the ticket. The pen that he used said Pilot, and all I could think of Jesus was sentenced to death by Pontius Pilate. Isn't that strange?"

Sondra: "Well, you're safe now and you're being taken care of, so everything should be fine."

Scott: "Sometimes I'm really scared! I wonder if I'm going to pass all the tests that I'm put through!"

Sondra: "You say, if you believe, you can do just about anything. Have faith in God! He is on your side!"

Scott: "I suppose you're right, sweetie, I do believe. Well, I'm going let you go for now. I'll call you again tomorrow!"

Sondra: "Okay, honey, I love you! You should just get some rest now and forget about what happened today."

Scott: "I suppose you're right, I will. Don't worry about me, I'll be fine."

Sondra: "Okay, bye!"

Scott hung up the phone with his wife. Scott began to leave the telephone booth. There was a person standing outside of it.

Person: "We are all going to die."

Narration of Scott: "All of a sudden, I saw a vision of an asteroid or a large meteorite hitting the hospital. Something my mind's eye made it very clear to me, if I don't get out of the hospital, soon it would be the end of me. I had put two and two together, thinking about what had happened earlier in the day and what had happened to me while getting to the hospital. Remembering signing the speeding ticket. Have the flash of Pontius Pilate when looking at Pilot, that was the name of the ink pen. The ticket had said 'Butcher Road' and 'Highway 1' on it. And then while leaving the booth, with this person saying, 'We are all going to die.' So I figured this must be the sentencing of Jesus Christ or me. I felt whatever I do in the next hour would decide the fate whether I survive or die for the world. I felt this was another test for the salvation of mankind. It's like I knew I had an option. I had a choice to make! But I was limited on time to make it happen. By now it must've been about 8:30 PM. While I was looking at the clock, something told me I had to get out of the hospital and away from it by nine o'clock. I did not nor have I ever heard any voices. It was just an inner feeling that came across me. I knew I would have to find a way to get out of the hospital in a hurry. I was thinking of all kinds of ways that could possibly work. The time was clicking away, and I had to act fast but not be noticed. I thought about trying to get the keys and walked out if that was possible. There were four or five staff members that watched over the patients. One was usually at the office which protruded out from or into the hallway so they can watch the exits. Another one usually walks back and forth from one dayroom to the other. I was calm trying not to show that there was anything wrong. I saw that someone had asked for Trevor to get them a snack and a drink from the refrigerator in the dayroom kitchen. It was in the back dayroom on the floor. I remember Trevor had keys hanging from his waist on a zip string with a quick-attach ring. I figured maybe this is the opportunity I needed. But I must act quickly and undetected if I go for his keys. We followed him to the dayroom where there was another door that led into the kitchen. I watched as he opened the door. The keys were on his left hip. He had opened the refrigerator."

Trevor: "Ken, what would you like to drink? Water, apple juice, orange juice, or grape juice?"

Ken: "Apple juice will be fine."

Trevor: "What would you like, Scott?"

Scott: "Juice or water would be fine."

Narration of Scott: "I pointed out something that was in the back of the fridge. He bent over to look, and at that time, I tried to make my move, where I reached for his keys. I had a hold of them and went to try to remove them from the quick-attach ring without him noticing. He suddenly looked back my way at which time I quickly removed my hand from his keys and said juice or water would be fine. He grabbed a bottle of water for me, I thought that was close. He almost caught me reaching for his keys. I was disappointed on the failed attempt though. We walked out of the room. We went to the other dayroom. There were some people watching TV. I had taken notice to what they were watching. It was a show on asteroids or meteor strikes that have hit here on earth. That really made me feel I had to do something and quickly. All the signs were falling into place. It was like I felt the spirits were helping me and let me know there is a way out. I just have to believe! Then it dawned on me. I thought what if I ask for some medicine for anxiety. I went to another nurse and asked if she could get me something for it. She said, 'Sure, no problem.' I followed her to the pharmaceutical room. She opened the door and went inside. I noticed she did not have her keys on a ring that was attached to her. Then I saw her put her keys in her left pocket. The shirt was a white thin hospital shirt with pockets. She put my medicine into a little cup and set it on top of the door. This was a split door with a shelf on it. I started a pleasant conversation with her."

Scott: "How's it going today anyhow, Betty?"

Betty: "I'll be doing better at ten o'clock because that's when I get off work."

Scott: "I've had a really stressful day today! I can't wait until I go to sleep tonight, but I have a lot of anxieties and I'm hoping that the medicine will help me out so I can sleep."

Betty: "I'm sure it'll help!"

Narration of Scott: "I had set my bottle of water on the split door. I then bumped my bottle of water which it fell just inside the door. She reached down to pick up the bottle. Then at the same time I reached in and grabbed the keys out of her left pocket and hurried back to the other side of the counter. She couldn't see what I had in my hand nor did she feel me take the keys out of her pocket."

Scott: "I'm sorry I bumped the bottle of water."

Betty: "That's okay! There is no worry, no harm came about."

Scott: "Well, thanks, Betty!"

Narration of Scott: "I took the two pills in the cup and drank a little water. She was busy doing other things inside the room, so I took off. It was getting fairly close to nine o'clock by now. I knew I had to get out of the mental ward before she notices her keys were gone. I looked around and I didn't see Trevor. There was a nurse in the dayroom where the people were watching the TV. I noticed the nurse from the protruding window in the hallway where it looked like she was busy doing paperwork. I walked to the exit where you enter the ward near the elevators. I was looking at the key ring. There must've been at least ten to fifteen keys on it. I tried the first key, but it didn't work. Then the second key and so on. I kept sticking key after key going around on the key ring trying to open the door. Finally, after the sixth or seventh try, it opened the door. I immediately ran out the door and pressed the button on the elevators. I had waited until the elevator door opened when I threw the keys under a set of benches or chairs that were in the hall. I then stepped into the elevator and pressed one for first floor. I pressed the close door button. The elevator went to the first floor without stopping. I exited the elevator and calmly walked out the front doors of the hospital. By this time, it was nine o'clock sharp. Once I was outside, I started to run. I ran north along Highway 6, then east along Highway 1, which runs parallel to the river. There was a rock bluff just a little ways down the road on the north side of the hospital. I ran maybe a mile along the road then went down by the river off the road. I crossed under a bridge when I saw a couple guys hanging out there. I must've stood out because I had a maroon hospital gown on. I traveled east along the river. It was probably fifteen feet below the level of the highway where no one could see me. There were a few spots I had to slow up along the river because the water was so close to the bank. It was fairly cold that night. I'm assuming it was in the teens or maybe low twenties. I was dressed inappropriately for the occasion. I came to rest along the riverbank which must've been about two miles from the hospital. There was a tall poor attainment wall along the riverbank. It was dry there with a patch of grass. My adrenaline was pumping. I still had this feeling that an asteroid was coming. So I leaned up against a retaining wall which would block me from the direct path of the asteroid hitting the hospital if it did. I had come to rest and to seek cover. I felt somewhat relieved I made it out of the hospital but still had the strong feeling of the strike. I tried whatever I could to keep warm, like running in place and covering myself with the tall grass. I must've stayed there for two or three hours. There was a helicopter I heard flying overhead. By this time, I was becoming really stiff from the cold. So I felt I had to get up and continue running. I followed down along the river maybe another quarter mile. I then went back up top along the road. I continue to run east then again north through the residential area of Iowa City. When I had come upon what looked like a commercial business, it must've been about four miles from the hospital. I passed three people walking. I felt I was exposed, and I needed to find cover. I found a culvert which I wiggled and shimmied my way into. I had stayed there for another hour or

so. Finally, I had this feeling that it was over. I no longer had the spirits or vibe in me. I knew at that time the test for being the savior was a success. I then left the culvert and continued to run north where I had come across a twenty-four-hour gas station. I wasn't familiar with this part of town. I had gone inside the gas station and called a taxi. I had waited about five or ten minutes for the taxi to show up. I made it back to the hospital at two o'clock in the morning on January 9 exactly. It was five hours I was in the cold from nine o'clock till two o'clock in the morning. I was met outside of the hospital by a staff member named Margie."

Margie: "Well, hi there, Scott! I've been waiting here for quite some time for you."

Scott: "Sorry for your wait! I didn't mean holding you up!"

Margie: "Where have you been?"

Scott: "I had to get away from the hospital for a little bit! I had run for couple miles."

Margie: "You look cold! Are you?"

Scott: "Yes, I'm very cold!"

Margie: "Well, I'm glad you made it back. We'll get you inside and then you can rest."

We entered the hospital, then took the elevator to the ninth floor. We got out of the elevator.

Margie: "Do you have the keys that you took earlier?"

Scott: "Yes, there under them chairs over there."

Scott got the keys and then handed them to Margie. They entered the ward, he then had gone to his room and crawled under the covers of his bed. About fifteen minutes later, there were two officers from the hospital that checked up on him. As far as he knew, there was a helicopter with a spotlight looking for him that night. And the local police in Monticello came to notify his wife at the house. The next day after talking to a staff nurse, they said they've never had anybody escape from them before.

Director Dean: "Cut!"

Scene 125 took place from the hospital to courthouse in Jones County.

Director's Cut Guy: "Scene 125, take 1. Escorted to courthouse in handcuffs."

It was early morning of January 17, 2007. The sheriff came to the hospital to escort Scott to the courthouse. This was the day Scott had been released from the hospital but had to appear in court. The sheriff had come to the psychiatry ward. He then placed Scott in handcuffs. He escorted Scott from the hospital to his patrol car. Scott arrived at the courthouse after an hour's drive. He then brought Scott upstairs of the courthouse to be seen by the judge. Scott was held up for about ten minutes outside the courtroom until he could be seen by the judge. Scott's mother and wife were also at the hearing.

Judge Sopyy: "Are you Scott Leroy Chally?"

Scott: "Yes, I am, sir!"

Judge Sopyy: "It has been brought to my attention today that you, Scott Chally, could be considered a high risk to society! It's in the determinations of the court of what your action shall be today in the situation

referring to January 8, 2007, escaping from a mental facility in Iowa City at the Veterans Hospital. Do you have anything to say for yourself, Scott?”

Scott: “Just that I’m doing some universal test placed upon me in order to save the world. But I’ve been treated at the hospital now, and I have to accept the fact that I have bipolar that may be causing my actions. I didn’t mean to pose any harm when I escaped, plus I returned to the hospital psychiatry ward that same night.”

Judge Sopyy: “This is considered serious and your actions are not tolerable. But I will give you warning this time. If I shall see or hear from you again, I won’t be so lenient. Do I make myself clear?”

Scott: “I understand very clearly, sir! I can give you my word it won’t happen again.”

Judge Sopyy: “I have nothing further! You may be released!”

Judge slapped the hammer down on desk.

Judge Sopyy: “Adjourned!”

Scott was then taken out to the hallway of the courthouse by the sheriff. The sheriff then took the handcuffs off Scott. Scott, his mother, and his wife left the courthouse then proceeded to go home.

Narration of Scott: “I thought it was unnecessary to go to court over what happened. The judge could have sentenced me to a clinical mental home to live in, which I’m happy for that it didn’t happen. Well, I got to go home. But more interesting, I was thinking about how I believe this was considered the second judgment from the Bible to be completed. I placed the stone to save a city, Iowa City. I escape death, which was to come to me the night I escaped to leave the hospital. And I was tried in front of the law for my actions. I’ll read to you what it says in the Bible about the second judgment. NIRV, Revelation 11:7–14: ‘When they have finished given their witness, the beast that comes up from the Abyss will attack them. He will overpower them and kill them. Their bodies will lie in the street of the great city where their Lord was nailed to the cross. The city is sometimes pictured as Sodom or as Egypt. For three and a half days, people from every tribe, language and nation will stare at their bodies. They will refuse to bury them. Those who live on earth will be happy about this and will celebrate. They will send each other gifts, because these two prophets had made them suffer. But after the three and a half days, breath of life from God entered the two witnesses. They stood up. Terror struck those who saw them. Then the two witnesses heard a loud voice from heaven. It said to them, ‘Come up here.’ They went up to heaven in a cloud. Their enemies watched it happen. At that very hour, there was a powerful earthquake. A tenth of the city crumbled and fell. In the earthquake, 7,000 people were killed. Those who lived through it were terrified. They gave glory to the God of heaven. The second terrible judgment has passed. The third is coming soon.”

Director Dean: “Cut!”

Scene 133 took place in Scott’s den in the making of the book.

Director’s Cut Guy: “Scene 133, take 1. The third judgment for world peace.”

Narration of Scott: “I’m speaking in belief to explain the episodes which have happened and what is to come about in a glance. You will see situations that have happened from the past to present in this narration. It starts out with me in my den in mid-July through October 17, 2012, working on the book. I was researching my medical records to verify dates and times for the book. It’s been exhausting six and a half years wondering and waiting for the world to change. I know everything that I have gone through was a true sign from God. I also know I haven’t failed the test for God and the people for salvation. Everything that I have done so far has been referenced to have come from the Bible to be true and complete. I know dates to come about from

what I figured out in the Bible. I did start and came up with a new world policy. I see the future to be tremendously great. All of the people that I have come in contact with, where I have mention that I might be the Messiah, looks at me strange. I understand! It's hard to believe! March 5, 2006, is when I first turned to the Bible for help. April 5 was when I saw God's one and only holy city. September 19, I experience the time and date change for the first judgment. January 8, 2007, I did a placement of a stone with a special seal to save 7,000 people in Iowa City. The night of January 8 and early morning of January 9 was the sentencing of Jesus Christ or me. I had escaped to continue in bringing the new world policy and salvation to the world. January 17 was the final step to the second judgment with the court hearing to be seen in the eyes of the law. I had figured out dates in the Bible. The first date I came up with was April 9, 2009, for the BOSS. Then it calculates out to 1,290 days to equal November 9, 2012, for the second episode of the book to be written by. Also note that if the book would not have been written by that date, according to the Mayan calendar, the world was supposed to end on December 21, 2012. So it was postponed until a later date. Now note that I explained things happen in seven-year cycles. So the new date to look forward for will be November 9, 2019, at 2:24 PM for an asteroid to hit south of Iowa City or you can look at it as saying 911. Part of the third judgment takes place twelve years after first recollection of the Bible. That date is midnight, March 4, 2018. All the people will see the savior on December 13, 2019, that's when the savior turns forty-nine years old. With the 1,335 days, the world will be together as one on July 24, 2023. If we shall happen to fail this test for mankind, the date would be January 24, 2027. So we pray we don't have to see three waves of asteroid strikes taking out two thirds of the world population. This concludes what I know as being your savior. Peace for all!"

Director Dean: "Cut!"

The filming was completed on November 1, 2019. Except Scott told the director Dean Lundy that he should stick around with the filming crew until after the ninth, due to the fact that the asteroids could hit.

Chapter 7

Scott: "Dean, you need to stick around until after the ninth."

Dean: "You don't really think an asteroid is going to hit on November 9 at 2:24 PM, do you? You have made a great book and you've been a great codirector, but I highly doubt an asteroid is going to hit that day or any other day soon."

Scott: "Well, we will see about it."

Dean: "I'll tell you what, I'll leave two people back to film just in case, for your sake, until the tenth."

Scott: "That'll work, thanks!"

Dean: "You know the editors for the film have a lot to do yet in order to get the movie ready for the theaters by December 13."

Scott: "I realize that, but I think it would make the movie better if they had the real asteroid to hit in it."

Dean: "You are a believer, aren't you? I can't take that away from you."

Scott: "Just trust me and you'll see!"

It's November 9, 2019, approximately 1:00 PM. Scott, Sondra, Jimmy, Jason, Melanie, Ricky, Molly, Courtney, the babies, and a few others were standing around outside of Scott and Sondra's house. Scott had gathered them there because of the movie that was just made. Also, because of Scott's prediction saying he's the savior. They're all curious if Scott's prediction of an asteroid strike was going to hit thirty miles south of Iowa City. They're socializing with each other listening to the radio and having a barbecue.

Sondra: "It's about five minutes after one, honey. You say they're going to announce it over the radio if there's going to be an asteroid coming?"

Scott: "Yes, they will announce it on the radio and TV. It will be at 1:11 PM sharp."

Jason: "I think you're going to make a laughing fool out of yourself, Dad!"

Scott: "Just watch and see!"

At 1:11 PM sharp, the radio announcer interrupted the music that was playing.

Radio Announcer: "Just in! This is not a test! Astrological scientists have discovered that there is an asteroid headed to the state of Iowa. The exact location is not known. They assume it's going to hit East Central Iowa. If you're in the vicinity of Eastern Iowa, please evacuate at this time, immediately, I'll say it again, if you're in the vicinity of Eastern Iowa, evacuate. This is not a test."

Everyone's looking at their watch. They're all in wonder and amazement how Scott had predicted the time.

Courtney: "This is really starting to scare me. I thought we're just going to have a friendly barbecue. Are we safe here?"

Scott: "As far as I know, we should be. Do you guys believe that I'm the Messiah now?"

Sondra: "I do, sweetie! You made me wonder the whole time since the beginning of your episode that you've been having."

Molly: "We're going to be watching our death! You can't guarantee us safety! I don't care who you are, that rock could destroy us!"

Scott: "Now, you can see what I've been going through. It's scary, isn't it?"

Ricky: "Now, Scott, you say that asteroid is going to hit at 2:24 PM. Are you sure you have the location correct? We're not going to be waiting to find out it's our doom instead, are we?"

Scott: "Just believe me, Ricky! I say I planted a special stone that had a seal placed on it from the Lord, thirty to forty-five miles south of Iowa City."

Jimmy: "My dad, the Messiah! Who would ever believe me if I told them? I suppose that would make me a holy prince of the family of God!"

Scott: "Don't get too happy yet, there's still a long road in front of us."

Jimmy: "What you talking about, Dad? You predict an asteroid strike and that it hits at 2:24 PM!"

Scott: "I still have to implement the new world order and combine the world as one."

Ricky: "Well, it should be easy enough to do. You made a movie over this asteroid strike before it happens. It just hasn't been released into the theaters yet."

Scott: "I do want it to happen to be as one for the world. I do believe in our God. It's been a challenge for me, I can tell you that much. But there could be something I'm overlooking that could go wrong."

Jimmy: "Now you're starting to scare me, Dad."

Scott: "Don't be worried, son. Just have faith in your dad and God. He wants this as much as I do and the world."

Jason: "You got the first prediction correct, Dad. Let's see on the second prediction. It's about two minutes out from 2:24 PM."

Everyone was looking at their watches and staring up at the sky waiting for the final moment of the asteroid to hit.

Jason: "It's 2:23 PM, Dad, and I don't see it."

Scott: "Patience, my son! It's coming, I can feel it."

They're all staring up to the sky, and they saw a big streak of blazing fire through the sky. Before they could react and say anything, the ground was shaken. After the strike, they saw this large cloud in the sky. Everyone's amazed and scared at the same time. After a minute or so, they felt a tremendous wave of heat. After the heat, they saw small debris in the air. The air was clouded with smoke and dust. They all had amazed look on their faces.

Jason: "Oh my god, Dad! You have called the precise minute for the asteroid strike!"

Jimmy: “That’s impossible! You’re the Messiah that the Bible speaks about! All the people of the world will know you now!”

Melanie: “I’m with the son of the Messiah! How great is that? My father-in-law soon-to-be! At least I hope! Jimmy, will you marry me?”

Jimmy: “I’m supposed to be asking you that question, Melanie! But yes, I would love to!”

Melanie: “Oh, how I love you, Jimmy!”

Melanie and Jimmy hugged each other.

Scott: “That’s what I’ve been telling you all along! Wow, I’m going to have a daughter-in-law soon. That’s great news!”

Sondra: “All this time I’ve been married to God’s one and only son! Wow, I feel so good about having you, honey! I almost feel that I shouldn’t be entitled to have you. You’re special!”

Scott: “Don’t worry, honey! There’s no other woman in the world that I’d rather be with than you.”

Sondra: “Melanie, it would be an honor to have you as part of the family.”

Ricky: “Wow! All this time! I’ve been with God! Who would’ve ever guessed it?”

Scott: “Don’t be scared of me! I ask from all of you! I’m here to protect you all. You’re all my special loved ones.”

Ricky: “Now the media is going to recognize you, Scott, as Jesus Christ!”

Scott: “That’ll happen at 3:00 PM today. It’ll be all over the news. The entire world will know within the day.”

Jason: “Dad, I’m sorry to have doubted you.”

Scott: “It’s okay, son! How would you really know for sure what I’ve been going through unless it had happened to you?”

At 3:00 PM, they heard the radio.

Radio Announcer: “The Messiah has arrived! There has been a man in Iowa that had predicted the asteroid strike! It’s true! It’s really, really true! It’s being talked about that God or his son is coming forth for the world to see. The second coming is happening! We are all in the hands of God now. His plan will come forth! Like it spoken of in the Bible! We will all be saved!”

Within the hour, there were five TV crews at Scott and Sondra’s house. They had approached Scott and the family members to speak to them for the world to see which Scott was overwhelmed with joy. This moment in time—thirteen years, eight months, and four days—had finally arrived. Two cycles which were spoken about in the Bible had come. Scott knew there was still one more cycle to go, until the year 2027 January 24, for the world to relax in peace.

Channel 2 News: “Hi! My name is Bettina Neilson. I’m with the Channel 2 News, and I am covering a story that is beyond belief. I’m at what we will call the savior’s house in Monticello, Iowa. A gentleman called Scott Chally has done the unthinkable and impossible. He has predicted an asteroid strike to hit south of Iowa

City this very day. Not only did he say it was going to hit on this day, but he predicted the time when it was going to be notified to the public that the asteroid was coming and the precise time it was going to hit. We don't have any facts in yet on the amount of people that got injured or killed today, but the casualties are probably arranging in the thousands due to the size of the impact of the crater. This is considered a major catastrophe which we should all be sad about, but we have to look at the bright side of things and praise that our savior has come. We will now go to Scott Chally and ask him a few questions."

Bettina Neilson: "So, Scott, let me ask you, how did you know where and the time of the asteroid strike?"

Scott: "It's been like fourteen years since I reference the Bible! I've been put through all kinds of universal test for the world to become the savior. I've never given up and I've always believed. I figured the dates out from the Bible and visions that I received! I had placed a special stone with the seal on it from God to where the asteroid hit."

Bettina Neilson: "So this has been going on for you for quite some time? And you say you got the date through visions and the Bible?"

Scott: "Yes, that is correct. I had to figure out a riddle from the Bible first and I also received visions to help me on this journey."

Bettina Neilson: "Sounds mysterious how you say it. Could you explain the visions a little more clear?"

Scott: "For instance, when I came up with the time which the people would be notified, I was out fishing. I had just cast the line out in the water. While I was standing there on the bank, I saw a brick on the ground that had three o'clock on it. I looked down at my watch and it said one 1:11:11 PM sharp, and at that moment in time, I saw a flash of an asteroid strike in my mind. I looked back down at the brick on the ground; it then looked like it said BOO."

Bettina Neilson: "Very interesting and mysterious. So you would say you're doing God's work?"

Scott: "That is correct! I have a new world policy to instate to the world. In the near future, I see the world to be prosperous with salvation and all people to be taken care of."

Bettina Neilson: "Very interesting! We can only imagine what the world will be like. But it's like you know how it's going to turn out. Could you tell us a little more about it?"

Scott: "There's too much to really go into to tell you all the facts at this time! But I'll tell you this: Everyone will be paid. There will be fair work standards for the world. Medically everyone will be taken care of."

Bettina Neilson: "I had heard prior to me seeing you today of a rumor that you just got done completing a movie, is that correct?"

Scott: "Yes, that's correct. I just finished up November 1 with filming of it and I can tell you this much, I had a great crew and some fantastic actors. The name of the movie is called *Scott Chally Believes*. It's an autobiography over my life and the episode that happened with me with the spirits and vibes of God. It'll be released to the movie theaters on my birthday, December 13, of this year."

Bettina Neilson: "Nice, sounds good! I can't wait to see it! So you wrote it?"

Scott: "A matter of fact I did, about five years ago. I think everyone will like it!"

Bettina Neilson: “Well, there you have it, folks. I’m standing with what I believe is the Messiah. I think we’ll be hearing a lot more from him. Thanks once again, Scott, for sharing your information in this interview and being the savior of the world. Until next time, this is Bettina Neilson, signing off.”

Channel 9 News was covering the results of the impact area. They traveled on the roads leading to the impact site where there were rocks, boulders, mounds of dirt, cracks in the pavement. And all around them, every place they looked, the trees and the land were on fire. The air was filled with thick smoke in some spots. There were also other people trying to see the impact area.

Vanessa Giza: “This is Vanessa Giza with the Channel 9 News reporting live. We’re just south of Iowa City about thirty to forty-five miles where the asteroid hit about an hour and a half ago. What a sight this is to see! What a tremendous impact it has done! As you can see, everything looks as if it was a war zone or worse! This is just devastating to see this site! You wonder just how many people have lost their lives here today! What used to be lush farmland is now a wasteland. Who could imagine something of this magnitude! As you can see, there’s other people starting to flood the area to see the impact of the crater. We’re approximately three-fourths of a mile from the impact site. I see a gentleman walking this way. Let’s see if we can talk to him. Hey, sir! Hey! Hey there! You got a minute?”

Stevie: “Yeah, sure!”

Vanessa Giza: “So what’s your name?”

Stevie: “Stevie Davis.”

Vanessa Giza: “May I ask what brings you out here, Stevie?”

Stevie: “Well, I used to live around here somewhere. I just don’t see anything that looks like where I used to live though.”

Vanessa Giza: “I’m sorry for your loss! Did you and your family members get out okay?”

Stevie: “Yes, we evacuated an hour before the notification came out.”

Vanessa Giza: “How did you manage to do this?”

Stevie: “Well, there was a movie casted here earlier this fall and all the neighbors were talking to each other about the rumor of an asteroid strike that was dictated in the movie for this date. The movie was made after a book. The book and movie were made over a savior or the Messiah. I suppose you could say that kind of put a chill down our spine. So we took precautions to leave on this day, just in case, and as you can see, it was right that we did.”

Vanessa Giza: “So you say others evacuated too?”

Stevie: “Yes, I would say there were about forty neighbors in a two-mile radius that had left.”

Vanessa Giza: “That’s good news to hear. So now you don’t have a place to live though.”

Stevie: “Our family can live with our in-laws but not everybody is as lucky though.”

Vanessa Giza: “Well, that’s good to hear! Is there anything you’d like to say?”

Stevie: “I just want to thank God that me and my family are safe. But I did find something interesting

that you might like. I found some popcorn!”

Vanessa Giza: “Popcorn! Can I see?”

Stevie: “I guess you could consider it a sign from the heavens. I have this recollection that it means this is a time to celebrate.”

Vanessa Giza: “Like I said, I’m sorry for your loss, but I hope you can find happiness somewhere among this mess. Thanks for talking to me, Stevie. Have a good day!”

Stevie: “You too!”

Vanessa Giza: “Well, this has been Vanessa Giza from Channel 9 News live at the impact area of the asteroid that hit a couple hours ago. Till next time, have a great day and God bless our savior if this is a sign!”

It is November 10 when the two guys that were left back to do the filming were at the impact site. They had captured the asteroid in the sky prior to hitting. They filmed the immense effects from the first twenty minutes after the asteroid hit. They captured the effects on the ground with the firefighters trying to extinguish the flames of burning trees and fields. Now they’re filming up close to where the craters at.

Rodney: “Hey, Lee, after we get these shoots of the crests of the crater, we need to schedule a helicopter to get an aerial view.”

Lee: “I’m one step in front you. I called the Iowa City police department this morning and they’re going to take us out this afternoon in their helicopter.”

Rodney: “That’s great. We really got some good shots the last two days. Something that will last for all times in history.”

Lee: “You’re correct about that! They’ll never be forgotten! You could sort of consider us legendary heroes for the pictures captured of the asteroid.”

Rodney: “But we still got to get these pictures and film back to the studio as quick as possible so they can edit them in the film.”

CNN News contacted Scott about a week after the asteroid strike. They want to do an interview to show the world what was on Scott’s agenda for world peace and to find out if he’s possibly the true savior to come forward as the Bible speaks of.

Dale Legendary: “Hello! I am Dale Legendary for CNN Newsweekly coming to you today with a special broadcast of who we believe is the savior of the world, Scott Chally! The forty-fifth week of 2019. Thanks for joining us tonight. So tell us, Scott Chally, why should we believe you’re the Messiah of the world? God’s one and only holy son.”

Scott: “For one, I had predicted an asteroid strike to hit precisely of the location and time.”

Dale Legendary: “Couldn’t it have been coincidental that you just happened to solve the riddle from the Bible?”

Scott: “I did solve the riddle from the Bible with using man’s number of 666. But what about the location? You can’t explain that one, can you?”

Dale Legendary: “Let’s just say you had a lucky guess? You knew it was going to be next to a city of

70,000 people far as I hear. But what makes you more for the world to believe you?”

Scott: “I have a movie coming out on December 13 that will prove it to the world. It explains everything from the beginning with the signs, the visions, the calculations, and the new world order.”

Dale Legendary: “You can say anything you like in the movie. What would make it believable?”

Scott: “You’ll just have to trust me on this one and watch the movie.”

Dale Legendary: “Okay, we’ll move on! So about this new world order you have, please tell us a little bit about it.”

Scott: “Well, it would be called American Constitution of Economics, also known as Ace Services. It’s a one-world government to cover all people rights for health, leadership, and wealth. There are three aces that are used. The Ace of Hearts stands for love and is used for the welfare on health of the people. The Ace of Spades stands for power and is used in governing leadership. The Ace of Diamonds stands for wealth and handles all the money taken in or given out for the world.”

Dale Legendary: “Well, it seems like you got a handle on the fundamentals of the economy and structure for the world. But how would you conquer world wars or countries that want to pose war?”

Scott: “All military weapons in the world will be done away with. Majority of them will be destroyed, salvaged, and recycled to use back into the economy. There will be no wars in the future. The world will be as one power. Everyone will be equal! After each country sees how the world policy will operate, they’ll accept to the terms and do away with their military arsenal. That includes ground weapons such as tanks and artillery. All destroyers and aircraft carriers any type of battleship on water will be done away with and all air fighter jets or tactical planes will be taken out of commission as well.”

Dale Legendary: “What if a nation chooses not to join your new world policy? Are you going to blow them up?”

Scott: “No, I don’t need to! See, under the new world government, all people will be registered into one database that participates and all who register to the database will get paid the costs of living by county or district that they live in. And if a country chooses not to participate, that means nobody in that country will receive the cost of living. Their economy will end up failing without the support of other nations until they accept to the terms. But remember the world has to be united by January 24, 2027.”

Dale Legendary: “Why does this date January 24, 2027, matter?”

Scott: “All I know are the numbers I figured out in the Bible equal to this date, what I understand according to the universal test that I’ve been placed with. What I read in the Bible that could come about would be three waves of asteroids, taking out two thirds of the population here on earth. That’s why it’s so critical by that date.”

Dale Legendary: “The way you put it sort of scares me. You don’t know what the other countries are thinking or want to do. They could destroy the world, you’re saying?”

Scott: “It takes the people to come together to make this happen for God’s plan. If we all believe, then there will be no worries.”

Dale Legendary: “You speak of how everyone will get paid. How are they going to get paid? Where are you going to get the money from?”

Scott: “Digitally there will be an unlimited amount of cash that would take care of the needs of the people of what needs to come about. For instance, like streets, government buildings, facilities, healthcare, education, retirement plans, and payment for each person’s cost of living on earth that is registered with Ace Services. Understand it will be a very, very large number. But there will be money coming in like when people receive inheritance, property assessment dues, retirement plans from companies paying in and then proceeds off of selling drugs, like marijuana and cocaine.”

Dale Legendary: “You’re talking about making money off of drugs as a government? I can maybe see marijuana, but cocaine, isn’t that a little extreme?”

Scott: “Not really. See, everybody is in the same database. It works the same way when they want to buy some marijuana or cocaine. Maybe, let’s say, for marijuana they can receive a half ounce once a week. Each individual in the world would have the access to pull out from a bank that sells marijuana or cocaine. It’s just that it’ll be restricted to buy only a half ounce per week for each person from the database which will be regulated. For instance, another example would be for cocaine to only receive eight grams a month. Each person would not be able to buy more than this from his or her account. Of course, there will have to be some testing for the level of potency for cocaine to be distributed. Maybe it might be cut 50-50 with something else. It would be a really hyped up cough medicine for an example, but still legal to use. The government will monitor the usage and quality of cocaine throughout the people, but no other drugs would be acceptable through the government. For instance, it would be illegal to have heroine, crystal meth, LSD or acid, and other illicit-type drugs.”

Dale Legendary: “Okay, I can possibly see the drugs work, but won’t the economy get overinflated with money having unlimited amount of access to pull from?”

Scott: “You see, there will be like a tariff put on basically five major categories. They are rental properties, new autos, insurances, utilities, and food. They will not be able to fluctuate more than 10 percent per year on their prices. They will be governed and controlled by district Ace Services office of Ace of Diamonds. If you control those prices on the categories I listed for the economy, it won’t matter if the economy is overinflated with money.”

Dale Legendary: “Well, thank you for your time today, Scott. We will have to wrap it up for today. Is Scott the Messiah of the world? It seems like he has his cards in order. Maybe it’ll work, maybe it won’t. Time will only tell! Thank you for tuning in this week to CNN Newsweekly and I’ll see you next time. This is Dale Legendary signing out.”

It’s Friday December 13, 2019, and it’s also Scott’s birthday. He turned forty-nine years old this day. Scott and this family were waiting to get inside the movie theater to see Scott’s movie that they had been waiting for so long. After waiting in a long line, they got in to see the 6:30 PM show. They watched the three- to four-hour movie. Everyone in the theater was with joy and in wonder, but they really enjoyed the show. Scott and his family went to leave the theater and were intercepted by a news reporter covering the footage of the movie release.

Channel 7 News Reporter: “Hi, sir! Are you Scott Chally, the one who wrote the book to the movie? Also is considered to be the Messiah of the world because of your latest prediction of the asteroid strike?”

Scott: “Yes, that’s me, but I’m kind in a hurry to get home, so if you can keep it short.”

Channel 7 News Reporter: “I was just wondering what you thought of the movie you had made?”

Scott: “I liked it! I thought it turned out great!”

Channel 7 News Reporter: “And you, ma’am! Are you his wife?”

Sondra: “Yes, I’m his wife! I thought it was a great movie. It was really good!”

Channel 7 News Reporter: “You have got to be so excited! Wondering in amazement about your husband possibly being the Messiah of the world?”

Sondra: “Yeah, he’s a great man! I love him!”

Scott: “Sorry, but we need to get going. Hate to cut you short!”

Scott had been in and out of the media on and off now for the last two to three months. He was set up with *20/20 Exclusive* for an interview. His movie had been making a great turnaround for the public to see him as the Messiah. Year 2020 was election year, and the people of the United States wanted Scott to run as president. He was doing an interview by Walter Davis of *20/20 Exclusive*.

Walter Davis: “Hi, my name is Walter Davis of *20/20 Exclusive* reporting here. We have a very special guest here tonight, named Scott Chally, also known to be the Messiah, so the people are saying. Scott, how are you doing tonight? And I’m glad you could make it to our show!”

Scott: “I’m glad to be here and I’m good. I’m doing well.”

Walter Davis: “Scott, it does seem interesting and impressive that you were able to come up with the number one blockbuster hit movie. Predict an asteroid strike that hit on earth that you mentioned in your movie. And you say and have actually presented a pretty decent new world order to the world. This is election year; the people are saying and wanting you to run for president. How do you feel about that?”

Scott: “Well, I’ll put it like this: If the people of the United States would like to see me as president to bring in a new world order to this world and for them to reap in the benefits, they will have to elect me through open vote on the ballot. So what I’m saying is that if they write my name in Scott L. Chally on the vote and I should get elected, I would be honored and proud to serve as the president of the United States. And I will make the new world order happen.”

Walter Davis: “That’s interesting to hear. So you heard it, world, write Scott L. Chally’s name in on the ballot and he’ll run for president. I am a firm believer in your new world order that you have come up with. Everything I’ve heard about it so far has been excellent. I’m also a believer in God! And some reason or another, I have this feeling you were sent on this earth to bring us freedom and peace.”

Scott: “Well, thank you! That makes me feel good!”

Walter Davis: “I would like to hear more about your medical program for the world and how it’ll benefit the people?”

Scott: “Sure, no problem. The medical side of the house of cards will be taken care of by the Ace of Hearts, paid out by the Ace of Diamonds. It will be for the people’s protection in healthcare that no one will be left behind. There will be no such thing as preexisting conditions to stop you from getting medical assistance. Medical practices will be looked at. The government will come up with a common practice for all patients. For instance, if there is a pacific surgery that is \$15,000 at one hospital or from one doctor and another doctor performs the same surgery for \$10,000 and a third doctor performs it for \$20,000, it will be taking on an average of \$15,000 for the government to pay out for the doctor or hospital of said surgery as a common. We will gather all the information for surgeries performed across the world as an average for each surgery. From the last five years going back from the time I would take office, no patient will have to pay for the surgeries or hospital visits nor will they have to pay for office calls at the doctor’s office. There will be a

database that the person or all people will be kept for practices performed. Once the procedures performed for that individual are entered into their database with actions pending for procedures performed, it'll go to the Ace of Hearts office of district of that individual to be approved. Once it's approved, the actions from that individual will proceed to the Ace of Diamonds office to be paid out to the appropriate doctor or hospital. All medical practices will be paid for by the government. There will no longer be medical health insurance for the people. The people will not have to pay."

Walter Davis: "I like what I hear. That seems to be a really good policy for the people. What about medicine or prescription drugs, how would that work?"

Scott: "There will not be outrageous prices for prescription drugs. The government will monitor and to ensure there will be fair prices for all prescription drugs or medicine to be used in treating such patients. They will be paid for just as the medical is annotated in the records of said patient. Over-the-counter drugs such as cough medicine, flu, aspirin, things of this nature will still be assessable through the stores for the people to buy and the government will not pay for these items for use."

Walter Davis: "That's all good, I like to hear that. What about the elderly who have to go to care facilities? What would be the plan on this?"

Scott: "Well, care facilities will be monitored just as the medical is to figure out on the average cost for taking care of patients across the world. If a patient is to be in a care facility, they will no longer receive cost-of-living allowance. But the care facility would allow them a small supplement to ensure they can have cloths. There may be extra money allotted for the cost of living per district granite to the care facilities. There will be a secondary Ace Services office for caregivers in each community. This will also come from the Ace of Hearts office for the assistance of patients that need such care. It will be paid out by the Ace of Diamonds office of each district of said person. If a person chooses to live in their home, they may do so, but their cost-of-living allowance will be garnished due to what the necessity of the care that is to be taken to care for them. It'll be broken down to the amount per hour that a caregiver spends at the disabled or elderly person or person's residents, so the elderly may continue to live in their home and be taken care of by caregivers. The caregivers would be able to assist in cleaning or taking care of the house, make meals, do laundry, verified medicine is taken accordingly and figure out, help the patient pay for the bills with the patient's money. If the elderly or disabled person needs modifications to their home in order to care for them, the Ace of Hearts office would send a representative out to their location to assess what is needed and then apply the applications that are needed and then be paid for by the government. Different applications for the disabled of accessories may be granted on special request."

Walter Davis: "Your new world policy is looking better and better there, Scott. Let me ask you about dental. What would you do for this?"

Scott: "All dental that is required or recommended by the dentist will be accepted and allowed, braces and dentures included. It will use the same concept for request to the Ace Services branches and payment to the allotted dentist for the work performed. The same concept also applies in figuring out what the cost is to perform each procedure across the world, for then it will be paid as an average to the dentist for the service."

Walter Davis: "That's good. Some dentist may not like the prices they get paid for the work though."

Scott: "I suppose they will have to seek another profession then. It will be fair prices paid to the dentist for their services."

Walter Davis: "What about handicap? Some handicap people need special limbs and special accessories to get around. What would you do about this?"

Scott: "Each person of special needs or artificial limbs and certain accessories would be approved

according to what the Ace Services office feel is needed.”

Walter Davis: “Well, Scott, it’s been a real pleasure speaking with you today. But unfortunately, we’re out of time on this episode. I thank you for coming. I’m Walter Davis of *20/20 Exclusive* until next time. Have a good day and think about what the new world order from Scott Chally could be like if it’s implemented.”

It’s October 2020 and Scott visited Jimmy and Ricky’s shop in Cedar Rapids where they did business from. They now had a full fleet of forty semis for over-the-road hauling. They had two Bernard stores that they did deliveries for. They’d got multiple stores for furniture and appliances they deliver for. They did a household moving on the side and eight postal accounts that they hauled for. Their business was really thriving. It’s been three and a half years since they started their business. All Jimmy and Ricky did was manage the business. Scott walked into their office, and Jimmy and Ricky got their feet up on their desk.

Scott: “I see you guys are working hard today. Or should I say hardly working?”

Jimmy: “I just got off the phone with another possible account to haul for. It’s one of the cereal companies here in Cedar Rapids. They would like to see us deliver to eighteen locations around states. I think we got the bid for it. He assured me that it’s probably locked and sealed, and we should start hauling possibly by mid-January. That means we’ll probably have to get another ten semis. We’ve been really swamped with hauling over the road.”

Scott: “That’s good to hear. I’m glad your business is thriving.”

Ricky: “Just last week I picked up eight local delivery accounts for short one-day route hauling.”

Scott: “You must be doing something right to be getting the business.”

Ricky: “Nobody can touch our hauling rates. We’re the lowest hauling rates in northeast Iowa.”

Jimmy: “We’re clearing over \$250,000 a month .and by next year, we should be clearing over \$350,000 a month.”

Ricky: “We have over seventy-five people employed for us right now. Molly has been really swamped doing the paperwork and payroll for us. I think we’re going to have to find another finance accountant to help her out. And I believe our mechanic is been pretty stressed trying to keep up with all the services on the trucks. So we will have to hire another mechanic as well. Our dispatcher seems to be doing a good job. We might be offering him an incentive of a bonus for each year.”

Scott: “That’s good! So how’s life treating you all?”

Jimmy: “Melanie and Zachary are the highlight of my life. They have been great! I try to spend every moment I can with them. Melanie has wanted us to buy a house up in Cedar Rapids off of East Post Road. We put a bid on the house, which we will probably get. Zachary will have to switch school districts. He’s not very happy about that because he’ll be losing contact with his old friends. I told him he’ll find new friends and he’ll probably like the school better. Melanie quit her job; I told her she didn’t have to work if she didn’t feel like it. Life has been great! I’m so glad I quit the factory and started this business with Jimmy. But I thank you a lot, Dad, for helping us out in the beginning. We would’ve never made it without your help.”

Scott: “Oh, I think you would have. You two are pretty knowledgeable and intelligent people. I’m so happy, son, that everything is going great. What’s Jason been up to? Is he getting fed up with doing deliveries?”

Jimmy: "I don't think so; I think he enjoys doing them. He likes communicating with the people that he meets. He could quit if he wanted to. He is a millionaire! He did get his commercial driver's license about six months ago. I put him in charge of the Bernard stores."

Scott: "I've been so busy this last year with interviews and just talking to people in general about the new world order. I really haven't had much time to communicate with you boys and your mom. I tried to take your mom with me whenever I have to do things in the public though. Ricky, where is Molly anyhow? Isn't she supposed to be at work and how are you doing?"

Ricky: "She's on salary, as long as she keeps up with the books, we're okay. But she's out shopping with Courtney and the kids. I'm doing really well! I'm so happy for Molly, Courtney, and the kids. I'm so happy that Molly and Courtney found the liking in each other. They've been super great to me and the kids as well. By the way, Molly and Courtney are pregnant again."

Scott: "They are? Are they pregnant with twins again?"

Ricky: "No, they're just pregnant with one baby."

Scott: "Well, congrats to you again, but you'll need a bigger vehicle and possibly a bigger house."

Ricky: "We're looking at an eleven-passenger van at the moment. The house will be fine till they get up to five years old."

Scott: "I would tell you the kids are going to cost you a lot of money to raise. But I don't think you have to worry about money."

Ricky: "No, I don't think I have to worry about money, we still have a couple million dollars in the bank. But speaking of money, you must be making quite a pretty penny off of that movie."

Scott: "Yes, I am! The last time I checked the bank account, it was over \$38 million."

Jimmy: "Dad, are you getting excited about this upcoming election? I been watching on the news and listening to the people talk. It seems like you may get voted in for president without even running. Are you looking forward to be president? And just think you would get to live at the White House, that would be special of its own!"

Scott: "Yes, I would be honored to hold the spot for president. I do feel that God has put me on this earth for the mission to bring in the new world policy for the people."

Jimmy: "Election is coming up soon in November. You would know if you got elected by the people by writing your name in that you're doing God's work."

Scott: "Yes, I realize that! I just hope everything works out like it's written in the Bible by bringing the new world order into play. I suppose we will find out January 24, 2027, if we pass the test for God from the people."

It's about a week before the election, and Scott had an interview with *Nightline on Target*. Patricia Klein did the interview with Scott over some of the world policy and expectations of possibly becoming the president.

Patricia Klein: "Hello, my name is Patricia Klein and I'll be interviewing Scott Chally tonight on *Nightline on Target*. Many people believe that Scott Chally is the Messiah that is spoken about from the Bible to bring forth to the world a new world policy. Scott, I'm glad that you can make it here tonight to have this interview with me."

Scott: "Sure, no problem. It's an honor to be here."

Patricia Klein: "First off, I would like you to do a quick summary of what you expect the world order to do in operation if and/or when it's applied."

Scott: "I see the world to have peace and salvation in the near future, where the people will all be taken care of financially, medically, through education, and be treated fairly in the workplace and have rights as citizens to speak up for something that they don't agree with by suggestion boxes placed in every post office. The collection boxes are to stand by the right of the citizens when complaints are filed. All complaints will be carried out whether for the good or for the bad of the people from the Ace of Spades leadership office."

Patricia Klein: "How would you know which situation is considered fair? Whether it's good or bad for one's party or opposing party when it's handled by the leadership office of Ace Services?"

Scott: "Well, common disputes that are simple will have to be handled though a judge from a team from the leadership office of the Ace Services. But more serious cases will have to be presented in front of a judge in court with a jury setting to decipher the outcome of the crime or situation. Which it could grant discipline, punishment to one's party? Whether it is to take a point away from a manager in a leadership position, or a dog keeping the neighbors awake at night. This is to uphold a wrongful complaint against the opposing party, which could be justified as a fine. The party that had the actions against them may appeal to a court. If the party is found guilty in court, they could serve time in jail and a fine or both. When the investigation team looks into a situation, they will be thorough. All actions carried out will have a second check to verify suitable or fair punishment was addressed."

Patricia Klein: "Explain to me a little bit about the education benefits that you would have available for the citizens."

Scott: "Well, it mostly will be entitled to graduating high school students for future generations to excel into the workforce place. All graduating high school students that attain an equivalent to a 2.0 grade point average or better out of 4.0 grade point scale or three out of the six-point scale depending on where you're at in the world if he or she attains half of the grade scale requirement, they are entitled to get equivalent to \$25,000 per year to go to college or a secondary school. Older adults that don't have the grade scale from school or students that had a grade that was under the guideline, they may seek tutoring in order to raise their equivalency and by taking a test to qualify for the money to go to college on. Each person that applies for the education money may seek education up to eight years being paid by the government as long as they pass their college classes to maintain a suitable grade to stay in school."

Patricia Klein: "How would the cost of living to be paid out?"

Scott: "The average cost that it would take to live per district would be entitled to each person to live off of. For a small community, it may be \$20,000 a year or \$1,666 a month for the entitlement to each living person on earth. You would have to consider the cost of utilities, housing, new autos, insurances, and food. The items listed will be regulated so they won't fluctuate more than 10 percent a year. So two individuals would make \$40,000 a year plus whatever they make working."

Patricia Klein: "So what about taxes?"

Scott: "There will be no actual federal, state, or local taxes. But there will be property assessment dues of 1.3% across the world to be paid every year so land does not get locked by individual companies or people for the justice of their profit. All wages made are nontaxed. And there will not be a local tax put on commodities. If you receive an inheritance of \$10,001 and more, that amount of money will have a 33 percent tax applied to

it. Payable at the end of said year. If it is not paid for by the end of the following year, a 5 percent tax increase will be due on said inheritance to equal to 38 percent for the second year and so on until the sixth year. If the sixth year comes and the money of the inheritance was not paid which would be a total of 58 percent of the inheritance at said time, that individual's property will be liquidated and a mandatory one year in prison. Remember, \$10,000 and less is nontaxable. Certain charities will be excused from taxes of inheritance money."

Patricia Klein: "Wow, Scott, you had covered quite a bit there. Let me ask you this about the election. Where are you going to be the night of the election?"

Scott: "I plan on being at home watching the election on TV."

Patricia Klein: "You don't plan on being in a public place to speak if you get elected?"

Scott: "I'm sure the media will find me."

Patricia Klein: "But you would give a speech to greet the nation, right?"

Scott: "Sure, I would! I'd be proud too!"

Patricia Klein: "Well, Scott, thanks for the discussion we had here today and answering my questions."

Scott: "No problem, thank you, Patricia!"

Patricia Klein: "Well, that concludes all we have for this episode of *Nightline on Target*. Until next time. This is Patricia Klein, see you later and have a great night."

It's election night, and Scott was at home with Sondra and Jason. They're sitting around watching the TV in the living room. Scott noticed on the TV from the polls were suggesting that Scott had the lead in all fifty states. It's now around nine o'clock at night, and Scott saw that he's winning eighteen of the states. And the electoral vote he was winning also. Scott looked at Sondra and Jason.

Scott: "Honey, from what I can gather from watching the TV tonight, it looks like you're looking at the next president of the United States. Would you have ever believed it? If I would have told you this two years ago that your husband is going to be the president of the United States, you would have never believed me. You would think I'm crazy and laugh."

Sondra: "Yes, I know it's so exciting! We're going to be living in the White House. We're going to have maids and cooks. There is going to be security guards looking out for our every step. We're going to travel the world and see China, Russia, and Europe. You're going to be known worldwide."

Scott: "Wow! Something told me I was going to win when I wrote the book. Looks like they added another four states for me and I only need six more electoral votes to win."

Jason: "My dad, the president! Wow! But of course, I knew this because of your prediction of the asteroid strike. I already knew that you're the Messiah. So it only makes sense that you win tonight. You're doing God's work, Dad!"

Sondra: "Looks like we're getting a bunch of people gathering up outside the house, sweetie. Are you ready to go outside soon and address them, the United States I should say? Do you have a speech prepared?"

Scott: "I'll address them! I'm not going to make myself look any better than who I really am. I don't need to play that role. The people of the United States know who I am and what I stand for."

Jason got a call on his phone from Jimmy.

Jason: "How you doing, Jimmy? What's up?"

Jimmy: "I figured I'd call you to contact dad. How's he doing? Is he excited yet?"

Jason: "Not really, he is taking it pretty calmly if you ask me."

Jimmy: "He's leading the polls in all fifty states and he's already taken twenty-three states. He's got this in the bag. I was going to congratulate him early."

Jason: "I'll pass the phone to him. Dad, it's Jimmy on the phone, he wants to speak to you."

Scott: "Hi, Jimmy, how's it going?"

Jimmy: "I'm doing fine, but the question is, how are you doing, Dad?"

Scott: "I'm doing pretty well actually."

Jimmy: "You're not nervous about winning the election, Dad?"

Scott: "No, not really! Not after all I've been through to get to this point."

Jimmy: "Well, I just want to tell you congratulation on the election. My dad, the president of the United States and the Messiah of the world! Congrats, Dad! I'll let you go, I'm sure you got things to do."

Scott: "Okay, and thanks once again, Jimmy, for the congratulations. Bye, I love you!"

Jimmy: "I love you too, Dad, bye!"

Sondra: "Well, honey, it's official. They just announced it. You're the next president of the United States."

Scott: "That's great! I suppose I should go outside the door now and give my gratitude."

Sondra: "I'm so proud of you, honey!"

Sondra hugged and squeezed Scott with a big kiss.

Scott stepped outside his front door. About five broadcasters came up to him with a microphone and the cameras were rolling.

News Reporter 1: "So what do you have to say now, Mr. Chally, the president of the United States?"

Scott: "Well, first off, I'd like to thank everyone who has voted for me to make this election happen. And foremost, I would like to thank God. I plan on standing behind what I implemented in my movie to bring a new world order to the world. Someday soon we will all have peace here on earth. When I first get into office, I'll do everything within my power to get the policy written up for the world as soon as possible so we can get it spread to the other 196 countries to get them on the same sheet of music as us. I also would like to thank my family and all who have helped get me to this point in life where I can be your president."

News Reporter 3: “You state the 196 countries now, but earlier in one of your broadcasts, didn’t you say something like you wanted to reduce the number of countries down to 150 countries for the world? And have one member of the royal family to decide the tie vote in the United Nations console when they’re voting on any situations for the world?”

Scott: “Yes, that is correct. Someday soon we will be reducing the 196 countries to 150 countries. And there will be a UN Senate for all countries in one central location to meet up monthly to make decisions for the world that’s been presented forward to them or problems that may exist. There will also be a video console across the world to carry out decisions that are addressed on a weekly and possibly a daily basis from one meeting to another unless there’s an alert set forth for immediate meeting. There’ll be representatives from each country to hold these positions.”

News Reporter 4: “Are you excited to take on the world?”

Scott: “This is going to be a long, hard job ahead of me, I assure you that, but yes, I am excited to take it on. I want to see everyone in the world too have peace and salvation.”

News Reporter 2: “How does it feel to be the only president elected in history by written in vote?”

Scott: “I actually feel pretty good about it! I suppose it can prove to the world how God can act through all of us to make anything happen. It’s the power of God!”

Scott did the inauguration of being sworn in as president of the United States on the third week of January 2021. Scott’s intentions were very clear. His first day in office while sitting in the Oval Office was to put together a ten-person committee that would go through the details of his book to understand what needed to come about in the near future. He also had a director overseeing the project as a whole. The first meeting that he set up with the committee was the second week he was in office.

The ten-person committee included Robin, Tammy, Lori, Karen, Leonard, Vivian, Darlene, June, Barbara, and Thomas. The director in charge of them was Joan Motherly. They’re all sitting around the table in the conference room of the White House. They were required prior to the meeting to watch the movie that Scott had made. There were also given a copy of the book to have read for the meeting.

Scott: “I’m glad all of you have showed up here today and I hope you’re all prepared. What I am asking of you to do will be the greatest thing for mankind that will ever be tasked to do for the United States and the world. Speak up now if you choose not to be on the committee or feel you’re incapable doing such a task.”

Brief silence in the room.

Scott: “Okay, let’s get started then. I believe you all know why I brought you here today. We will need to make an official document of laws to abide by that will be approved by the people and the people’s liking to allow the world to operate and function as a peaceful society. I’ll have Joan Motherly to task each one of you sitting in here today with a special project to be done on the new world order. I want the policy to be simple to the point. Not a five-hundred-page document with loopholes for each area we have of concern. There are three branches of Ace Services that we will make policies for. The Ace of Hearts, the Ace of Spades, and the Ace of Diamonds. Are we clear so far on what we have to do?”

Silence in the room.

Scott: “Okay, I’ll turn the floor over to Joan.”

Joan: “For some of you that may not know my name, my name is Joan Motherly. Scott has put me in

charge of this project to oversee it to become a success. I gather the finest people in the United States to do this task. As you look around at each other, you're all specially qualified in each area with doctorate degrees. The one I'll put in charge to set forth for the world database for the people will be Thomas. Is that okay, Thomas?"

Thomas: "Yes, I should be able to do this. I have a doctorate degree in electronic of science, programming, and technical database installations."

Joan: "Very well then! You should be well suited for the job. Next with the healthcare system for the Ace of Hearts policy and procedures will need Vivian, Darlene, and June. You guys will need to work as a team and do a double-check system to verify all information is correct. That applies to all three branches that I assign. The next branch will be leadership for the Ace of Spades and that'll be Robin, Leonard, and Barbara. And the final branch, probably the more technical branch, will be to set up and verify appropriate allotment of pay to the people is the wealth branch also known as the Ace of Diamonds and that will be Lori, Karen, and Tammy. Do you all know your assignments on what you have to accomplish?"

Robin: "Is there a time limit on this, or I should say, what is the time limit?"

Joan: "Good question, I forgot to mention. This will need to be done by March 1, or thirty days is what you have. So I suggest you guys work on it morning and night until it's done. If you have any questions that you're uncertain of, Scott says it's okay to come to his office and he will assist you any time. Is that right, Scott?"

Scott: "That's correct! I'll be able to answer all your questions if they arise."

Joan: "As you get done with each step you write up, please bring it to me as soon as possible, day or night. I'll give you my phone number. Write this number down: 608-555-8055. Any more questions?"

Thomas: "Are we going to instate what is known as the identity chip for each person in the in the world? It would make it easier for the individuals assessing Ace Services."

Scott: "Make that optional. We want to have a common identity card made up for each person to be used with a picture. Once you're complete with the task that you're assigned and it is checked off by me, you will be on call for the next three and a half years if any of problems that may arise so we can alter the policy."

Joan: "Well, that's all I have for you. Let's put this as top priority. Thanks and have a good day!"

Scott had a press meeting to inform the United States and the world that the new world policy has started. Scott was in a room with hundreds of people, which were lobbyists and reporters. Scott was feeling pretty good that the new world order has started. Scott wanted to be the best leader for the people and citizens of the world.

Scott: "Hello, my fellow Americans and people across the world. I'm here to inform you today that the first steps in achieving freedom, prosperity, and salvation had started. Today I have put together some of the finest people and intelligent minds to work on the policy of Ace Services for the world. They will be working very hard to ensure the policy for the world will be correct and benefit all people. So let us put our hands together do a prayer. Dear God, help guide us in this journey for us, the people to receive ultimate salvation and peace for the world. Let the policy that we will instate be a success for the goodwill of the people. Let the people of the world rejoice in these times of wonder to know the first steps in bringing peace and prosperity to the world has started. Please guide us to ensure all steps are carefully noted accordingly with the policy to be instated. Thank you for listening to us today, O Lord Almighty! Amen! I feel the future will be a success for all people of the world and the heart-stricken problems of our world today will no longer be a problem for the people. The people of the world will see freedom at its utmost quality. I say people of the world, hold God

true to your heart, and if you haven't been doing the righteous good things in life, I say change your ways and start living with love for one another. I'll open the floor up for questions at this time."

Reporter 1: "Can you tell us how peoples employed working hours will be for the people of the United States and the world?"

Scott: "It'll be set up as a six-hour workday, thirty-hour week for a full-time job. Any time over six hours or up to eight hours will be paid time and a quarter an hour. From eight hours to ten hours in a working day will be paid as time and half. Anything over ten hours will be considered double time. An exception will be contracts by businesses to employ people for tasks or jobs they perform. All salary workers will be based off with thirty- to forty-hour work week. Not to exceed forty hours! There will be no such thing as mandatory overtime anymore. If people are sick, they must receive the doctor's note in order to be excused for employment. No one will be fired for such situations or cases. It will not affect their employment record. There will be no rates for standards that an employee has to perform. I suggest profit-sharing for the employees to ensure a steady flow of work for the business. Next question!"

Reporter 2: "How will the royal family be taken care of far as money in the future?"

Scott: "I will instate on the new world policy when you sign up that there will be a 10,000 percent deduction from everyone's payroll that receive monthly cost-of-living allowance. This would equal \$.01 to \$.03 per month per person on average. There will be two other boxes to check, one box that I would not like to participate in the donation. And a second box would be I choose to donate 1,000 percent of my cost-of-living allowance. This would be equal to \$.10 to \$.30 per month per person on average. Okay, next question!"

Reporter 3: "I heard a rumor that you would like to see multiple companions for marriages. Is that true?"

Scott: "That is true! Not only will gays and lesbians be able to marry, but bisexuals who want multiple partners may marry as well. You may say the Bible doesn't agree with this. But times are changing! All people will have fair rights to do as they wish. Even in the Bible it speaks of contra binds in a relationship. I stand firmly behind this! Next question!"

Reporter 4: "What day are you looking at or when do you think the new world order will be established for the world?"

Scott: "I foresee according to the Bible what I figured out that July 24, 2023, will be the day when the entire world will be united as one. Across the world, military arsenals will be done away with. There will no longer be any wars in the future. We will have and live in peace for the next thousand years. If we're successful or our final judgment day is January 24, 2027, for the world to be changed. That'll be it for questions today. Thanks for coming!"

It's now after March 1, and the people of the world had been watching Scott's movie. The new world policy had been circulating across the Internet and in newspapers all the way around the world. The people of the world seemed to be thrilled with the new world policy that Scott had come up with. Scott had been visiting country dignitaries about the proposed plan for the world. Scott continued to do speeches in public sessions and for the media. Scott was visiting with China's dignitary on June 2021. They had a sit-down session in a small room at China's capital.

China's Dignitary: "Welcome, Scott, or should I say, Messiah?"

Scott: "Thank you, but really, I go by Scott."

China's Dignitary: "Our house committee and the people of our country have been looking at your policy for a new world order. Everybody seems to be enthused about it in our country. I like what the new

world order says for the people of the world. I'm scared about losing our military arsenal though. It would leave us defenseless as a country."

Scott: "I realize that, but that's what's going to make this as a success for the new world."

China's Dignitary: "What can you offer me to convince me today that there will be no more wars in the future?"

Scott: "I believe the United States have the most sophisticated military in the world. By July 24, 2023, would be the time line when all the nations will have signed a contract for the world to discontinue their military forces. The US military will be one of the first to dismantle their military to show that the military will not be needed in the world to fight wars anymore. Would you stand beside the United States and dismantle your military at the same time? That's what I ask you here today."

China's Dignitary: "Yes, I will sign the contract to dismantle our military starting July 24, 2023, if you have 60 percent of all the countries in the world to dismantle their militaries at the same time."

Scott: "Thanks! I believe we have come to an agreement. It will actually be 100 percent of the militaries in the world that will need to agree. With you standing forth will prove it to the other countries that military is not needed in this world. There will be no more wars in the future."

China's Dignitary: "I would like to keep a few soldiers around though."

Scott: "You can keep a small crew of soldiers displaced in different districts across your country. They can be used for national disasters. Humanitarian needs such as riot control if one shall ever exist."

China's Dignitary: "That's great and all! I'm happy for this, but I do have a question to ask you about immigration. How would we control our borders from other people entering and the people of our country exiting?"

Scott: "That's a good question. There shouldn't be much need for the people to move around in the world. They will be content to live in their own country. If they do choose to move, that is up to them individually to make that decision. All countries in the world will allow immigration to happen freely as the people wish. There will be a waiting period to get accepted into whatever country they wish but not more than a year. They would have to do a change of address to the Ace Services office to where they would then live for they can get paid the cost-of-living allowance for that district of that country where they would then live. Remember one thing in this new world that we're coming into soon. There will be unlimited amount of money to fix streets, build new schools, and anything that has to do with the public or the safety of the public. There will be multiple buildings of Ace Services for each district to assist the public."

China's Dignitary: "What is going to be the universal language of the world? Is it going to be English?"

Scott: "It will be a requirement of the world for all schools to learn English. If the individual country wants to adapt the language English as the common language, that is to be decided by the people of said country."

It was now July 24, 2023. It came down to the last minute, but finally all the countries came together as one for the world's new world policy. The militaries were starting to be dismantled. The world had one more test to pass for salvation. That was to see that everyone was taken care of by Ace Services and the dismemberment of the military arsenals across the world. The effective date would be January 24, 2027, for the final judgment call for the universal test for the people's salvation here on earth.

Scott's last year and a half for president was pretty simple for him. Scott and his wife, two sons, Melanie,

and her son Zachary spent a lot of time at the White House celebrating the victory that Scott had done for the world. Scott had made it known to the public that he chose not to run for president for the next term. Leader of the United World Senate, Scott placed his oldest son Jimmy in charge to hold the deciding vote or tiebreaker of the 150 countries when voting on policies and things to enact for the world to occur. Scott, Jimmy, and Sondra were having a discussion.

Jimmy: "Mom, Dad, I have something to announce. The first weekend in September, me and Melanie are getting married. We plan on having a dual wedding with Ricky, Molly, and Courtney."

Sondra: "I'm so happy for you, honey. It's about time you tied the knot with Melanie. Has she been planning the wedding, or I should say have you, Melanie, Rickey, Molly, and Courtney been planning the wedding?"

Jimmy: "Yeah, they have been on top of it. It's almost ready to go. We're going to have it back in Monticello at the Lutheran Church."

Scott: "I should say congratulations, Jimmy!"

Jimmy: "Thanks, Dad!"

It was a month later, the first weekend in September for the dual wedding. They had invited all their friends from the business and relatives from the families. The wedding was considered so big since Jimmy was considered a prince from the royal family of God, where there were several broadcasting networks covering the wedding. People showed up early to get good seats at the church.

Jermaine saw Kenny from work.

Jermaine: "How's it going, poop stain?"

Kenny: "Not bad, Jermaine! Not bad!"

Kenny's looking with the discouraged look.

Kenny: "I see you're with your wife and kid. How's it going, Laverta?"

Laverta: "Not bad, and you, Kenny?"

Kenny: "I would be better if Jermaine would stop calling me poop stain."

Jermaine: "Oh, come on, Kenny, you did it to yourself."

They entered the church.

Marty and Chester were coming into the church.

Marty: "Chester, we should consider getting married."

Chester: "You know it's just our secret, don't you? Nobody else knows about us!"

Marty: "Yes, but I think we should take it to the next step. How long do we have to keep this a secret? I'm sure people suspect us as a couple. We're always together doing things."

Chester: "Well, let me think on it."

Bobby, Holly, and Samantha entered the church.

Samantha: "Bobby, when will you tie the knot with me and Holly? You know we already have kids together. I just think it's a manly thing for you to do. You know we will be good to you."

Bobby: "Okay, okay, okay, since I do love both of you, let's make the wedding for next year September."

Both Holly and Samantha kissed Bobby on each side of the cheek at the same time while sitting in the pew of the church.

Justin pulled up in a parking lot with the new Chevy Camaro convertible. Todd was getting out of his Fiat convertible.

Todd: "Justin! Nice car there!"

Justin: "Well, thanks, Todd, your car doesn't look half bad either."

Todd: "Just think it's only been a couple years since we made that money together. Boy, was that experience though, which I'll never forget."

Justin: "I'll never forget it either, but it was awesome! We've been good friends ever since. I consider you like an uncle or brother."

Todd: "We ought to get inside while they're still seats left. The wedding is just about to start."

Everybody was seated in the church. The news crews had been capturing the guests coming to the church. They're set up in the balcony above to film the wedding. Only guests that were on the list were able to enter the church. The church was packed full of people. The wedding was about the start. You could hear the music from the organ playing and a lady singing a soft melody song.

The wedding began. The groomsmen walked the bridesmaids to the front of the church. They separated and stood on the side of the front of the church. Both Jimmy and Ricky were standing up in front of the church. The brides came following in one after another. They stood next to their grooms up in front of the church. The music stopped, then the minister began to speak.

Minister: "We are gathered here today in holy matrimony for Jimmy and Melanie to be wed as a couple and a second marriage for Ricky to be wed to Melanie and Courtney for lifelong partners in holy name of God."

The minister went on to say a few other words to each participating party to be wed.

Minister: "Jimmy and Melanie, you may kiss. Ricky, you may kiss Molly and Courtney, and Courtney and Molly may kiss Ricky at this time. I considered you two couples to be considered married in the eyes of the Lord."

They turned around and left the church as the organ music was playing. They lived happily ever after.

The end.